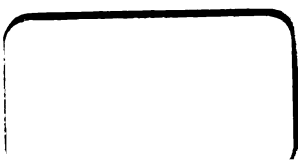




9 e 5.



DOSPARTH EDEYRN DAVOD AUR;

OR

THE ANCIENT WELSH Grammar,

WHICH WAS COMPILED BY ROYAL COMMAND IN THE THIRTEENTH
CENTURY BY EDEYRN THE GOLDEN TONGUED, TO WHICH IS ADDED
Y Ffôn Llŷr Kerdduriaeth,
OR THE RULES OF WELSH POETRY, ORIGINALLY COMPILED BY
DAVYDD DDU ATHRAW, IN THE FOURTEENTH, AND SUBSEQUENTLY
ENLARGED BY SIMWNT VYCHAN, IN THE
SIXTEENTH CENTURY:

WITH ENGLISH TRANSLATIONS AND NOTES,
BY
THE REV. JOHN WILLIAMS AB ITHEL, M.A.
RECTOR OF LLANYMOWDDWY, AND AUTHOR OF
THE ECCLESIASTICAL ANTIQUITIES OF THE CYMRY, &c. &c.

7e.15.

PUBLISHED FOR
The Welsh M.A.S. Society.

LLANDOVERY:
PUBLISHED BY WILLIAM REES. LONDON: LONGMAN & CO.

MDCCLVI.



PRINTED BY WILLIAM BEES, LLANDOVERY.

TO
HIS HIGHNESS
PRINCE LOUIS-LUCIEN BONAPARTE,
SENATOR OF FRANCE,
WHOSE EXTENSIVE AND EXACT KNOWLEDGE OF THE
ANCIENT HISTORY, LANGUAGE, AND LITERATURE,
OF
The Cymry,
ENABLES HIM TO APPRECIATE THE WORTH OF
DOSPARTH EDEYRN DAVOD AUR,
THIS WORK
IS INSCRIBED WITH SENTIMENTS OF SINCERE RESPECT, AND
ADMIRATION FOR HIS VARIED AND GREAT
ACQUIREMENTS,
BY
HIS HIGHNESS'
OBEDIENT, AND HUMBLE SERVANT,
J. WILLIAMS AB ITHEL.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Introduction	1	Conjugation	82
ORTHOGRAPHY.		Conjugation of the Primitive	
Origin and Progress of Letters	3	Verbs	82
The Bardic Alphabet	4	Auxiliary Verbs	96
The Monkish Alphabet	9	Conjugation by Auxiliaries	97
Monumental Alphabet	9	Irregular Verbs	108
The Alphabet of Nemnivus	10	Defective Verbs	125
The Winged Alphabet	12	Verbal Particles	130
The Roman Alphabet	18	Concord of Nouns with Verbs	131
Names and natural expressions		Pronouns	132
of the Primitive Letters	13	Etymological Forms of the Pro-	
Classification of Letters	21	nouns	138
Consonants	23	Personal Pronouns	138
Of syllables	30	Possessive Pronouns	135
Accidents of syllables	37	Demonstrative Pronouns	136
Loss of Proper Accent	38	Indefinite Pronouns	137
Words	39	Relative Pronouns	139
Classification of Words	39	Reflexive Pronouns	140
Prefix Derivatives	41	Reciprocal Pronouns	140
Suffix Derivatives	45	Suffix Pronouns	141
Pre and Suffix Derivatives	51	Particles	144
Compounds	51	The Article	144
PARTS OF SPEECH.		Adverbs	145
Name	53	Formative Adverbs	145
Classification of Names	54	Adverbs of Number	146
Proper Names	55	_____ of Order	146
Appellative Name	55	_____ of Place	146
Simple Name	55	_____ of Time	149
A Weak Name	55	_____ of Comparison	152
A Strong Name	56	_____ of Quantity	153
Agreement of Names	57	_____ of Doubling	154
Degrees of Comparison	57	Interrogative Adverbs	154
Gender	60	Affirmative Adverbs	156
Number	65	Negative Adverbs	157
Numerals	71	Conjunctions	158
Verbs	74	Copulative Conjunctions	158
Formation of the Verb	74	Casual Conjunctions	159
Moods	76	Illative Conjunctions	159
Gender	77	Disjunctive Conjunctions	160
Number	78	Adversative Conjunctions	160
Species	78	Absolute Adversatives	161
Tenses	79	Comparative Adversatives	161
Persons	81	Adequate Adversatives	161
		Inadequate Adversatives	161

Temporal Conjunctions	162	Nasal sound	253
Prepositions	162	Aspirate sound	254
Simple Prepositions	163	Dialects	256
Prepositions Proper	163		
Substantive Prepositions	165	PROSODY.	
Compounds ending with a Preposition	166	Metre	260
Compounds ending with a Substantive	167	Strolling Minstrelsy	260
Pronominal Preposition	168	Domestic Singing	261
Interjections	171	Poetry	261
		Systich	261
SYNTAX.		Homœorhythm Systich	261
Sentences	174	Alternate Systich	263
Perfect Sentence	174	Vetericine Systich	265
Imperfect Sentence	177	Stichopolyrythms	266
A Proper Perfect Sentence	178	Perfluency	267
An Improper Perfect Sentence	178	Odynic	267
Singular Nouns	178	Long Autometre	267
Nouns of Multitude	179	Short Autometre	268
Forms of Speech	179	Auroric	268
Strong Names	180	Brachyoehyte	269
Weak Names	184	Long Odynic	270
Numerals	189	Enneasyllabic Autometre	270
Verbs	192	Salebrose	271
Auxiliary Affirmative Particles	194	Machroehyte	271
Introductory Pronouns	196	Brachysagogie	272
The Verb Substantive Bod	198	Catenated Chytisagogic	272
Apposition Verbs	203	Homœostich	273
Infinitive Mood	205	Homœodistich	274
Participles	208	Rhythmic Homœostich	274
Pronouns	210	Caudate Homœostich	275
Possessive Pronouns	213	Poetical Faults	275
Demonstrative Pronouns	216	Form of Praise	279
Indefinite Pronouns	217	Triads of Song	283
Relative Pronouns	222		
Reflexive Pronouns	227	THE SYSTEM OF DAVYDD DDU	
Reciprocal Pronouns	227	ATHRAW.	
Suffix Pronouns	227	Metre	290
The Article	228	Systich	292
Adverbs	231	Stichopolyrythm	295
Adverbs of Number	232	Origin of the Awen	309
Adverbs of Comparison	232	Columns	300
Interrogative Adverbs	233	Progress of the Metres	300
Negative Pronouns	235	Resumption (Cymmeriad)	301
Conjunctions	237	Consonancy	302
Copulative Conjunctions	238	Poetical Faults	312
Suppletive Conjunctions	239	Figures	321
Causal Conjunctions	240	Figure of word and its parts	321
Illative Conjunctions	241	Prothesis; Appositio	322
Disjunctive Conjunctions	241	Epenthesis; Interpositio	322
Inadequate Adversatives	242	Proparalepsis; Præassumptio	322
Temporal Conjunctions	242	Aphæresis; Ablatio	322
Prepositions	244	Syncope; Concisio	323
Prepositions Proper	244	Apocope; Abcisio	323
Substantive Prepositions	246	Extasis; Extensio	323
Compound Prepositions	247	Systole; Contractio	323
Pronominal Prepositions	247	Dieresis; Divisio	323
Interjections	247	Episynalœphe; Conglutinatio	324
Initial Mutations	248	Synalœphe; Deletio	324
Soft sound	249	Antithesis; Positio	324
		Metathesis; Transpositio	324
		Figure of Speech and its Faults	324

CONTENTS.

vii

Anadyphosis	325	Solecismos	335
Anaphora ; Relatio	325	Virtue ; the third part of Schema	335
Epanalepsis	325	Priodoldeb and its parts	336
Episeuxia ; Subjunctio	326	Analogia	336
Paronomasia ; Agnominatio	326	Tassis ; Extensio	336
Schemis Anomaton Habitus Nominum	326	Syntomia ; Evidentia	336
Paromion ; Assimile	326	Ornatus and its kind	337
Homœoteleuton ; Imiter Desinens	327	Synthesis	337
Homœoptoton	327	Cyriologia	337
Polyptoton ; Traductio	327	Tropus	338
Unhyd	327	Metaphora ; Translatio	338
Prosopopeia ; Personæ Fictio	328	Catachresis ; Verborum Abusus	339
Aposiopesis	328	Metalepsis ; Transumptio	339
Climax ; Gradatio	328	Metonymia ; Transnominatio	340
Polysyndeton	329	Autonomasio ; Transnominatio	340
Asyndeton	329	Epitheton ; Apposition	340
Gwrthnewid	329	Synecdoche ; Intellectio	341
Figure of Construction or Composition	329	Onomatopeia	341
Prolepsis ; Presumptio	326	Allegoria ; Inversio	341
Syllepsis ; Conceptio	330	Ænigma	342
Appositio	330	Parœmia ; Adagium	343
Fault ; or the second part of Schema	330	Ironia ; Illusio	343
Obscurum and its parts	330	Saracasmus ; Jocus Amarulentus	343
Acyron ; Impropietas	331	Astysmus ; Urbanitus Orationis	343
Pleonasmus	331	Antiphrasis	343
Tautologia ; Repetio	331	Charientismus	344
Homœologia	331	Periphrasis ; Circumlocutio	344
Gair Ymwyys	332	Anastrophe ; Reversio	345
Diffyg	332	Dialysis, Parenthesis ; Interpositio	345
Gogychiaith	332	Diatrophe Imesis ; Dissetio	346
Annhrefnus and its parts	332	Synchysis ; Confusio	346
Tapeinosis ; Meiosis	333	Hysteron Proteron ; Hysterologia	347
Kakemphadon	333	Hyperbole ; Superlatio	347
Kakozelon ; Mala Affectio	333	Emphasis ; Metonymia	348
Aschematiston ; Male Figuratum	333	Homœosis	348
Kakosyntheton ; Male Collocatum	334	Icon ; Imago	348
Bolysothach	334	Parabole ; Collatio	349
Afaith and its kinds	334	Paradigma	349
Barbarismos	334	Hypozeugma ; Subjunctio, (Daugyssyllt)	349
Barbaralexia	335	Prozeugma ; Præjunctio, (Rbag-gyswllt)	350
		Interrogatio ; (Gofynhwedl)	350

P R E F A C E.

THE origin or invention of letters is a subject that has frequently engaged the attention and researches of learned men, and as often defied their power to explain, with any considerable amount of probability and satisfaction. The several alphabets of the known world, indeed, exhibit that mutual similarity of form, which fully warrants them in assigning to the whole class one common source; but that source is apparently sought for in every place except where, we are persuaded, it can alone be found. It has been very much the fashion hitherto to depreciate the literature and traditions of the Cymry; yet we can confidently assert that in them lie treasures which would amply compensate for any amount of trouble that may be taken in arriving at them. The patient and impartial study of Welsh lore will assuredly tend to throw no inconsiderable light upon the science and mythology of all nations. Even the sacred Tetragrammaton of the Hebrews, taken by itself, is perfectly inexplicable—we cannot see how it represents the great I AM, and wherefore it is invested with extraordinary terror—or why it may not be pronounced or revealed. But the origin and reason of all this are discovered to us in the Bardic traditions. There we learn that God created the world by the melodious threefold utterance of His Holy Name—and that the form or figure of that Name was /|\ , being the rays of the rising sun at the equinoxes and the solstices converging into a focus—“the eye of light.” These rays,

we are informed, according to the influence which the sun has upon the earth at the different seasons which they represent, show God in His various characters as a Creator, a Preserver, and a Destroyer. The Divine Name may not be uttered, because no mortal man can individually articulate the harmony of the sound; re-echoed, indeed, by the universe in concert at its primeval birth, "when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy," (Job xxxviii. 7.) but not to be heard again until the renovation of all things at the last day. It is kept a secret, lest by the ignorant it be abused and dishonoured; as, e. g. by the Hindoos, who have deified the rays into Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva. This form $\text{I}\backslash$ was the A WEN (awen) the Blessed A, said to contain all the other letters, because they are but modifications of it; and all sciences, not only because they are represented by letters, but because they can be learned from an acquaintance with the several attributes of God, which are exhibited in the symbol of His Name. An instance of the development of the primary character, and of the formation of additional letters, may be found in $\text{I}\backslash$ $\text{I}\backslash$ $\text{I}\backslash$ or IAU, one of the forms in which the Divine Name is written. I , being the equinoctial ray, represents God in the character of a Mediator and Preserver, $\text{I}\backslash$ is the creative symbol, and $\text{I}\backslash$, being the same reversed, denotes destruction—the creation, as it were upset. The import of the word is, therefore, simply the *Preserver*, the *Creator*, the *Destroyer*;—"which is, and which was, and which is to come." (Rev. i. 4;)—the whole being also involved in the radical element $\text{I}\backslash$, the A-wen.

The origin of the bardic W, as here given, will sufficiently account for the neutralizing effect of the letter in such words as these;—*gwedd*, connection, *gweddwo*, unconnected; *ul*, moisture, *ulwo*, that which is divested of moisture; *mar*, lively, *marwo* dead; *hwn*, that is here, *hwnnw*, that is not here, but there.

Again; the bardic \diamond or \blacklozenge is a combination of \vee or \wedge and \vee or \blacktriangledown , and primarily denotes the

same idea as "Alpha and Omega, the beginning, and the ending," (Rev. i. 8.) which is one of the titles of our Saviour. It is remarkable that there is a natural tendency in the Cymric tongue to pronounce the separate letters AW like O at the end of words; as *gwrandaw, gwrando; taraw, taro, &c.*

According to "Cyfrinach y Beirdd," there were only three languages of Divine origin. The first was that of Adam in Paradise, which, however, he lost on his expulsion;—this is the language of heaven. The second language was that which Moses acquired, and which was used by the prophets for 3000 years subsequently, and is still the language of Holy Scripture. The third is the Cymraeg, which was obtained by Enos, the first man after the banishment of Adam from Eden, who praised God and goodness in a vocal song. It was carried over the Deluge by Japheth, and his posterity conveyed it to the extremity of the earth, and it is spoken at this day in its perfect kind and character by us the Cymry in the Isle of Britain. (pp. 28, 29.)

In accordance with this view of the subject our British forefathers bestowed great pains upon the cultivation of the language. And as it was considered to be peculiarly the language of song, the production of the sacred A, which was formed by the musical utterance of the Divine Name, "when the morning stars sang together," the improvements, which have been from time to time introduced into its structure, have always more or less been of a prosodial character. We have briefly marked its progress and gradual development from the earliest period to the era of Edeyrn Davod Aur in the notes which we have incorporated with that portion of the Grammar entitled—"The origin and progress of letters."

The grammar which formed the basis of "Dosparth Edeyrn Davod Aur," is said to have been compiled by Geraint Vardd Glas, in the tenth century. This was preserved among the MSS. in Raglan Castle, before it was destroyed in the wars of the Commonwealth,

but no copy is now to be found. This is the Book, no doubt, referred to in the following extract which occurs at p. 623 of the Iolo MSS.

“The oldest system on record of memorials and recollections, is that of Geraint Vardd Glas, upon the poetic metres; and of all that is extant from before his time, there is nothing remaining excepting what may be discerned by the learned by means of books. This Geraint was brother to Morgan Hen, king of Glamorgan, and he collected ancient records of poetry and bardism, and arranged them in a book of his own composition, and established them by the laws of the chair and the gorsedd, in every country and dominion in Wales; and Geraint excelled in knowledge and judgment, and every chair in Wales and England was given him; from which he was called the Bardd Glas of the Chair.....He who understands will see, that it was from the system of Geraint Vardd Glas that the one of Brittany was taken, and also a great portion of that of Gruffydd the son of Cynan was taken, called the system of Glen Achled, and that of Aberfraw, under emendation, amplification, extension, and adornment; and therefore Lewys Morganwg, in his book upon poetry, called the system of Geraint the old original system; and he says that the system of the Round Table is the one of Brittany, called also that of Caermarthen, as it existed under King Arthur in Caerleon upon Usk, and so it is now held in the Chair of Tir Iarll; but there is little worth noticing in it, except the knowledge of what formerly appertained to minstrelsy.”

What were the particular changes or additions which were introduced by Einion Offeiriad, are not known, nor may they be ascertained from Dosparth Edeyrn; for from certain extracts, which are preserved in Dr. John David Rhys's Grammar relative to the article, we clearly learn that his views and those of Edeyrn are not altogether identical, or at least are not couched in the same language. It must be remarked, however, that the paragraph, which is there attributed to Edeyrn, does not occur in the copy which forms the text of the present volume. Einion is said to have flourished in the middle of the twelfth century.

Edeyrn compiled his grammar about A.D. 1270. It appears to have been much valued by the literati of Wales, even to a comparatively late period of our history. Thus, Sion Brwynog, addressing Elissau ab William Llwyd of Rhiwaedog, A.D. 1500, compliments him upon the fact that his father was conversant with the system and grammar of Edeyrn Davod Aur.

I'th Tad aeth Dosparth Edeyrn
A'i Ddwned, a cherdded chwyrn
Cerdd Dafawd," &c.

The version, which forms the basis of the present volume purports to have been "copied from a Transcript of Mr. Lewis Richards of Darowen, Montgomeryshire, dated 1821, by the Rev. W. J. Rees, Cascob, Radnorshire, 1832." Mr. Richards appears to have taken his copy from a MS. of Iolo Morganwg, whose name is appended to a notice declaratory of the source whence he also had obtained his version, thus;

"This occurs in a fragment from page 472 to 505, and is called 'the Poetry of Vocal Song;' and also in the Red Book of Hergest, pp. 1117, &c. &c., says Iago ab Dewi; from whose Book I wrote this, and the two following homeostiches. The Book of Iago ab Dewi was in the possession of the late Benjamin Simon, of Porth Myrddin, in the Parish of Abergwili, near Caermarthen.

Iolo Morganwg."

About a century later, i. e. about A. D. 1340, flourished Davydd Ddu, whose system, as modified by Simwnt Vychan, is here presented to the public in company with Dosparth Edeyrn. The history of the particular copy which has been employed by us, may be gathered from the following observations on a loose sheet that accompanied it.

"Wrexham July 19, 1795.
Sion Wiliam ap Sion

Dr. Griffiths MS.

At y Darlleydd

Anwyl Ddarlleydd llyma Lyfr Dwned iaith Gamberaeg yr hwn a ysgrifennais i allan o Lyfr Rissiart ap Sion o Lan Gynhafal yn swydd Ddinbych, yr hwn a ysgrifennasse ei Lyfr allan o Lyfr Simwnt Vychan Bardd graddol, hefyd mi gyssylltais yma Fyrddau or holl byngkiau ar y sydd yn y llyfr hwn a ffugrs yn ei tal yn arwyddokau pa du dalen y mae y pwnk hwnnw yn dechreu—John Jones.

Byrdeu y Pynkieu, &c.

Anwyl Ddarlleydd llyma Lyfr Wiliam ap Sion ap Wiliam ap Sion ap Dafydd ap Ithel Vychan ap Kynfrig ap Rotpert ap Ierwerth ap Ryrid ap Ierwerth ap Madawc ap Ednowain Bendew an o bymtheg Llwyth Gwynedd ap Kynan Feiniad ap Gwaethfoed fawr llwyth y Dehau Arglwydd Powys Gwent, ac Aberteifi yr hwn a elwir hefyd yn ol y Saesnegawl arfer, John Jones. 1606.

Llyfyr John Jones or pum llyfr Kerddwriaeth.

Llyma ddysg i adnabod Kerddwriaeth Kerdd dafod herwydd llyfyr Dafydd ddu athraw.

Llyfr kyntaf or pum Llyfr kerddwriaeth. 1605.
Beth yw, &c."

Added on blank leaves p. 126 &c. in the handwriting of *Sion Gryffydd*, 1694, ancestor of the present Mr. Griffiths of Pen y Nant.

Tri dyn a gyfanedda lys. Bardd caw, Bardd Tant, a Bardd Phithlem.

Tri Bardd caw sydd, Prif-fardd, Posfardd ac Arweddfardd : dau or rhai hynny a golled. sef Prif-fardd ac Arweddfardd ; ar Bosfardd sydd etto, nid amgen, y Prydyddion. Swydd Arweddfardd oedd gwybod Achau ac Arvau Brenhinoedd, Tywysogion, Pennaethiaid a Phendefigion Yuys Brydain ; a chyfarwyddyd oddiwrth y tri Phrif-fardd, nid amgen Merddyn Emrys, Taliesin Benbeirdd a Merddyn ap Morfryn, sef Merddyn Wyllt.

Tri math o Bosfardd sydd nid amgen Penkerdd, (neu Fardd Kadair,) Discybl discyblaidd a Discybl Ysbys (yn yr Eisteddfod ynghaerwys) Anno Dom. 1567, yr math-arall a elwir Discybl Pencerdd ac yn nesaf at y Pencerddiaid.

Cwrs Clera yrhain wrth gyfraith Gryffydd ap Cynan.

Pencerdd unwaith pob tair blynedd, a hynny ar Wyl-	s.	d.
mabsant neu Neithior, ai Glera ef	01 : 00
Clera Discybl discyblaidd	00 : 08
Clera Disgybl ysbys	00 : 06
Rhoddd Pencerdd y tair gwyl arbennig	03 : 04
Rhoddd disgybl discyblaidd	02 : 00
Rhoddd disgybl ysbys	00 : 11

Am Gerdd dannau

Llyma enwau'r pedair cainc ar ddeg or prif geinciau o waith Cadwgan a Chyhelyn, saith o waith pob un.

Eurai Gwynedd o waith Cyhelyn	1
Cas gan Grythor o waith Cadwgan	2
Dillyn Efa gwaith Cyhelyn	3
Eurlais Goeden o waith Cad.	4
Crechwen feinir o waith Cyh.	5
Awen Chwerli o waith Cad.	6
Eos Gwerfil o waith Cyhelyn	7
Organ Leici o waith Cad.	8
Y Gainc hir o waith Cyhelyn	9
Awen oleuddydd o waith Cadwgan	10
Y Wyddeles o waith Cyh.	11
Cas gan Eurach o waith Cad.	12
Annel y fawd gwaith Cyhelyn	13
Cainc Nest Berwyn, gwaith Cadwgan	14

Henwau pedair Gosteg Cerdd Dannau.

1. Gosteg yr Halen yr hon a genid ar Giniaw a chwynos yn llys Arthur.

2. Gosteg Iefan ap y Gof o Bencarreg.

3. Gosteg Dafydd Athraw.

4. Gosteg y llwyteg.

P 295. vide p. 123 in the Copy.

Foneddigaid Ddarlleidd, sef a gefais hyn o ddarn Dwned sy yn dyvod, yn yr un Llyfyr ar pump Llyfr Cerddwriaeth wedi i ysgrifennu o law yr unrry Risiart ap Sion o lan Ganhafal. Mewn, &c. vide p. 136.

Llyfr John Jones or ffugrau ai rrannau y rhai a ymchwelawdd William Salbri or Lladin ar Groeg yn Gamberaeg.

In the margin—Mae llythyr anfon a phethau eraill William Salsbri am y Llyfr hwn at Ruffudd Hiraethog wedi adael allan gan Jn. Jones. Habeo ex p.totypo Ego Wm. Mauricius. This Prototype may be perhaps be preserved in Sr. Watkins's Collection, with the MSS. of sd. Wm. Morris.

A marginal note as an example under Acyron. Improprium. Anhriawd. Mynd i goed lle irgoed llwyn

Ag An llwyd 'rwyf i gynllwyn. P. 147 MS.

Drwy gymryd esgus o goed a elwir felly (y Ganllwyd) y canwyd y pennill hwn i ferch a elwid Ann Llwyd. E. M. vide p. 148.

I think this example would better suit Equivocatio.

Tautologia, &c. Pen gwr call deall deusr,

Hoff enwog yw a phen gwr.

Ag felly y terfyna y ffygrau hyn y 7 dydd o fis Hydref 1605. Y ddwy ran gyntaf a adsgrifen nais i o law Rossier Morrys ar rran ddiwaethaf o law Rissiat ap Sion o lan Ganhafal. John Jones.

Anwyl Ddarlleidd llyma fyrddau o henwae yr holl ffigrau uchod a ymchwelawdd William Salbri or Lladin ar Groeg ir Gamberaeg ac a chwane gyd y ddwy ran gyntaf y gan Sr. Tomas Williams ar rran ddiwaethaf y sydd mal y gedewis William Salbri y hi, y ddwy ran gyntaf a ysgrifennais i ar ol Roissier Morrys ar ddiwaethaf ar ol Rissiat ap Sion.

July 23. In the Hengwrt' MS.—Yma y Tervyna y kyntaf or pump llyfr Cerddwriaeth Cerdd Davod.

At bwy bynnac y del y llyfr hwnn ar ddamwain : darllened dros amsser os bydd gwiw gantho ac yno bydded mor hawddgar ac mor gymwynasgar ai ddanvon i Scorlegan yn Llangynhaval ir ty lle i scryvenwyd gynta gann R. I.

We have not deemed it necessary to translate the whole of this Book, inasmuch as it appeared to us, that the repetitions and tautologies necessarily resulting from such a course, would considerably mar the harmony of the English portion, which we designed should be a complete well arranged Grammar of the Cymric dialect. It was with this view that we also incorporated our notes, though in less prominent type, with the text. How far we have succeeded of course the critics will decide.

The principal authorities which we have consulted, and which have proved of material assistance to us in

the prosecution of our design, were Davies's Celtic Researches, Hughes's Principles and Laws of English and Welsh Syntax, and the several Grammars of Dr. John David Rhys, Dr. Davies of Mallwyd, Dr. Pughe, Professor Zeuss, and T. Rowland. That of the last named is decidedly the best Grammar of modern Cymraeg extant, and reflects very great credit upon the learned and judicious author.

It must be borne in mind, however, that not one of the numerous Grammars, which pretend to illustrate the language of the Principality, can lay claim to any such authority as that which *Dosparth Edeyrn Davod Aur* possesses, for it has received the sanction of the three reigning princes of Wales as well as that of a "rhaith gwlad." The Book is thus, in the fullest sense of the word a NATIONAL GRAMMAR, and therefore all writers on the Cymric dialect, are bound ultimately to defer to its rules as far as they may affect the question at issue. For instance, *Edeyrn* recognises the accental principle of orthography (p. 276,) therefore the same principle ought to regulate the practice of all Welsh writers until a different system shall have been authorised by a competent tribunal, which in the present state of the country is not likely to happen for some time to come.

It is to be hoped that the publication of this curious and valuable document will give a fresh impulse to the study of the Cymraeg, and induce not only the literati of Wales, but such foreigners as take interest in Welsh matters, to come forward and combine their energies for the purpose of drawing out of obscure and unsafe depositaries other important documents calculated to throw no inconsiderable light upon the ancient lore and history of the Cymry.

J. WILLIAMS AB ITHEL.

St. David's Day, 1856.

DOSPARTH EDEYRN DAFAWD AUR.

LLYMMA Ddosparth a wnaeth Edeyrn Dafawd Aur, ar y Llythyrennau Cymreig, ac ar Ymadroddion, ac ar Mesurau Cerdd Dafawd, tan gof a chadw. Ac ef a'i gwnaeth wrth arch, a damuniad y tri Arglwydd Penrhaith hynn, nid amgen, Llywelyn, fab Gruffudd, tywysawg Aberffraw, a brenhin Cymru oll, a Rhys Fychan, arglwydd Dinefwr, ac Ystradtywy, a Morgan Fychan, ab Morgan Arglwydd, ab Caradoc, ab Rhydderch, ab Caradoc, ab Iestyn, ab Gwrgant, Arglwydd cyfoeth rhwng Nedd, ac Afan, a Chilfai, ac Arglwydd Penrhaith Morganwg.

A'r Edeyrn hwnnw o'i Athrylith gymmhendoeth, Fyfurdawd, a'i Athrawiaeth afrifed, a'i gof, a'i gadw, ac awdurdawd ei dafawd ei hun, yr hwn a roddei awdurdawd ar bob tafawd, a fai athrawedig, ac athrawiaeth arnaw, a wnaeth y Ddosparth honn ar y Llythyrennau, ac ar y Ymadroddion, ac ar y Mesurau Cerdd Dafawd, ac iw gosod yn eu cyfleoedd dyledus, ac i fod yn Gyweirgorn cadwedig iddynt, drwy gof a chadw, a chynnal athrawiaeth gymmwys. Canys fal y mae ymma, y traetha Edeyrn i galon, a'i serch, ac i pwyll, a'i meddwl, ac i dafawd a'i traetha, ac i gof a'i ceidw, ac i giwdawd a'i cynnail, fal o hynn nas gallo perchen tafawd o'r byd draethu yn awdurdodawl, ac yn athrawiaethawl, y gallei efe, nag un gwr arall symmud un pwynt o Reol ei athrawiaeth ef, a'i gof a'i gadw ei hun, nac o gadw neb un arall pa bynnag, cyd y gallo fwyhau. Ac ni ddichon neb hynny ar ei reolaeth ef, namyn o gadw ciwdawd, ac na bo o'i gadw ei hun, sef y tynnwys Edeyrn yr hon Ddosparth o'r cadw a wnaeth Einiawn Offeriad; yr hwn a gafwyd arno Farn, ac Awdurdawd Llys Arglwydd a Rhaith Gwlad.

Ac ar y rhoddes Edeyrn at honno, y casaf yntef yr un modd, Farn Llysoedd ei Arglwyddi, a Rhaith Gwlad. Ac fal y mae ymma, y rhoddes ef ei gadw yn gadwedig, ac yn gadwedigaeth, rhag colli dosparth ar y Llythyrennau, a'r Ymadroddion, a'r Mesurau Cerdd Dafawd, a chelfyddyd bardd, a barddoniaeth, yr honn a rodde Duw, drwy'r Yspryd Glân i Feirdd Ynys Prydain, o genedl y Cymry, er yn oes oesoedd.

LLYMMA GADWEDIGAETH CERDD DAFAWD.

Ac ynghyntaf y sonier am y Llythyrennau.

Pedair Llythyren ar hugain y sydd, nid amgen A, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, w, x, y, z. Ac o'r rhain, rhai y sydd Fogailiaid, ac eraill y sydd Gydseiniaid.

Saith Fogail y sydd nid amgen, A, e, i, o, u, w, y.

Y Llythyrennau eraill dynt Gydseiniaid, canys cydseiniau a'r Bogailiaid a wnant. Rhai o'r Cydseiniaid y sydd Llythr tawdd, eraill y sydd Llythr mud.

Saith Llythyren tawdd y sydd, nid amgen, d, f, l, m, n, r, s. A sef achaws y gelwir hwynt Llythr tawdd, canys toddi a wnant mewn Cerdd; sef yw megis y toddant, gwneuthur o ddwy sillaf dalgronn, un leddf, pan fo y rhwng ddwy Llythyren dawdd, fal y mae *Mydyr*, neu rhwng Llythyren Fud, ac un dawdd, a Bogail ym mlaen y Llythr Fud, fal y mae *Mygyr*. Ac os felly, y sill-eñir y rhwng *d* ac *r*, dwy sillaf dalgronn fydd *Mydyr*, neu *Mygyr*, ac am hynny y bwir ymaith y o'r sillafad pan ysgrifener, neu pan sillafar Cerdd Dafawd, ac y sill-eñir fal hynn, *Mydr*, *Mygr*; ac felly bydd un sillaf leddf y cyfryw sillaf a honno mewn Cerdd.

Naw Llythyren Fud y sydd, nid amgen, b, c, g, h, k, p, q, r, ll, a sef achaws y gelwir hwynt yn Llythr Mud, canys bychan yw ei sain, wrth sain y Llythr eraill, a phan fo dwy o honynt mewn diwedd sillaf fal y mae *Brutt*, neu un o honynt yn y diwedd, a Llythyren dawdd yn y blaen, fal y mae *tant*, *corc*, cyfryw sillaf a honno, a elwir sillaf fyddar, neu sillaf fud.

Ll y sydd a grym dwy *l* iddi. *X* a grym *cs* iddi. *Z* y sydd Lythyren Roeg, ac nid oes iddi le mewn Cymraeg. *H* herwydd mydr, namyn arwydd uchenaid, ac eisioes rhaid yw wrthi mewn Cymraeg wrth ei ddarllain.

Canys o'r Llythr y gwneir y Sillafau, wrth hynny rhaid yw gwybod beth yw Sillaf, a pa ffurf y gwahenir y Sillafau.

Sillaf yw cynulleidfa lliaws o Llythr ynghyd; cyd boed sillaf, neu air weithiai o un Llythyren, fal y mae *a*, ac *o*, ac *i*, ac *y*. rhai o *ddwy*, fal y mae *af*, neu *ef*, neu *da*, neu *mi*, ac eraill amrafaelion; rhai o *dair*, fal y mae *aur* a *mab*, ac eraill laweroedd; rhai o *bedair*, fal y mae, *carn*, *barn*, *cerdd*, a llawer iawn gyda rhain; rhai o *bump*, [fal y mae, *gwens*, a rhai o *chwech*,] fal y mae, *gwawon*, neu *gwanaed*, *braint*, a llawer mwy; rhai o *saith*, fal y mae, *gwanaeth* neu *gwanaent*, (canys nid yw *th* mwy na *dd*, neu *ll* ond un Llythyren,) ac ni bydd mwy o Lythr byth mewn un sillaf no hynny.

Rhai o'r Sillafau a fyddant *drymion*, eraill a fyddant *ysgafnion*. Sillaf Ysgafn a fydd pan fo dwy o'r Cydseiniaid unrhyw yn y diwedd fal y mae *Gwenn*, *Llenn*. Rhai hefyd o'r sillafau a fyddant *dalgrynion*. Sillaf dalgronn a fydd pan fo un Fogail ei hunan ynddi, beth bynnag

a fo o gydsainiaid yn ol, nac ymlaen y Fogail, fal y mae, *glan, glud, nant, perth*, ac eraill laweroedd.

Leddf. Sillaf Leddf a fydd o dair ffordd. Un yw pan fo dwy Fogail ynghyd yn y sillaf, ac un yn goleddfu at y llall, fal y mae *ghoys, moes*, neu fal hynn, *ae, oe, ai, wy*, fal y mae *Gwy, gwyth*, ac fal y mae *trai, traih*, a'r rhai hynny yw y pedair Dipton pengam-leddf.

Rhaid yw edrych am y ddwy Ddipton fry *ae, oe*, pa ffurf y gwa-henir hwynt, a pa ffurf y cyssylltir hwynt yn un sillaf; edrych pan font mewn gair lluosawg o sillafau, fal y mae Cymræg, yna y gwa-henir hwynt yn y sillafau talgrynnion, a pan font mewn gair un sill-afawg, fal y mae *gwaeg, Groeg*, yna eu cyssylltu yn un sillaf *leddf*. Yr ail modd yw pan fo *y* yn y sain dywyll, rhwng dwy o'r cydsain-iaid, heb ei hysgrifenu, fal y mae, *mygr, mydr*, cyfryw sillaf a'r rhain a elwir *Cadarn leddf*, a'r llall, fal y mae, *ghoys*, a chyfryw sillaf o honno a elwir *Pengam leddf*, canys pengammu a wna un o'r bogailiaid tu ag at y llall.

Eisioes hefyd rhaid yw edrych pa ffurf y bo y ddwy Fogail yn y sillaf, ai ynghyd, ai ar wahan. Os ynghyd y byddant, fal y mae, *gwyfyr*, sillaf dalgronn a fydd; os ar wahan y byddant, fal y mae *gúyfr*, sillaf leddf fydd.

Yr ail ffordd y bydd sillaf leddf a elwir *Cadarn leddf*, fal y mae *toryf, taryf, mygyr, mydr*, a'r modd hwnnw a elwir *Cadarn leddf*, o achos y Llythr tawdd yn y sillafau, a cadarn o achos bod dwy o'r cyd-seiniaid ynghyd ynddynt.

Y drydydd ffordd y bydd sillaf leddf pan fo *y*, neu *w* yn ol Llythyr-en dawdd, ac yn y blaen fogail *y* fal y mae *Eiry, w*, fal y mae *ceirw*, yna gadewir *y*, neu *w* o'r sillaf pan sillafar Cerdd; a chyfryw sillafau a'r rhai hynny a elwir *Tawdd leddf* o achos y Llythr tawdd a fyddant yn y sillafau.

Sillaf Ddipton a fydd o gysswllt dwy Fogail ynghyd yn un sillaf, fal y mae, *llaw, llew*. Deu ryw Ddipton y sydd, nid amgen Dipton *dalgron* a Dipton *leddf*. Pum Dipton dalgron y sydd nid amgen, *aw, ew, iw, yw, uw*.—*aw*, fal y mae *llaw*; *ew*, fal y mae *llew*; *iw* fal y mae *lliw*; *yw*, fal y mae *llyw*; *uw*, fal y mae *Duw*. *Eu* hefyd sydd Ddipton dalgronn, fal y mae, *cleu*, a honno yw Dipton na cheffir Proest yn ei herbyn, ac am hynny y gelwir hi *Dipton Wib*, am na chaiff a'i hattebo ar broest.

Pedair Dipton leddf y sydd, nid amgen *ae, oe, ei, wy*,—*ae*, fal y mae *cae*; *oe* fal y mae *doe*; *ei* fal y mae *trei*; *wy* fal y mae *mwyr*.

Rhaid yw edrych hagen, am y ddwy leddf ddipton rhacco, *ae, oe*, pa ffurf y gwa-henir hwynt, a pa ffurf y cyssylltir hwynt yn un sillaf ynghyd; ac wrth hynny edrycher pan font mewn gair lliaws sillafog, sef yw hynny bod llawer o sillafau ynddaw, yna rhaid yw eu gwahanu yn amrafaelion sillafau, a phob un o honynt yn sillaf dalgronn, fal y mae, *Cymræg*; a phan font mewn gair un sillafawg, yna dir yw eu gwasgu ynghyd yn un sillaf o ddipton leddf, fal y mae, *gwaed, Groeg*, er nid dipton o honai, canys damwain yw ei chaffael heb *h* yrhynddynt.

Sillaf a derfyno mewn tair o'r bogailiaid ynghyd, neu y bo ynddi dair bogail ynghyd, ac ni fyddant ddiptoniaid, nid amgen pan fo *i*, neu *y* ymlaen bogail arall, fal y mae, *Ior*, *Ywrch*, a'r cyfryw sillafau, honno a elwir ddipton ddieithr. A'r cyfryw sillafau pan fo gair o ddwy fogail yn ei berfedd, ac yn hir yn fogail gyntaf, herwydd accen, sef *yw* hynny herwydd dywedwyddiad y gair, fal y mae *Gwenlliant*; hynny a elwir bogail ymlaen bogail yn y mydr.

Pan fo sillaf a'i ddiwedd yn Gadarn leddf, a'i ddechreu yn bengam leddf, fal y mae, *Ceidwo*, honno a elwir *Dipton dawdd leddf*. Pan fo sillaf a'i ddiwedd yn dawdd leddf, a'i ddechreu yn fyddar, fal y mae, *colladr*, honno a elwir *Byddar leddf*. Pan fo *w* neu *y* ymlaen dipton, na thalgron, na lleddf y bo, yn un sillaf y bernir ynghyd, a honno a elwir Dipton *loogyrnianog*, fal y mae *dioer*, *dyawl*, a'r cyfryw sillafau.

Rhai o'r sillafau a fyddant hirion, eraill a fyddant fyrion. Dau amser sydd i sillaf hir, ac un amser i sillaf ferr; canys hwy o amser y byddir yn dywedyd sillaf hir, nog yn dywedyd sillaf ferr.

Pan fo *n* yn ol *r*, fal y mae *barn*, neu *s* yn ol *r* fal y mae *cora*, *gwera*, neu Lythyren fud yn ol *r*, fel y mae *curt*, *sorth*, honno a elwir *Tromleddf*, a hir fydd a dau amser a fydd iddi. Pob sillaf talgronn berr fydd, ac un amser a fydd iddi; na dipton dalgronn fo na sillaf arall dalgronn, cyd boed hwy dipton dalgronn, na sillaf arall dalgronn. Ac felly rhai o'r sillafau lleddfion a fyddant hwy nog eraill, herwydd mesur o lythyr, ac amseroedd a fo ynddynt. Deallir wrth hynn dywedwyddiaeth sillafau.

Canys o'r Sillafau y gwneir y *Geiriau* cyflawn, wrth hynny rhaid *yw* bellach wybod beth *yw* Geiriau; can's Geiriau y sydd Rannau Ymadrodd perffaith; Wrth hynny rhaid *yw* gwybod pa sawl Rhan Ymadrodd y sydd, a pheth *yw* pob un o honynt, a pheth eu hanfodau a'u cynglyniadau, a'u damweiniau; a phellach sonier am Rhannau Ymadrodd.

DWY RANN YMADRAWDD y sydd, nid amgen, na *Heno*, a a *Pheirwyddiad*, sef *Berf*. Henw *yw* pob gair a arwyddocao *Cadarnyd*, neu *Ddefnydd*, neu unrhyw beth a bod yn ei *Fodedigaeth*, heb y nod rhagor, neu yn anghyfystyr, ac arbennigrwydd ei ryw, a'i rin, neu ansawdd ddamweiniawl er cadernyd, ac nid er y modd y bo arnynt.

Cadernyd a arwyddocao pob peth ar a ellir ei *weled*, neu ei *glywod*, neu *gyffwrdd* ag ef, neu ei *ddeall* a'i amgyffred. Ei *weled* fal y mae *Dyn*, *Prenn*, *Maen*, *Goleuni*, *Lliwglas*, *Lliwcoch*, a phob Lliwiau eraill; *Ffurf*, fal *crwnn*, *tryfal*, *pedryfal*, amryfal i'r cyfryw bethau corphorawl, cadarnfod, ai godidawg, ai cyfansoddedig y bo. Ei *glybod*, fal y mae *Llef*, *Iaith*, *Cerdd*, *Gwynnt*, *Trwt*, a'r cyfryw bethau corphorawl, heb eu cyfansoddi cyffwrdd a hwynt, fal y mae *Awyr*, neu *Liw*, neu *Oerfel*, neu *Wres*, neu *Ddolur*, neu *Dristoch*, neu *Lawenydd*; a phob peth a gyfymdeimler ag ef, megis *Serch*, *Glewder*, *Dygeidiaeth*, a *Gwybodaeth*, ac *Anwybodaeth*; a'r pethau hynn a syrthiant yn un a'r pethau a ddealler, megis *Celfyddyd*, *Crefydd*, *Gwirionedd*, *Twyll*, ac y bo deall corphorawl arnynt yn bethau ar eu pennau eu hunain yn

wahanfod oddiwrth unrhyw fesur yn y byd ar faint, ac ansawdd cyfmylyn.

Cadernyd hefyd a arwyddocao bethau ysprydolion, a safant yn ei hunain, can na aller na'u gweled na'u clybod, na'u cyffwrdd (cy hwrdd.) na'u teimlaw, na'u deall, amgen na'u bod o barth angen a deall o gred, cyd nas gwyddom eu rhyw, a'u rhagor, na pha bethau mewn byd, a bod ynddynt, fal y mae *Duw, Enaid, Yspryd, Angel, Nef, Meddhol, Deall*, neu *Fywyd*, a'r cyfryw bethau ysprydolion.

ANSAWDD damweiniawl i'r Cadernyd, a arwyddocao pob peth a'r ni allo sefyll drwyddaw ei hunan, heb gynheilid o gadarn iddaw, fal y mae, *gwynn, du, doeth, cryf, cam, cummuoys, melus, chwero, da, drwg, mawr, bach*, a'r cyfryw bethau a ddangosant, nid y Cadarn yn ei *fodedigaeth*, eithr yn ei *ryw*, a'i *anian*, a'i *liw*, a'i *lun*, a'i *ragor*, peth bynnag y bo hynny rhag arall cyfunfod ac ef, parth Cadernyd eithr yn anghyfunwedd ac ef o barth ansawdd damwain, fal y mae *Dyn*; a phan y dywedir *Dyn*, ni wyddys pa un, ai *gwyro* ai *benyo*, ai *teg*, ai *hagr*, ai *mawr*, ai *bach*, ai *byw*, ai *marw* y bo. Ond pan ddoder ar Ddyn yr ansawdd ddamweiniawl, dywedir *Dyn da, Dyn drwg, Dyn doeth, Dyn cadarn*, a'r cyfryw ac y bo ei *anian*, a'i ddamwain; ac wrth hynny gwybyddir ba *ryw*, neu fath o Ddyn y bydd.

Dau Henw y sydd,—un *Priawd*, ac un *Galwedig*.

Henw *Priawd* yw'r hwnn a berthyn, neu a gydweddo i un peth, neu ddyn, neu ddyniedigaeth drwy alwedigaeth neillduawl, fal y mae *Pyll, Nudd, Madawg, Iewan*, neu *Llywelyn*; a hefyd *Nonn, Angharad Nest, Gwenlliant*.

Henw *Galwedig* yw'r Henw hwnnw a gydweddo i lawer o bethau drwy alwedigaeth, fal y mae, *dyn*, neu *angel*, neu *dderwen*, neu *gerdd*, neu *gelfyddyd*, a'r cyfryw bynnag a fo gadarn.

Dau ryw Henw *Priawd* y sydd, Henw *Bedydd*, fal y mae *Madawg*; a *Llysenw*, fal y mae *Madyn*.

Dau ryw Henw *Galwedig* y sydd, Henw *Galwedig Odidawg*, a Henw *Galwedig Cyfansoddiedig*.

Henw *Galwedig Odidawg* yw'r hwnn ni bo cyfansoddiad arnaw fal y mae, *liw*.

Henw *Galwedig Cyfansoddiedig* yw'r hwnn a gyfansoddir o ddau air fal y mae *gwynlliw, liwlas*.

Dau ryw Henw *Godidawg* y sydd; Henw *Cyssefinawl*, a Henw *Disgyniedig*.

Henw *Cyssefinawl* yw'r hwnn ni ddisgynno gan ddim, fal y mae, *llathr*.

Henw *Disgyniedig* yw'r hwnn, a ddisgynno gan yr Henw *Cyssefinawl*, fal y mae *llathraidd*; ac felly y daw y gair cyfansoddiedig *Disgyniedig* y gan air cyfansoddiedig *cyssefinawl*, fal y mae, *gwynllathraidd* gan *wynllathr*.

Dau ryw Henw hefyd y sydd Henw *Gwann*, ac Henw *Cadarn*.

Henw *Gwann* yw'r hwnn ni safu ei hunan yn ymadrawdd, fal y mae *gwynn, du, doeth*.

Henw Cadarn yw'r hwnn a safu drwyddo ei hunan yn ymadrawdd, fal y mae, *gur, guraig, dyn*.

Geiriau gwann, a Geiriau cadarn a ddylynt fod ynghyd yn unrhyw rif, ac yn unrhyw genedl.

Geiriau gweinion a gymmerant gymhariad, a Geiriau cedyrn nis cymmerant, sef yw cymmyrd Cymhariaid mwyhau, neu leihau yn y synwyr cyntaf i'r gair.

Tair Gradd Cymhariad y sydd, y *Radd Bendant*, sef y gyntaf, neu y Radd gyssefin, fal y mae *da, drwg, teg, doeth, melus, gwynn, cas*; ac yn y Radd gyssefin y bydd y synwyr cyntaf i'r gair.

Yr ail Radd a elwir *Cymhariad* neu y Radd *gwahanawl* (gymharawl,) ac ynddo y bydd yr ail synwyr i'r gair yn *mwyhau*, neu leihau ansawdd ddamweiniawl, fal y bydd, *gwell, gwaeth, teccach, doethach, melusach, gwynach, casach*.

Y Radd Eithaf, neu y Radd Oruchel, yw yr honn y byddo y synwyr mwyaf, neu leiaf ynddaw, ac ni ellir drostaw, fal y mae, *Y goreu, y gwaethaf, y teccaf, y doethaf, y melusaf, y gwynnaf, y casaf*, sef y mwyaf, neu leiaf oll yn y synwyr y bo gair gwann.

Tair Cenhedl Henw y sydd, *Gwryw a Benyw, a Chyffredin*.

Gwryw yw yr hwnn a berthyno i Wr, a Gwryw, fal y mae *gwynn, sorr, bychan, tynn*. A Benyw yw yr hynn a berthyno ar Wraig, fal y mae *gwenn, sorr, bechan, tenn*. Cyffredin yw yr hynn a berthyno ar bob un o naddunt, ai ar Wryw, ai ar Fenyw, fal y mae *doeth, hir, da, balch*, canys ef a ddywedir *Gwr doeth*, a Gwraig ddoeth; ac am hynny *doeth* y sydd Gyffredin rhyngddynt. Cam ymadrawdd hagen yw dywedyd *Gwr gwenn, Gwraig gwynn*, canys gair gwann, a gair cadarn a dylent fod ynghyd yn unrhyw genhedl, ac yn unrhyw rif.

Dau Rif Henw y sydd, *Unig a Lluosawg*. Unig yw Un'peth, fal y mae *dyn*; Lluosawg yw Llawer, neu Nifer o bethau, fal y mae *dynion*.

Dau Henw Unig y sydd, Henw Unig ei Hunan, a Henw Unig Cynnylliedig. Henw Unig ei Hunan yw yr hwnn ni byddo gynnylleidfa ynddaw, herwydd synwyr, fal y mae *dyn*. Henw Unig Cynnylliedig yw yr hwnn y bo cynnylleidfa ynddaw, herwydd synwyr, fal y mae, *llu, torf, pobl, cenhedl*. Ac Henw Cynnylliedig Lluosawg, fal y mae *lluoedd, torfoedd, pobloedd, cenhedloedd*.

PEIRWYDDIAD, sef BERF yw pob gair, neu beth a arwyddocao gwneuthur, neu Beiriad o ba *Ddyn*, neu *beth*, neu *haniad* y bo'r peri bynnag ai o, neu du agat unrhyw ddyrn, neu beth, neu aniad, sef yw hynny pob gair a arwyddocao *gwneuthur*, neu *ddioddef a wneler*. A phob gair, a pheiradaeth, a hynny gyd ag Amser, Modd, a Dynweddiad. *Gwneuthur*, fal y mae *caraf, dysgaf*. *Dioddef*, fal y mae *ef a'm cerir, ef a'm dysgir*.

Dau ryw Beirwyddiad neu Ferf y sydd, *Peirwyddiad Rhydd*, a *Pheirwyddiad Arch y fenedig*.

Peirwyddiad Rhydd yw yr hwnn y bo digon o synwyr ymadrawdd ynddaw ei hunan heb wrthddrych wrth beth arall yn ei ol, fal y mae, *cerddaf; eisteddaf, cysgaf*. Peirwyddiad Erch yn fenedig yw yr hwnn a

fo'r gwrthddrych wrth beth arall yn ei ol, fel y mae *gwelaf*, *clgwaf*, *caraf*; gwrthddrych y mae yr ymadrawdd beth a welir, beth a glywir, neu beth a gerir.

Pum Modd Peirwyddiad y sydd, nid amgen *Managedig*, pan faneger peth, fal y mae, *mi a garaf*. Ac *Archedig*, pan archer peth, fal y mae, "*Yf ddiawd*:" "*Car dy Dduw*;" "*Amddifyn dy gam*." A *Damunedig*, pan ddamuner peth, fal y mae, "*mynnen fy mod yn gyfoethawg*," "*Carwn di*," "*pe'im ceri*." Ac *Ammodedig*, pan ammoder peth, fal y mae, "*pan ddelych attaf, ti a geffi bais*," neu "*os gwnei imi gyllell, ti a geffi geiniawg*." Ac *Annherfynedig*, pryd na bo na Rhif, na Dynweddiad yndaw, fal y mae *canu*, *caru*, *dysgu*, Ac un Modd arall y sydd, a elwir *Gweddiedig*, pan weddiar am beth, fal y mae, "*Duw trugarhaa wrthyf*." "*Duw a'm hyfforddo*;" am Modd hwnnw, a gynhelir y dan yr Archedig, ac ar y Moddai hynn goreu a bernir pan font yn ymadroddion.

Dau Ryw Genhedl Peirwyddiad, neu Ferf y sydd. *Gwneuthur* rhyw weithred, fal y mae, *caraf*, *dysgaf*, *adwaenaf*. *Dioddefedig* yw yr honn a arwyddocao dioddef y rhyw weithred, fal y mae, *'m cerir*, *'m dysgir*, *'m adwaenir*.

Dau ryw Rif y sydd i Ferf, neu Beirwyddiad, fal y mae i Henw.

Dau ryw Beirwyddiad neu Ferf, y sydd, *Odidaug*, fal y mae, *Gwraf*, a Chyfansoddiedig, fal y mae, *Perffeithionaf*.

Tri Amser y sydd i Ferfbeirwyddiad,—*Cyndrychauol* yw yr hwnn sydd yn awr, fal y mae, *caraf*. *Gorphenedig* yw yr hwnn aeth heibio, fal y mae, *cerais*. A *Dyfodedig* yw yr hwnn a ddel rhagllaw, fal y mae *carwyf*. Gyda hynny y mae *Amherffaith*, yr hwnn nid aeth ymmaith ynghwbl, fal y mae, *carwn*. A *wuy na Pherffaith* yr hwnn a aeth ymmaith yslawer dydd, fal y mae *carawon*.

Tri Dyweddiad y sydd i Beirwyddiad. Y *Cyntaf*, Yr *Ail*, Y *Trydydd*. Yr un *Cyntaf* yw yr hwnn a ymadroddo am dano ei hunan, fal y mae, *Mi*, yn y rhif unig, a *Ni*, yn y rhif lluosawg. Yr *Ail* yw yr hwnn a ymadroddo wrth arall, fal y mae *Ti*, yn y rhif unig, a *Chwi*, yn y rhif lluosawg. Y *Drydydd* yw yr hwnn a ymadroddo o arall, fal y mae, *arall* ac *efe*, yn y rhif unig, a *lleill* a *hwy*, neu *hwynt* yn y rhif lluosawg.

Henw a Pheirwyddiad a ddylynt fod ynghyd yn unrhyw Rhif, ac yn unrhyw Ddynweddiad; ac oni byddant felly, cam ymadrawdd fydd.

RHAN arall ymadrawdd y sydd, a ddir yn lle Henw weithiau, ac a elwir RHAGENW; sef yw Rhagenw pob beth ac a arwyddocao dynweddiad, na ddyndod, na hanfod, na dirprwy y bo, a phob peth a arwyddocao feddiant, neu ymofyn; *dyndod*, neu *ddynoldeb*, fal y mae, *mi*, *ti*, *efe*, *arall*; *meddiant*, fal y mae *meu*, *teu*, *eiddaw*; *ymofyn*, fal y mae *Pwy*, *pa beth*.

Pedwar Rhagenw ar hugain y sydd; deuddeg yn y rhif unig, a deuddeg yn y rhif lluosawg, Yn y rhif unig y mae, *mi*, *ti*, *y llall*, *hwnn*, *honn*, *hwnnu*, *honno*, *pwy*, *pa beth*, *meu*, *teu*, *eiddaw*. Yn y rhif

luosawg y maent, *ni, chwi, eraill, y rhai hynn, y rhai hynny, y naill rai, y rhai eraill, pa rai, pa bethau, einim, eiddoch, eiddynt*. Y saith gyntaf yn y rhif unig, ac yn y rhif luosawg a arwyddocsaont feddiant; y pedwar perfedd, Ddynoldeb neu ddyweddiad; y tri ddiweddaf yn y rhif unig, ac yn y rhif luosawg a arwyddocsaont feddiant; neu ganol, nid amgen, *Pwy, pa beth, pa rai, pa bethau, a arwyddocsaont ymofyn*.

Geiriau eraill ac ni hanffont o'r ddwy ran ymadrawdd rhacco, Enw neu Rhagenw, a Pheirwyddiad, arwyddocsaont *Tristyd*, fal y mae, *Och*, neu *Lawenydd*, fal y mae, *Oi*, nid ynt rannau ymadrawdd cwbl, ac ni wnant namyn anghwannecau ymadrawdd, a'i diennaw.

Pob Henw, a phob Rhagenw sydd drydydd dynoldeb, eithr y pedwar Rhagenw, *Mi, ti, ni, a chwi*. Canys o'r geiriau y rhai a elwir rhannau ymadrawdd y gwneir ymadrawdd, wrth hynny rhaid yw gwybod beth yw Ymadrawdd, a pha fuffr y gwahenir ymadroddion.

YMADRAWDD yw cynnylleidfa o eiriau ynghyd.

Dau ryw ymadrawdd y sydd, Ymadrawdd Perffaith, ac Ymadrawdd Ammherffaith. Ymadrawdd Perffaith a fydd pan fo Henw a Berf ynghyd yn weddus, fal y mae, *Ieuan a gar Gwenlliant*. Ymadrawdd Ammherffaith a fydd pan fo dau Henw, neu dri ynghyd heb Beirwyddiad gyda hwynt, fal y mae *Gwr, gwraig, merch*; neu ddwy, Ferf, neu dair ynghyd heb Henw gydag hwynt, fal y mae, *caru, canu, dysgu*.

Dau ryw ymadrawdd perffaith y sydd, Ymadrawdd Perffaith Cyfiawn, ac Ymadrawdd Perffaith Anghyfiawn. Ymadrawdd Perffaith Cyfiawn a fydd pan fo Henw a Pheirwyddiad ynghyd yn yr un rif, ac yn un person neu ddynoldeb, heb nac unig, nac lluosawg ynddau, na gwydd, na gwegil, na gwryw, na benyw, a gair gwann a gair cadarn ynghyd yn un rhif, ac un genhedl, ac oni bydd felly cam ymadrawdd ac anghyfiawn fydd. Dau Henw unig a dalant un lluosawg, fal y mae, *Rhys*, ac *Einiawn a garant Wenlliant*. Un Henw, cynnylliedig unig a dal ddau Henw unig ei huan, fal y mae *Y bobl a folant Ddyddgu*; ac yn unwedd a hynny un Henw cynnylliedig lluosawg, a dal ddau Henw unig ei hunan.

Tri Lliw, neu Ffugur y sydd yn ymadrawdd, i wahanu iawn ymadrawdd, ac i escusaw dros gam ymadrawdd; a sef yw *Ffugur, Lliw*, neu *ddull ymadrawdd*. Un o honynt a elwir, "Ymgynnnull rhan a chwbl;" a honno a fydd pan fo rhan a chwbl yn yr ymadrawdd, agair gwann rhyngddynt, yn arwyddocau moliant neu wradwydd, a hynny; yn dyly ei ddwyn ar y cwbl, ac nid ar y rhan; fal y mae, *Gwr gwynn ei law; Gwraig wenn ei throed*; cyd boed, Benyw y llaw, a gwryw y gwynn; y gwyn hwnnw hagen ni ddygir ar y llaw sydd ran o'r gwr, namyn ar y gwr sydd gwbl; ac felly cyd boed gwryw troed, a benyw gwenn, nid ar y troed y dygir, namyn ar y wraig; ac felly esgusodir dros wryw, a benyw ynghyd yn ymadrawdd.

Y Lliw, neu'r dull arall, a elwir Arddangos, moliant, neu wradwydd, a hwnnw a fydd pan fo y cwbl yn unig, a'r rhannau yn lluosawg, a

gair gwan y rhyngddynt yn arddangos moliant, neu ogan; a hwnnw hefyd a ddyly ddwyn ar y cwbl, ac nid ar y rhan, fal y mae *Gwr dw ei lygaid*; *Gwraig wena ei dwylaw*; a'r Lliw hwnnw a esgusa dros unig a lluosawg yn yr un ymadrawdd.

Y Trydydd Lliw a elwir *Ymorolau*, a hwnnw a fydd pan fo amrafaelion ddynodau neu ddyneweddiadau ynghyd yn ymadrawdd, fal y mae yr Englyn hwn.

Mi yw'r gwas gweddeiddglas glan,
A fydd o fodd ei galon,
Dwys gawdd bryd i ddiagwyl brynn
O dawl is gwawl yn oes gwenn.

Y dynoldeb cyntaf neu'r ail a eilw ar y trydydd, a'r trydydd ni ddigawn galw ar un o'r lleill, a'r Lliw hwnnw a esgusa dros wydd a gwegil yn ymadrawdd, a'r rhai hynny a elwir *Lliwieu*.

Cany s o'r Ymadroddion Perffaith Cyfiawnton y gwneir Mydr, a Phrydiad; wrth hynny rhaid yw gwybod beth yw Mydr, a Phrydiad, a pha ffurf y gwahenir hwynt, ac a mesurir, ac a amcaner.

Mydr, neu Brydiad yw cyfansoddiad ymadroddion perffeithion cyfiawnton, o eiriau addurn ardderchawg, a degcaer o eiriau gwan addwyn cymmeredig a arwyddocant foliant, neu ogan, a hynny ar gerdd dafawd ganmoledig.

Tair Cainge y sydd o Gerdd Dafawd, nid amgen,

CLERWRIAETH.
TEULUWRIAETH.
PHRYDYDDIAETH.

Tair Cainge a berthynant ar Glerwriaeth, nid amgen, *Ymsennu*, ac *ymddyfalu gair-tra-gair*, a *dynwared*. Tair Cainge eraill a berthynant ar Deuluwriaeth, nid amgen Testyniaw, ac ymddyfalu, *gwera-tra-gwera*, a gorddechgerdd o Gywyddau, a Cherddau Teuluaid drwy eiriau amwys. Tair Cainge eraill a berthynent ar Brydyddiaeth, Englynion, ac Awdlau, a Chywyddau cerddwraidd, ac anhawdd ei caniadau dychymyg.

Tri rhyw Englyn y sydd.—Englyn Unawdl, ac Englyn Proest, ac Englyn Hen Ganiad.

Tri rhyw Englyn Unawdl y sydd—Englyn Unawdl Uniawn, Englyn Unawdl Crwcca, ac Englyn Unawdl Cyrch.

Englyn Unawdl Uniawn a fydd pan fo y Pennill hir yn gyntaf, a'r ddau Pennill fyrion yn ddiwethaf, a hwnnw weithieu a derfyna yn y bogeiliaid, gweithiau y terfyna yn un fogail, fal y mae yr Englyn hwn.

Pei cawn o gyflawn gyfle brofi—Rhin
Cyd bei rhon fy nghrogi
Fy neges oedd fynegi,
Fy ngoveg ddynt teg iti.

d

Gweithiau eraill y terfyna Englyn Unawdl Uniawn mewn ddwy fogail, ac weithieu mewn Dipton dalgronn, fal y mae hwn.

Dilynais, clwyfais fal i'm clyw—Deg cant
Y degcaf o ddyn byw
Dolur gormodd am doddyw
Dilyn pryd ewin prid yw.

Llywelyn fab Gruffydd a'i cant.

Gweithiau eraill y terfyna mewn Dipton leddf, fal y mae hwn.

Cudwyll wyd o bwyll a ball dra mwy—Hoet
A hud mab Mathonwy,
Unwedd ath wneir a Chreirwy
Enwir Fryd rhy hir Frad rhwy.

Pan derfyno yr Englyn yn y Cydseiniaid, yna gweithieu y terfyna yn un fogail, a chydsain, fal y mae yr Englyn hwn

Llawnlwys Lys yw Rhys, Rhos gynired—Cad
Cedernyd Edelffled,
Lliw difai Llywiawd Dyfed,
Llew llawn gynniweir creir cred.

Gweithiau eraill y terfyna yr Englyn mewn dwy fogail a chydsain, ac yna gweithiau y terfyna yr Englyn mewn Dipton dalgronn a chydsiniaid, fal y mae hwn.

Ofer o iawnder undawd—hwyl anaw
Haelioni'r Bedyssawd,
Wrthyd ail Arthur yrthwawd
Cadwgawn cadr ffynnon ffawd.

Gweithieu eraill y terfyna yr Englyn mewn Dipton leddf, a chydsiniaid ; fal y mae yr Englyn hwn.

Cathlen Eos nos yn oed—y ciglen
Neu gofer gofal hoed,
Coethlef herw oddef hir oed
Cethlydd cein awenydd coed.

Englyn Unawdl Crwcca a fydd pan fo y Pennill hir y diweddf, a'r ddau air fyrrion yn gyntaf fal hyn.

Cydymwnel cyfyd bryd brys
Yn llawen llewyrth ystlys
Lledfryd calon don—ef a'i dengys—grudd
Lliw blaen grub geferys.

Englyn Unodl Cyrch y fydd pan fo y ddau air unawdl yn gyntaf, a'r gair hir yn ddiwethaf, a hwnnw fydd a'r gair cyrch ynddaw ; ac oni bydd namyn tair odl ynddaw o achaws y gair cyrch, fal y mae yr Englyn hwn.

Hynyg hir loyw ei hystlys
 Gwypmp ei llun yn ei llae-grys
 Gwynlliw Ewyn gwendonn iawn
 Gwynlliw eigiawn pan ddyfrys.

Tri rhyw Englyn Proest y sydd, Proest Dalgron, a Lleddf Broest,
 a Phroest Gadwynawg.

Proest Dalgron gweithieu y terfyna yn y bogeiliaid, pan derfyna
 pedair odl yr Englyn mewn pedair bogail amrafael, a hwnnw a elwir
 Proest y bogailiaid, fal y mae hwn.

Doeth ei Feirdd heirdd hardd westi
 Hael Ruffydd o'i rydd a'i ra
 Cymraw pan ddelit Cymro
 Cymreist addwyndawd Cymru.

Gweithiau eraill y terfyna Englyn Proest dalgron yn y Cydseiniaid,
 pan derfyno pedair awdl yr Englyn yn yr un cydsain, ac o amrafael-
 ion fogailiaid, fal y mae hwn.

Dy garu gorhoen eglur
 Angharad gwenwynfrad gwyr
 Hoyw gangen hy a gyngor
 Hawl enaid y direidwr.

Gweithieu y terfyna yr Englyn mewn Dipton dalgron, fal y mae
 hwn.

Angharad hoyw leuad liw
 Ynghyfraith lewych i aeth law
 Wyf o'th gariad glwysgad gliw
 Ynfyd drwy benyd ym byw.

Lledd Broest gweithieu y terfyna yn y bogeiliaid, pan derfyno
 pedair odl yr Englyn mewn pedair lleddf Dipton amrafael, fal y mae
 hwn.

Cae a gefais dawngais doe
 Cu fydd cof rhydd rhydd rhodd er fei
 Yn eil groes ym oes a mwy-
 Anwyl greir cywir yw'r cae.

Gweithieu eraill yn y Cydseiniaid, pan derfyno pedair odl yr
 Englyn mewn pedair Lleddf Dipton amrafael ar yr un cydsein, fal y
 mae hwn.

Llawen dan gaer wenn lenn laes
 Lleddf olwg gloyw amlwg glwys
 Llathr lun manol a folais
 Llaryaidd foneddigaidd foes.

Proest Gadwynawg a fydd pan fo'r odl gyntaf i'r Englyn yn ateb
 i'r drydedd, a'r ail yn ateb i'r bedwaredd; a weithieu y bydd Proest
 Gadwynawg dalgron, fal y mae hwn.

Mynnwn cyt yt gwegawn gwg
 Men dy gael rhin adael rheg
 Ynghobant yngobell mwg
 Ynghobeith tywyn waith teg.

Weithieu eraill y bydd Lleddf-broest Gadwynawg fal y mae yr
 Englyn hwn.

Na'r haul yn hwyl awyrneid
 Na'r lloer nid gwell y cliwyd
 Yn llathr wiw wedd yn llathreid
 Yn llathru fo Lleucu Llwyd.

Englyn o'r Hen Ganiad a fydd o deir awdl, ac weithieu y bydd o
 dri geir byrrion, o seith sillaf bob un o honynt, fal y mae hwn.

Chwerddid Mwyalch mewn celli
 Nid ardd, nid erddir iddi
 Nid llawenach neb no hi.

Weithieu eraill y bydd o Bennill hir o un Sillaf ar bymtheg, a
 phennill byrr o seith sillaf, fal yr Englyn hwn.

Onid ynad a darllead
 Llyfrau a'i eiriau wastad
 Araith mewn cyfreith ni ad.

Mesur Englyn Unawdl nac uniawn fo, na chrwcca, yw deg sillaf ar
 hugaint, un ar bymtheg yn y gair hir, a seith ymmhob un o'r ddau air
 fyrrion ac yn y pennill hir, gweithieu y bydd yr awdl gyntaf i'r geir
 yn y seithfed sillaf, ac yn y gair toddiedig dros yr awdl, a fydd tri sillaf-
 awg ; gweithieu eraill y bydd yr awdl yn yr wythfed sillaf, ac yna y
 geir toddiedig dros yr awdl a ddily fod yn ddeu-sillafawg ; gweithieu
 eraill y bydd yr awdl yn y nawfed sillaf, ac yna y geir toddiad dros yr
 awdl a ddily fod yn un sillafawg ; ac yn un wedd a hynny y bydd y
 cwbl o doddeid, ac yn unwedd y pennill hir o wawddodyn.

Mesur Englyn Proest yw wyth sillaf ar hugaint, seith mewn pob un
 pedwar pennill. Mesur Englyn Cyrch yw wyth sillaf ar hugaint,
 seith sillaf mewn pob un o'r ddeu pennill fyrrion, a phedwar ar ddeg
 yn y pennill hir, a'r sillaf gyrech yn hwnnw a ddily fod yn y seithfed
 sillaf, a'r sillaf a gyreher a ddily fod yn unfed sillaf ar ddeg. Ac felly
 y terfyna Mesurau yr Englynion, a'u Hamcanau.

Hyd yma y dywedpwyd am yr Englynion, dywetter bellach am yr
 Eil Geinge o Brydyddiaeth, nid amgen am *Awdlau*, a'u *Mesurau*, a'u
Hamcanau.

Pump Mesur cyffredin a fu o'r dechreuad ar *Awdlau*, nid amgen
Toddeid a *Gwawddodyn*, a *Cyhydedd hir*, a *Chyhydedd ferr* a
Rhupunt.

Toddeid a fesurir o bedair sillaf ar bymtheg bob pennill, fal y mae
 yr Awdl hon.

Nid digerydd Duw neud digariad.—Cyrdd
 Neud lliw gwyrdd i fyrdd o feirdd yn rhad
 Neud llunaws frwyn cwyn canwlad ynghystudd
 O'th attal Ruffydd wayw-rudd roddiad.

a'i chynnal felly hyd y pen.

Gwawddodyn a fydd o ddau bennill fyrrion, o naw sillaf bob un o naddynt a phennill hir o bedair sillaf ar bymtheg fal y mae yr Awdl hon.

Meddylieis y dreis o dra syml fryd
 Meddwl meddw gymwyn anfwyn ynfyd
 Meddyliaf am Naf am Nawdd gyd-oesmwyth
 Nid meddwl diffryth modd ymdiffryd.

Arall,

Daroganaf Naf daroganant,
 Darogan feirdd heirdd digeirdd dygant,
 Dognoedd o wisgoedd a wisgant—o'i law
 Darf Loegr fraw canllaw cynllwg rymiant.

Cyhydedd Hir a fydd o Bennillion hirion oll o bedair sillaf ar bymtheg bob un o naddunt, ac yn y pennill hwnnw, y bydd tri phennill byrrion, deu o bump sillaf bob un o honynt, a phob un o honynt yn ateb i'w gilydd, a phennill arall o naw sillaf, ac yn y bumped sillaf yn ateb i'r ddeu bennill gyntaf, ac wrth ddiwedd odl yn y pennill cyntaf y cynhelir yr Awdl oll, fal y mae hon.

Trindawd parawd pur	}	mur mireinwch
Traws maws moes eglur		
Trwy rad mad modur		
Tra fi Rhi rhadlawn	}	digawn degwch
Trafni Tor dyfnfor dawn		
Tref, Nef, Naf cyfiawn.		

A'i chynnal hyd y pen.

Arall.

Llefaru a wnafl	}	gelfydd arfer
Llywiawdr nef a'i Naf		
Llyw nerth y galwaf		
Llyma fy namwein	}	llun mein muner
Llym foli rhiein		
Llaryaidd bryd mirein		

Cyhydedd Ferr a fydd o bennillion byrrion oll, o wyth sillaf bob un o honynt, fal y mae hon.

Gwan wyf o glwyf yn glaf trym heint
 Gwenn fraeth a'm gnaeth gne gofeilieint
 Gweneith yw gweith y gwythlawn ddeint
 Gwynder Lleufer Lloer am blygeint.

Rhupunt a fydd o bennillion hirion oll, o ddeuddeg sillaf bob un o honynt, ac yn y pennill hwnnw y bydd tri phennill byrrion, o bedair sillaf bob un o naddynt, a'r ddeu gyntaf yn ateb bob un i'w gilydd; ac wrth ddiwedd odl y pennill diweddaf, yn cynhelir yr Awdl oll, a'r eil sillaf o'r trydydd pennill yn ateb i'r ddeu bennill eraill; fal y mae hon.

Trindawd ffawd ffer	}	gwarder gwirdad.
Tref, nef, nifer		
Trech wyd no neb	}	treiddiwn attad.
Trwy ddawn ateb		

Gwedy hynny y dychymmygwyd pedwar Mesur eraill; nid amgen; *Byrr a Thoddeid*, a *Gwawdodyn Hir*, a *Chyhydedd Naw ban*, a *Chlogymach*.

Byrr a Thoddeid o bennill hir yn gyntaf o un sillaf ar bymtheg, megis dryll Englyn un awdl; ac oddi yna cymmaint ac a fynner o bennillion byrrion o wyth sillaf bob un o naddunt, ac oddi yna pennill hir o un sillaf ar bymtheg, megis y cyntaf, a'i chynnal felly hyd y penn, fal y mae yr Awdl hon.

Tomas a Rhoppert rhwydd par—gwersyllig
 Rhwyf rhyfig rhyfelgar
 Rhuthr aruthr a areithraw esgar
 Rheithion gawr rhwythawr llawr llachar
 Rhwym cymgin cynegy diwatwar
 Rhwym cedyrn neud cadarno far
 Rhwyg tan a gwyfan fal twrf gwynniar—drut
 Molut clut clot waegar.

Arall.

Y gwr am rhoddes rhinieus— ar dafawt
 Ac ar wawt a geirieu
 Am troses i gyffes nid geu
 Am troso i'r trosedd goreu
 I guriaw gorwieg fy ngruddieu
 I garu Mab Duw diameu
 I gymryt penyt rhag poenau—uffern
 Ac affaeth pechodeu.

Gwawdodyn Hir a fydd o Bennillion byrrion, o naw sillaf bob un o honynt, a phennill hir o bedair sillaf ar bymtheg, un ffurf a Gwawdodyn arall, eithr bod o bennillion byrrion yn ddau gymmeint ac a fynner, fal y mae hwn yn ddrych amcan.

Gwann iawn wyf o glwyf er gloyw forwyn
 Gwae a faeth hiraeth brif arfaeth brwyn
 Gwyr fy ngalon donn ddefnydd fy nghwyn
 Gwr ar fyrr ennyd cyn bo terwyn
 Am na ddaw i lawr lwyn—a bwyllaf
 A garaf attaf ateb addfwyn.

Cyhydedd Naw bann a fydd o bennillion byrrion oll, o naw sillaf,
 bob un o honynt, fal y mae hwnn.

Wrhyd Greawdr byd, bid fy nghobaith
 Wrthyf bydd drugar hywar hyweith
 I'th argae neud gwae nid gwael y gweith
 Wrth ddynion gwylion y bo goleith
 Wrth hynny Duw fry frenhin pob ieith
 I'th archaf dangnef ceinllef canlleith.

A'i chynnal felly hyd y penn.

Clogyrnach a fydd ddeu bennill fyrrion o wyth sillaf pob un o
 honynt yn ateb i'w gilydd, a phennill o un sillaf ar bymtheg, ac yn
 hwnnw y bydd y tri phennill byrrion, deu o bump sillaf pob un o
 honynt, ac yn ateb i'w gilydd yn yr amrafaelion odlau ar y ddeu
 bennill gyntaf, a phennill arall hir o chwech sillaf, ac yn y trydydd
 sillaf o honaw yn ateb i'r ddeu bennill fyrrion diwethaf, a diwedd
 odl y Pennill hwnnw yn ateb i'r ddeu bennill gyntaf, ac wrth y rhai
 hynny y cynnhelir yr Awdl oll ; fal y mae yr Awdl hon.

Y Barrau arfau arfolach
 Y Bebyll, y byll, y hall coch,
 Am iwch feirdd i fudd
 Emrych llys nyw lludd
 Enwys rudd
 Rhuthr gwyddfoch.

A'r modd hwnnw a elwir dull Cynndelw.

Tri Mesur eraill a feddyliawdd Einiawn Offeiriad, nid amgen—*Hir
 a Thoddaid, Cyrch a Chwta, a Thawdd Gyrc Gadwynawog.*

Hir a Thoddaid a fydd o bedwar pennill byrrion, o ddeg sillaf bob
 un o honynt, a phennill hir o ugain sillaf fal y mae hwnn.

Gwynfyd gwyr y byd oedd fod Angharad
 Gwenfyn yn gyfyn a'i gwiw fawr gariad
 Gwan llun am lludd hun hoen dwg barabliad
 Gwyn lliw Ery difryw difrys gymdeithiad
 Gwenn dan aur wiwlenn leddedrychiad—gwyl
 Yw fanwyl yn ei hwyl heul gymmeriad.

Cyrch a Chwta a fydd o chwech geir byrrion, o seith sillaf bob un
 o honynt, a phennill o bedair sillaf ar ddeg, a gair gyrc ynddaw, fal
 y mae hwn.

Llithrawdd ys rhannawdd is rhad
 Llathr gof ynof anynad
 Lloer Cymru cymraist dyad
 Llwy'r y gnaeth mygr arfaeth mād
 Lleas gwas gwys nas dywad
 Lliaws geir hynaws gariad
 Lledd gein riein llun meinwar
 Lliw llewychgar Angharad.

Tawdd Gyrc'h Gadwynawg a fydd o gyplau hirion o *bedair sillaf ar hugain* yn y cwpl; ac yn y cwpl hwnnw y bydd pedwar pennill, o un sillaf ar bymtheg pob un o honynt, ac y pennill hir hwnnw y bydd tri phennill byrrion, deu o bedair sillaf bob un o honynt, a phennill arall o wyth sillaf; a'r ddeu bennill fyrrion gyntaf o'r pennill hir cyntaf pob un o naddunt, yn ateb i bob un o'r ddeu bennill gyntaf o'r eil pennill hir; nid amgen, y cyntaf i'r cyntaf, yr eil i'r eil o'r bedwarydd sillaf o'r pennill byrr wythsillafawg; a'r pedwar pennill byrrion cyntaf, i'r ddeu bennill hirion diwethaf, yn ateb pob un i'w gilydd, a diwedd odl pob un o'r pedwar pennill hirion yn ateb i'w gilydd, ac nid rhaid ateb o fwy no'r cwbl pedwar pennillawg oni mynner, eithr rhaid yw eu bod yn cynhogion o diwedd i ddiwedd y cwpl hwnnw dechreu y llall; a diwedd yr holl Awdl yn ateb i'r geir cyntaf o'r dechreu; a'r modd hwnnw a gaffad o'r mydr wrth y modd Lladin, fal y mae yr Awdl hon.

Buddiant i feirdd Byrddau dramwy Dra mawr ofwy	} Ofec hael Nudd.
Hoywon a heirdd Gan hardd facwy Fyddant hwy rwy	} Oe rā a'i rudd.
Arfau pybyr Erfai dymyr Arfawg frehyr	} Ardd gwyr gwaywrudd.
Arial milwyr Eiriau myfyr Eryr Rhyswyr	} Rhys ab Gruffydd.

Ac felly y terfyna Mesurau yr Odlau, a'u Hamcanau.

Hyd hynn y dywedpwyd am a ddwy Geinge gyntaf o Brydyddiaeth, nid amgen am Englynion ac Awdleu; dywetter bellach am y drydedd Geinge, nid amgen *Cywydddeu*, a'u Mesureu, a'u Hamcanau.

Tri rhyw Gywydd sydd; Cywydd denair ac Awdl Gywydd, a Chywydd Llosgyrniawg.

Deu ryw Gywydd Deuair y sydd; Cywydd Deuair Hirion, a Chywydd deuair fyrrion.

Cywydd Denair Hirion a fesurir o seith sillaf pob un o'r ddeuair, fal y mae hwn.

March ffyrf archgrwn byrr ei flew,
Llyfn llygatrwlh pedreindew
Cyflwyd coflith genchym gaff
Cyflym cefnyfyr cadarn graff
Cyflawn o galon a chig
Cyfliw blodau'r banhadl frig

A'i gynnal felly hyd y penn.

Cywydd Denair Fyrrion a fesurir o bedair sillaf, pob un o'r ddeu air, fal y mae hwnn.

Hardd deg riein
Hydwl lwysgein
Hoyw liw gwenig
Huan debyg
Hawdd dy garu
Heul yn llathru.

Awdl Gywydd a fesurir o bedair sillaf ar ddeg, a chyrch ynddaw ac nawdl y bydd y Cywydd oll, fal y mae hwn.

O gwrthody liw ewyn
Was difelyn gudynneu
Yn ddiwladeidd da i len
A'i awen yn ei'lyfreu
Cael yt filein aradrgaeth
Yn waeth waeth ei gynneddfe.

A'i gynnal felly hyd y pen.

Cywydd Llosgyrniawg a fesurir o ddeuair, neu dri, neu bedwar, o wyth sillaf pob un o honynt, a phennill llosgyrniawg yn ol seith sillaf ynddaw; ac wrth ddiwedd awdl y pennill hwnnw a cynhelir y Cywydd oll, fal y mae hwnn.

Lliw eiry manod mynydd Mynneu
Lluoedd o'th fawl gwawl gwawr deheu
Llathrlun goleu oleu ddydd
Llifoedd fy hoen o boen benyd
Lluddiawd ym hun llun bun lloer byd
Lledfryd nid bywyd i'm bydd.

A'i gynnal wrth yr Awdl hwnnw hyd y penn.

Bellach canys der yw dywedyd am deir ceinge Prydyddiaeth, nid amgen am yr Englynion, a'r Awdlau, a'r Cywyddau, a'u Hamcanau, iawn yw weithion dywedyd am y Beieu, am Cammeu, a ddylyer eu gochel y mewn pob Cerdd Dafawd canmoledig.

Mewn tri lle ar Gerdd Dafawd y gellir beiau, nid amgen, yn y *Cymmeradau* a'r *Cymghaneddau*, a'r *Odlau*, a chyd a hynny yn yr *Ystyr*, *Synwyr*, a'r *Dychymmyg*.

Y *Cymmeriadau* a fyddant mewn dechreu y pennillau, a'r *Cynghaneddeu* yn y cenol, a'r *Odlau* yn y diwedd. Pob twyll awdleu a phob twyll Cynghanedd, a phob twyll Cymeriad, Bai a Cham fydd mewn Cerdd.

Bei hefyd mewn Cerdd yw bod ynndi unig a Lluosawg ynghyd, fal pei dywettyd *Ugeimor*, yn lle, neu pan ddylyer dywedyd *Ugeimwyr*.

Bei hefyd yw Gwryw, a Benyw ynghyd, fal y dywettid *Gwraig cryf*, neu *Wr cref*, pan ddylyid dywedyd *Gwr cryf*, neu *Wraig gref*.

Bei yw gwydd ac absen ynghyd, a hynny o ddwy ffordd. Un yw pan ddotter deu amser amrafael ynghyd mewn ymadrodd, fal pei dywettid, *Mi a brydaf*, pei *gwyppwn i bwy*—pan ddylyid dywedyd, *Mi a brydwn*, pei *gwyppwn i bwy*. Eil ffordd yw pan dotter dau ddyn-weddiad amrafael ynghyd mewn ymadrawd fal pei dywettid, *Mi a wyr pryd*; pan ddylyid dyweddyd, *Mi a wn pryd*.

Bei ar Gerdd yw Trwm ac Ysgafn ynghyd, nid amgen bod y naill awdl yn dromm, a'r llall yn ysgafn.

Llymma Reol i adnabod Trwm ac Ysgawn; nid amgen, ni lluosogi y gair, a'i amlhau; megis pe byddid heb wybod beth yw *Calon*, ai Trwm, ai ysgawn; yna lluosoger ef a dywetter *Calonnau*; achaws trwm fydd yn y gair cyn ei luosogi. Ac yn un wedd a hynny oni wyddys beth yw *amcan*; ai trwm ai ysgawn, lluosoger ef a dywetter *amcanau*; yna peiriediccer y gair, a dywetter *amcanu*, ac wrth ei fod yno yn ysgafn, wrth hynny ysgawn fydd yn y cyntaf; ac ar Reol honno yr adnabydder beth yw sillaf betrus, ai un sillaf, ai dwy, fal y mae *bygwol*; lluosoger a dywetter bygylau, neu berfoccer ef a dywetter *bygylu*, a chansys tri sillafawg yw hwnnw, wrth hynny deu sillafawg yw'r llall. Ac os lluosoger *bagl*, a dywedyd *baglau*, canys deu sillafawg yw *bagleu*; wrth hynny un sillafawg yw *bagl*, can ni ddyly fod yn y gair wedi lluosogi namyn un sillaf ragor nog yn y gair cyn ei luosogi.

Bei yw mewn Cerdd bod Lledd a Thalgronn ynghyd, sef bod y naill bann yn lleddf, a'r llall yn dalgronn.

Bei ar Englyn yw Proest, ac un awdl, sef bod y neill ddryll i'r Englyn yn unawdl, a'r llall yn broest.

Bei ar Englyn yw bod mwy o odlau ynddaw na phedair, oni bydd Englyn hir, a mesur dau Englyn neu dri arnaw.

Bei ar Englyn yw bod yr un gair ynddaw ddwywaith, oni bydd deirgweith; oni *Hytgyllaeth*, neu *Ymalhawch* cariad yn eagus drostaw. *Hytgyllaeth*, fal y mae yr Englyn hwnn.

Gwrthrych eurgreir pur pendeig—ydwyf

Fi gan Dduw gwynfydedig,

Hir ei lygad Loegr adrig

A wrthrych deigr hywlych dig.

Ymalhawch cariad, fal y mae yn yr Englyn hwnn.

Gwenn dann eurwiw lenn leddf edrychawl—gwyf

Y gweleis Angharad

A gwann o bryd egwan brad

Im gwyl gwylwawr Angharad.

Bei ar Englyn yw bod moliant a gogan ynghyd ynddaw, mal pei dywettid, *Gwraig deg ddisiml annuweir*.

Bei ar Englyn Unawdl yw ei fod yn *garny mordiwee*, sef yw hynny bod pob un o'r ddeu bennill fyrrion lluaws sillafawg, fal y mae hwnn.

Pei prynwn seith pwenn sathr grug—o'th oleu
Pedolau pwy gaddug
Mangre grawnfaeth saeth saethug
Mein a'i nadd yn heiraddug.

Bei ar Englyn Unawdl yw ei fod yn Dinab, sef yw hynny, bod y ddeu bennill fyrrion, mewn Englyn yn y ddwy odl diwethaf, yn un sillafawg, fal y mae yn yr Englyn hwnn.

Gwann iawn wyf o nwyf a naws an hun—gwael
Am ddyng gwyl gweddeidlun
Gwenn a gloyw a hoyw ei hun
Gwyn fyd gwyr y byd yw bun

Ac wrth hynny i ochel y bei hwnn, rhaid yw bod y naill odl yn unsillafawg, a'r llall yn lluaws sillafawg.

Bei yw ar bob Cerdd bod hir, a byrr, sef yw hynny, bod y neill geir yn rhy hir, a'r llall yn rhy fyrr.

Bei yw Torri Mesur, a phob Camystyr, a phob ammhertlynas, ac Eisieu enaid, a Dychymmyg meddwl digrif; a mwyaf Bei ar Englyn, ac ar bob Cerdd Dafawd Canmoledig, ac ar bob Ymadrawdd, yw bod ynddaw eisieu berf, fal yr Englyn hwnn.

Cyrnig llymm trychig llam trwch—yegcrygl
Tud erthygl Tad erthwch,
Cyrn dyrn Deirnwern, cern ceirfwch,
Carn sarn darn dwrth corn hwrdd hwch.

Nid bei ar Englyn cael o arall Englyn a fo gwell nog ef, namyn o'r bydd yr Englyn un o'r Beieu cyfreithawl uchod arnaw, barner ef yn dda o bydd enaid, ac ystyr, a dychymmyg ynddaw cyd barner arall yn well, a'r trydydd yr oreu oll, herwydd y teir gradd Cymmeriad, a ddywedpwyd uchod.

Os bydd gair mewn Cerdd o ddeuystyr, neu synwyr, neu dri ystyr arnaw, ystyr da, ac ystyr drwg, os Cerdd Bryddiad fydd, barner ef herwydd yr ystyr, neu'r synwyr *da*. Os Cerdd Ddychan y bydd, barner ef herwydd y synwyr *drwg*; canys ni pryda neb er drwg, ac ni ddychana neb er da; ac os bydd Cerdd a deu ystyr dda, neu ddeu ystyr ddrwg ynddi, ac ar un geir ynghyd, barner herwydd y gweddo nesaf a goreu ystyr ymadrawdd, oni bydd cael gwybod yn hyspys bod ewyllys y caniadwr yn y gwrthwyneb.

Rhaid yw gwybod bellach pa ffurf y moler pob beth, os y prytter iddaw.

Deu ryw beth y dylyer pryda iddaw; nid amgen peth *ysprydanol*,

a pheth *corphorawl*. Peth ysprydawl, megis y mae *Duw* a *Meir*, a'r *Seint*; peth corphorawl, megis y mae *Dyn*, neu *Lodn*, neu *le*, neu beth difwyd.

Duw a folir o ddwywolder, a chadernyd; a hollgyfoethogrwydd, a holl ddaioni, a holl ddoethineb, a holl drugaredd, a haelioni, a gwirionedd, a chyfiawnder, a gallu, a gogoniant, a mawrhydi, a dosparth barnau cyfiawn, a chariad, a nefawlder, a chreedigaeith nef a daear, a natoliaeth, ac ysprydolder, ac anrhydedd, a thegwch nefawl, a pob beth ysprydawl anrhydeddus.

Meir a folir o'i morwyndawd, a'i gwyrdawd, a'i diweirdeb, a'i thru-garedd, a'i gogoniant, a'i haelder, a'i hanrhydedd, a'i buchedd, a'i gwarder. Ac o bob arall anrhydeddus y moler ei Harglwydd Fab o naddunt Seint, a folir o sancteiddrwydd, a glendid buchedd, a gwyrthiau, a'u nerthoedd ysprydolion a'u gwenhieithed, a'u nefolion weithredoedd a'u gogoniant dwywawl, a phethau eraill ysprydawl anrhydeddus.

Dau ryw Wr a folir;—*Crefyddwr* a *Gwr Byd*.

Dau ryw Ddyn y sydd y ddyllir eu moli, *Gwr* a *Gwraig*. Dau ryw Wr Byd y sydd, *Llyg* ac *Yscolhaig*. Dau ryw Yscolhaig y sydd, Preladiaid, megis Esgyb neu Arch Esgyb, a folir o'i ddoethineb, a'i ddysg a'u prudderder a'u cymmhendawd, a'u cyfiawnder, a'u llywodraeth Eglwysig a thrugaredd, a'u haelioni, a thegwch a chadernyd yn cynnal cyfreithiau'r Eglwys, a'u trugaredd wrth Dlodion, a'u helusenau, a'u gweddiau, a'u gweithredoedd ysprydolion, a'u haelder cyfiawn, a'u cynheilid llysoedd, a'u haddfwynder, a'u pwyll, a'u gofal, a phethau eraill Eglwysig, ac anrhydeddus.

Dau ryw Ddarostyngedigion y sydd, *Personieit* ac *Athrawon*.

Personieit a folir a gymmhendawd, a doethineb, a gwrdaeth, ac elusenau, a haelioni deddfawl, a defodau da, ac addfwynder, deall a bonedd, a thegwch ac addfwynder, ac bonneddigeiddrwydd defodau yn cynnal Rann Eglwysau, ac elusennau, a gweithredoedd trugarogion, a phethau eraill anrhydeddus.

Athrawon a folir o ddoethineb, a chymmhendawd, a goruchelder cyfreithiau a chanon, a thegwch a defodau da, addfwynder deall, a dyfnder athrylith, a goruchelder celfyddydau, a synwyreu buddigoliaethau yn ymrysonu, ac addfwynder, a thegwch, a bonedd, a haelioni elusendawd cynheddfeu a defodau da, a hygarwch ac alwyseneu, ac ymbwyllgarwch, a phethau eraill ysgolhieigieidd a phwylliedigawl.

Deu Wr Llyg a folir,—*Arglwydd* a *Breyr*. Arglwydd a foler o feddiant a gallu, a milwriaeth, a gwrhydri, a chedernyd, a balchder, ac addfwynder, a doethineb, a chymmhendawd, a haelioni, a gwarder, ac addfwyndawd moesau, ac hegarwch wrth ei wyr a'i gyfeillion, a thegwch pryd a thelediwrwydd corph, a mawrfrydwch meddwl, a mawrhydu gweithredoedd a phethau addfwyn anrhydeddus.

Breyr a folir o ddewrder, a glewder a chadernyd, a chryfder milwriaeth a chywirdeb wrth ei Arglwydd, a doethineb, a chymmhendawd, a haelioni, a digrifwch, a theledigrwydd corph, a molianusder meddwl, a bonedd, a phethau eraill canmoledig.

Crefyddwr a folir o grefydd, a sancteiddrwydd, a glendid buchedd, a meddyliau dwywolion, a nerthoedd ysprydolion, a gweithredoedd trugaredd, a haelioni, cardodau er Duw, ac bethau eraill nefolion ysprydawl a berthyn ar Dduw, a'r Seint, ac ar addwynhâd moes a defawd.

Their rhyw Wraig a folir, *Gwraig-dda*, a *Rhiein*, a *Chrefyddwraig*.

Gwraig-dda a folir o ddoethineb a chymhendawd, diweirdeb, a haelioni, a thegwch pryd, a gwedd, a ffurf, a ddisimlder ymadrawdd, a gweithredoedd, a defodau da; ac ni pherthyn moli gwreig-dda o herwydd serch, a chariad ac ni pherthyn iddi ordderch Gerdd.

Rhiein a folir o bryd, a gwedd, a bonedd, a thegwch, a chymhendawd, a disimlder, a molianusrwydd, a boneddigeiddrwydd campau, a serch, a lledneisrwydd a charedigrwydd, ac iddi y perthyn serch a chariad; ac yn un wedd a hynny y molir Mab.

Crefyddwraig a folir o sancteiddrwydd, a diweirdeb, a glendid buchedd, a phethau eraill dwywawl megis Crefyddwr.

A litera. i. e.

Crefyddwr, a Chrefyddwraig a folir o sancteddwrwydd, a glendid buchedd, a chardodau, a molianrwydd Duw a'r Seint, a Seilem, a gweddiu, ac ymprydieu, a gweithredoedd ysprydolion, a phob perffeithrowydd, ar a berthyno ar foliant Duw a'r Seint.

Ni pherthyn ar Brydydd ymyrru ar glerwriaeth er arfer o honi, canys gwrthwyneb yw i greffteu prydydd; canys ar Glerwr y perthyn goganu, ac anghlodfori, a gwneuthur cywilydd, a gwaradwydd.

Ar y Prydydd y perthyn canmawl, a chlodfori, a gwneuthur clod, a llawenydd, a gogoniant, a chyda hynny, ni ellir dosparth ar glerwriaeth, canys cerdd anosparthus yw, ac am hynny nac ymmyrred Prydydd ynddi, can mae yspeiddeid ydyw.

Ef a berthyn hagen ar Brydydd ymyrru ar Deuluwriaeth, a barnu arnei; canys cerdd ddosparthus a ddiagybliaeth Prydyddiaeth ar hen fordd, ar ganu cyn deall ar cynghanedd.

Yn y lle y prytto Prydydd ni pherthyn credu gogan Clerwr, canys trech y ddyly bod moliangerdd Prydydd no gogangerdd Clerwr.

Swynoglau, a dewindabaeth, a charyau hudoliaeth ni rwy berthyn ar Brydydd ymyrru ynddynt, nag arfer o honynt, canys addwyn, ac aneddf hynny iddaw.

Hen Gerdd ac Ystoriau ysgrifenedig o Gofynnau o anrhyfeddod, ac odidawg atebion herwydd celfyddyd, a gwirionedd, da yw i Brydydd eu gwybod wrth ymddiddan a doethion, a diddannu Rhianod, a digrifhau gwyr da, a gwragedd da; canys cyfran o ddoethineb amcanawl yw Prydyddiaeth, ac o'r Yspryd Glan, yr henyw ai hawen a geffir o ethrylith, a chelfyddyd arfer; a llymma y nerthoedd ysprydolion a berthynant ar Brydydd, nid amgen hufudd-dawd, a haelioni deddfawl, a diweirdeb, ac ysprydawl gariad, a chymmedrollder bywyd, a llymna, a hynawsder, a dilesgrwydd dwyfawl, y rheiny sydd wrthwyneb i'r seith bechawd marwol, nid amgen, balchder, a chynghorfeint trahans a chybyddiaeth, a godineb, a glythineb, a llid, a lleagedd, y rhai a lesgant y corph, ac a laddant yr enaid, ac a lygrant Awen Prydyddiaeth, a hylant y synwreiu.

Hyd hynn y dywetpwyd am deir ceinge Prydyddiaeth, ac a berthyn arnynt, nid amgen Teuluwriaeth, Clerwriaeth, a Prydyddiaeth, dywetter bellach am

DRIOEDD CERDD.

1. Tri Bei cyffredin sydd ar Gerdd ;—Torr Mesur, Drwg Ystyr, a Cham Ymadrawdd.
2. Tri thorr Mesur y sydd ; Hir a byrr, a Gormodd odlau, a Thwyll odl.
3. Tri rhyw ddrwg ystyr y sydd ; eisieu enaid, cam ddychymmyg, ac ammerthynas.
4. Tri cham ymadrawdd y sydd ;—unig a lluosawg ynghyd ; Gwrw y a Benyw ynghyd ; a gwydd ac absen ynghyd.
5. Tri ammerthynas Cerdd y sydd ; moliant a gogan ynghyd ; rhyw ac eisieu ynghyd ac anlyc.
6. Tri Bei gwahanredol y sydd ar Gerdd ; Trwm ac Ysgawn ynghyd ; Lledd a Thalgron ; Proest ac unawdl.
7. Tair Rhan ymadrawdd y sydd ; Enw, Rhagenw, a Berf.
8. Tri rhyw ymadrawdd y sydd ; ymadrawdd perffaith, ymadrawdd cyfiawn, ac ymadrawdd ddurn.
9. Tair Rhan Prydyddiaeth y sydd ; Sillaf, Gair, ac Ymadrawdd.
10. Teir rhyw Sillaf y sydd ; Sillaf dalgronn, sillaf leddf, a sillaf Dipton.
11. Teir sillaf dalgronn y sydd ; Dipton dalgronn, a Thalgronn leddf, a Thalgronn gotta.
12. Teir sillaf leddf y sydd ; Pengam leddf, cadarn leddf, a thawdd leddf.
13. Teir sillaf dipton y sydd ; Dipton dalgronn, a dipton leddf, a dipton wib.
14. Teir dipton gymmeriad, a chymmysg y sydd ; Dipton dalgronn leddf ; dipton bengam leddf, a dipton dawdd leddf, neu gadarn leddf.
15. Tair Rhyfedd ddipton y sydd ; dipton ddieithr, a dipton losgyrnawg, a dipton wib.
16. Tair dipton odidawg ganiad y sydd ; Dipton dalgronn leddf, a dipton losgyrniawg, a dipton gadarn leddf.
17. Tair sillaf gadarn leddf ganiad y sydd ; Trom leddf ; byddar leddf, a chadarn leddf.
18. Tair sillaf ysgawn ganiad y sydd ; sillaf dalgronn ; a sillaf bengam leddf, a sillaf fud.
19. Tair sillaf ddieithredig y sydd ; Dipton ddieithr, a bogail ymlaen bogail, a dipton wib.
20. Tair dipton y sydd ni cheir proest yn eu herbyn ; Dipton dawdd leddf, dipton dalgronn, a dipton wib.
21. Tri Bei gwahanredawl y sydd ar Englyn unawdl ; Carnmorddiwes, a thinab, a drwg osodiad ar odlau.
22. Tri pheth a gywreiniant ymadrawdd ; Cyfansoddiad gweddus ar y geiriau, a chyfiawnder ar ddychymmyg, a lliw.

23. Tri pheth a amherffethiant ymadrawdd ; amherthynas, a cham ystyr, a eisieu enaid.

24. Tri pheth a gydfreiniant ymadrawdd ; ac a'u teilyngant ; Ehdurwydd, ac huolder parabl, a chywraideb synwyr, ac anianawl ddeall y dadganiad.

25. Tri pheth a anghywreiniant ymadrawdd ; Pwl-ddadganiad, ac anghywreindeb synwyr, ac anystyriol ddeall y parablwr.

26. Tri rhyw Gerddor y sydd ; Clerwr, Teuluwr, a Phrydydd.

27. Tri pheth a berthynt ar glerwr ; goganu, ymbil, a gwarthrudd-iaw.

28. Tri pheth a berthynant ar Deuluwr ; cyfanneddu a haelioni, a digrifwch, ac erfyniad da yn deuluwraidd heb rwy ymbil am denynt.

29. Tri pheth a berthynant ar Brydydd ; clodfori, a digrifhau, a gwrth neu gogan gerdd y clerwr.

30. Tri unben cerdd ; Prydu, a dadganu, a chyfrwyddyd.

31. Tri pheth a anurddant gerdd ; ei datgen yn anamser, heb ei gofyn, a chanu yn amherthynas, nid amgen nogir neb nis dyleu, ac eisieu cerddwr i'w barnu.

32. Tri pheth a urddant gerdd ; Ehdurwydd, a ehofnder parabl, ac ethrylith y datgeiniad, ac awdurawd y Prydydd.

33. Tri pheth a hoffant gerdd ; Dyfnder synwyr, a'i ystyr, odidawg ddychymmyg, ac awdurawd y Prydydd.

34. Tri pheth a anhoffant gerdd ; basder synwyr, a sathredig ddychymmyg, ac anurddas y Prydydd.

35. Tri pheth a gywreiniant ar gerdd gywreïn-cyfansoddiad ymadroddion, ac amllder Cymraeg, wrth ei chyfansoddi, a dychymmyg ar y gerddwriaeth wrth gyfansoddi y Gerdd.

36. Tri pheth a anghywreiniant Gerdd, eisieu modd i gyfansoddi ymadroddion, ac amllder Cymraeg, ac angherddwriaeth.

37. Tri pheth a beir i Gerddwr fod yn aml ei Gerdd ; cyfarwyddyd ystorieu, a barddoniaeth, a hen gerdd.

38. Tri pheth a bylant awen cerddwr ; anghyfarwyddyd, angherddwriaeth, ac anghanmawl.

39. Tri pheth a lygrant o gwbl awen cerddwr ; tra meddwdawd, a thra godineb, a ysgymmundawd.

40. Tri pheth a ddyly Prydydd eu gochel ; Llynna (Liquor) a Phuttein, a Chlerwriaeth.

41. Tri pheth a ddyly Cerddwr eu canmawl ; haelioni, ddigrifwch, a clerwriaeth.

42. Tri pheth a fawrhaa Cerddwr ; gwisgoedd, a chydnabod, a chanmawl.

43. Tri pheth a ddistrywant gerddwr ; noethni, ac anghydnabod, ac anghanmawl.

44. Tri pheth ni chyngan mewn cerdd ; anwadalwch, ac ysmalhawch, ac angherddwriaeth.

45. Tri pheth y cae cerdd arnaw, heb fyned yn eu herbyn ; hen gerdd yr hen brydyddion, a dychymmygawl awdurawd y prydyddion newydd, a chelfyddyd y gerddwriaeth.

46. Tri rhyw Broest y sydd ; Proest dalgronn, a phroest gadwyn-awg, a lleddf broest.

47. Tri rhyw unodl y sydd, unodl-union, unodl cyrch, ac unodl crwcca.

48. Tri pheth a ddyly Cerddwr eu credu ; gogangerdd Clerwr yn y lle y prytto Prydydd ; canys trech y ddyly fod moliangerdd y Prydydd no gogangerdd y Clerwr. Eil yw ni ddyly gredu canu camgerdd, neu angerdd o Brydydd canmoledig, ac awdurdawd iddaw ; canys damwain yw caffael datgeiniad, a ddatgan o gerdd yn gwbl, megis y can o Prydydd. Trydydd yw ni ddyly ef gredu peth ni allo bod, herwydd y doethion, megis na ddylid ymolchi dduw Gwener, neu olchi penn dduw Mercher, can ni weheirdd y doethion un o'r pethau hynny, ac nid pwyll eu credu rhoddi coel arnynt.

49. Tri pheth nid gweddus i Brydydd ymeuogi ynddynt, nac ymarfer o honynt ; gwrth neu addysg, dywedyd celwydd yn ystig, a goganu yn ddiachos.

50. Tri pheth a lawenhaant, ac a wnant ogoniant i Gerddwr ; ei berchi, a chanmawl ei gerdd, a rhoddion gwyr da.

51. Tri pheth a goddant Gerddwr, ac a'i tristhaa ; ei hamherchi, ac anghanmawl ei gerdd, a'i naccau.

52. Tri pheth warthruddant Gerddwr ; ei anghredu, ei anghanmawl a'i chamfarnu.

53. Tri anhepgor Cerddwr ynt, Ehudrwydd parabli, ddatganu cerdd, a myfyrdawd cerddwriaeth rhag ei bod yngham anghymmeradwy, ac ehofnder i ateb a ofynner iddaw.

54. Tri pheth a ddyly Cerddwr eu haddef, cyfrinach, a chywilydd cydymmaith, a chelwydd anghyweddus.

55. Tri pheth ni ddyly Cerddwr eu celu, gwirionedd diargywedd, a barn ar gerddwriaeth, a chlod dynion da.

56. Tri pheth a waberddir i Gerddwr ; camfarnu ar gerddwriaeth, a goganu heb ei haeddu, neu ddywedyd cywilydd yn ei ddyg, a chroes angerdd, neu ddryganian.

57. Tri pheth a bair cariad, a chanmoliaeth i Gerddwr ; haelioni, digrifwch, a mawl defodau da, neu glodfori dynion da.

58. Tri pheth a wradwyddant Gerddwr ; cybyddiaeth, a defodau drwg, a thra chynildeb.

59. Tri pheth a barant garu Cerddwr ; cyfundeb, a haelioni, a rhywiogrwydd.

60. Tri pheth a wna Awen i Gerddwr ; ethrylith, ac arfer, a chel-fyddyd.

61. Tri pheth a lwgr Awen y Cerddwr ; medd-dod, a godineb, ac anghanmawl.

62. Tri pheth a wellha Awen Cerddwr ; ymryson, a llawenydd, a chanmawl.

63. Tri pheth a ddyly Cerddwr eu cyweiriaw wrth ei datganu i eraill, pan gofynner iddaw, dyg, a gwirionedd, a barn ar gerddwriaeth.

64. Tri pheth a anystyrian Gerddwr ; noethni, ac eisieu Cerddwr ac nad anhapper.

65. Tri pheth a anrhydedda Gerddwr ; gwisg, ac awdurdawd, ac ehofnder.

66. Tri pheth a bair cashau Cerddwr ; cybyddiaeth, a dyfrllydrwydd, a goganu dynion da.

Ac felly y terfyna Dosparth Edeyrn Dafawd Aur ar yr Iaith Gymraeg, a'r Mesureu Cerdd Dafawd, ac ar eraill bethau a berthynant a'r Brydyddiaeth a Defodan a ddylynt fod ar Brydydd, herwydd Doethineb yr hen Brydyddion Cymreig.

Terfyn.

Y PUM LLYFR CERDDWRIAETH.

LLYMA ddysc i adnabod Kerddwriaeth kerdd davod herwydd llyfr Davydd Ddu Athraw.

Beth yw Llythyren ? Y llyferydd lleiaf a gair ; a silldaf ac ymadrodd ; Pedwar peth a berthyn ar lythyren, nid amgen Henw, Ffugr, Ordwr a Phower. Pedeir llythyren ar hugain yssydd ynghambaraec, nid amgen ; a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, ll, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, v, w, x, y. Or llythrennau rhai yssydd vogoliaid, nid amgen a, e, i, o, v, w, y. A'r lleill oll yssydd gydsseiniaid, kydsseiniaw a'r bogaliaid a wnant. Or kydsseiniaid rhai yssydd lythr tawdd, nid amgen ff, l, ll, m, n, r, s, Sef yr achaws y gelwir hwynt yn dawdd, toddi a wnant mewn y kerdd, ac fal hyn y toddant ; Gwasgu dwy silldaf dalgron yn un leddf, val y mae Mydr. Eraill or kydsseiniaid y sydd fud fal y mae b, c, d, g, k, p, t. Ar achos y gelwir hwynt yn llythr mud oblegid bychan yw eu ssain yn yr ymadrodd. Sef yw y modd i adnabod mud a thawdd : yr honn y bo ssain y vogail yn i dechreu, tawdd yw, val y mae s, yr honn y bo ssain y vogail yn i diwedd mud yw, val y mae b. Raid yw gwybod am y llythr pa rai ssydd lythrau ou grym eu hunain, a pha rai ssydd Ladin neu Roec. Ll, yssydd a grym dwy l, ynddi, w, y ssydd a grym dwy v, ynddi. X, Lladin yw ac nid anghenrhaid wrthi ynghymraec, kans c, ac s, a roir yn i lle. q, llythyren o Ladin yw ac nid rraid wrthi ynghymraec kans c a roir yn i lle. h, nid llythyren yw namyn arwydd uchenaid ac ni ellir bod hebddi ynghymraec i ysgrivennu geiriau ucheneidiol, val y mae hael, hoedl. Or llythrennau y gwnair y silldafau, wrth hynny y rhaid yw gwybod beth yw silldaf, kyznulleidfa lliaws o lythrennau ynghyd ; kyd boed silldaf

weithiau o un llythyren, val y mae a, weithiau o ddwy, val y mae, ar. weithiau o dair, val y mae, aur. weithiau o bedair, val y mae, karn. weithiau o bump, val y mae gwera. weithiau o chwech, val y mae gwnawn. weithiau o ssaith, val y mae, Flandrs; Ac ni ddichon bod mewn silldaf mwy no hynny o lythyrennau.

Bellach rhaid yw gwybod gwahan rhwng y silldafau, kans rhai or silldafau a fyddant drymion o achos bod dwy or kydsseiniaid unrhyw yn i diwedd val y mae, Gwenn, Karr, rhai yn ysgafn val y mae Gwên, K&r. Rhai a fyddant dalgrynnion o un gosodiad, neu un vogal, ac weithiau o ddwy, ar naill heb gael kyfiawn ssain val y mae Gwâs, neu Gwŷch, ac o un vogal, val y mae, kas, neu, dan, neu, sych. Ac yn Dipton dalgron, aw, val y mae llaw, ew, val y mae llew, i w val y mae lliw. uw, val y mae Duw. yw, val y mae, byw. Hyna y pump. Ac yn ddipton dalgron ddiethr; val y mae jár, jás, jor, jwroh; sef yr achos y gelwir hwynt yn ddiethr ddiptoniaid am allu o silldaf dalgron odli gyda phob un o naddynt; ar diptoniaid hynn oll a vyddant o gysswllt dwy vogal i gyd. Dwy ddipton dalgron wib y ssydd, nid amgen, aur; am na chaiff ddim heb westodl ai hunotlo; klan am na chaiff ddim ai proesto. Pan vo I'o vlaen dipton wib val y mae, lau, honno a elwir dipton ddiethrwib. Pan vo silldaf ai dechreu yn wib ai diwedd yn gadarnleddf, val y mae, ffrauer; honno a elwir dipton wibleddf. Silldaf leddf a vydd o deirffordd; un yw pan vo dau ossodiad yn y silldaf, val y mae, mygr; neu ddwy vogal a dau osodiad, val y mae, marw. A phan fo dwy vogal i gyd yn silldaf ac un yn goleddfu at y llall, val y mae, doe, ŵy, val y mae Gwy, ac val y mae trai. Y rhain ai kyffelyb a elwir, diptoniaid pengamleddf rhywiawg, kans pengammu a wna un o'r bogaliaid tu ag at y llall, eithr bod y ddwy raccw, ae, oe, yn ymssathr ac er hynny lleddf rhywiawc ynt, kans ymrafaeliaw asynwyr a wnant yn yr ymadrodd, ac ymrafaeliaw odlau, val y mae, Gwaec, Goec. Hevyd rhaid yw edrych am yr unrhyw ddiptoniaid uchod, ae, oi, oe; pa ffurf y gwahanir hwynt, bob un o honynt yn un silldaf; ac wrth hynny edrych yn y gair lliaws o silldafau, sef yw hynny, mewn gair a llawer o silldafau ynddaw, val y mae Kymraec; yna y gwahanir hwynt yn ymrafael silldafau; ac yna y bydd pob un yn silldaf dalgron. Eithr pann vont mewn gair unsilldafoc, val y mae, Gwaec, neu Groec, yna dir yw i gwasgu yn un silldaf, a honno a elwir yn pengamleddf. Hevyd rhaid yw gwybod pa vodd y bo y ddwy vogal yn y silldaf, herwydd i dywediad, ai i gyd, yntau ar wahan; os ar wahan y byddant o herwydd dywediad, silldaf leddf vydd, val y mae Gŵyr, neu Gŵyl; os i gyd vydd y dywediad yn wasgedig val y mae, Gwŷr, neu Gwŷl, silldaf dalgroun vydd; kans yn lle hwnnw y kyll w, i grym ai ssain

achos i bod yn wasgedig ynghessail g, gonglawc ; a llyna y geiriau ar un llythr ynddynt olynol, ac un yn lleddf ar llall yn dalgronn Pan vo dwy vogal i gyd ymhervedd gair ar gyntaf o naddunt yn hir herwydd akenn ; sef yw hynny, dywediad ; y gair hwnnw a elwir bogal ymlaen bogal yn y mydr, val y mae, Gwennlian, neu Kymraec ; talgron vydd y silldaf olaf am vod akenn hir arni. Yr ail modd yw am silldaf leddf pan vo y, yn y ssain tywyll rhwng dwy o'r kydseniaid heb i hysgrivennu, val y mae, mydr, yna y gwasg hi ddwy silldaf dalgrynnion yn un leddf ; a honno a elwir, gadarnleddf. Sef achos y gelwir yn gadarnleddf am vod dwy or kydseniaid ynghyd. Sef achos y gelwir yn lleddf herwydd y llythr tawdd a vydd ynddynt. A phann vo silldaf yn dechreu yn bengamleddf ai diwedd yn gadarnleddf, a dwy vogal i gyd ar naill yn goleddfu at y llall, val y mae, Lloegr, Lleidr ; honno a elwir dipton gadarnleddf. Y trydydd modd yw pann vo, y, neu w, yn ol llythren dawdd, neu vud, a bogal oe blaen val y mae, marw, neu kaly, boly, honno a elwir silldaf dawddleddf. A phan vo dechreu silldaf yn bengamleddf ai diwedd yn dawddleddf, val y mae meirw, Eiry, honno a elwir dipton dawddleddf. Silldafau a dervynant mewn dwy neu dair or bogaliaid, ai dechreu yn bengamleddf ai diwedd yn tervynu ar dipton dalgron, val y mae, Gwaew, hoew, gwyw, y rhai hynny a elwir diptoniaid talgronleddf. Pan vo dwy lythyren vud unrhyw yn ol bogal neu lythyren dawdd, val y mae, bratt, neu tant ; honno a elwir silldaf fud neu o henw arall, silldaf vyddar. A phann vo silldaf ai dechreu yn bengamleddf ai diwedd yn fud, neu yn vyddar, val y mae, braint, honno a elwir dipton vud, neu vyddar. Hefyd pob silldaf ar a dervyno mewn, ll, mud neu vyddar y gelwir. Pann vo silldaf ai dechreu yn ddieithr ai diwedd yn fud, val y mae Iork, honno a elwir dipton ddieithrvud. Pan vo silldaf ai dechreu yn vyddar ai diwedd yn gadarnleddf, val y mae kwlltr, neu Puntr, hynny a elwir silldaf vyddarleddf. Pan vo silldaf ai dechreu yn bengamleddf ai phervedd yn vyddar ai diwedd yn gadarnleddf, val y mae, Pwyntl, neu Pwyts, honno a elwir dipton byddarleddf. Pan vo silldaf yn tervynu mewn pedair kydsain, ac y, a ssain mud arni, y rryngthynt a thywyll ddatkaniad val y mae, Baldr neu kolpra, Ffandrs ; honno a elwir silldaf dalgronleddf, neu o henw arall, silldaf dalgrongadr. Pan vo silldaf ai dechreu yn ddieithr ai diwedd yn gadarnleddf neu yn dromleddf, val y mae, Siaffr, neu Siars, honno a elwir dieithrleddf. Pan vo I, o vlaen dipton dalgron, val y mae, Diawl, ac ymlaen dipton leddf, val y mae, Dioer, yn uu sillaf y bernir hwynt i gyd, a honno a elwir dipton losgyrnioc o achos bod y llosgwrn ymlaen y ddipton. Pan vo, n, neu s, yn ol, r, val y mae, Gwern, Gwers, honno a elwir

silldof dromleddf. A phan vo silldof ai dechreu yn bengamleddf, ai diwedd yn dromleddf, val y mae, Beirn, Keirs ; honno a elwir dipton dromledd. Pan vo th, neu ch, yn ol, r, val y mae, Perth, neu serch, honno a elwir silldof bengrychleddf. A phan vo dwy vogal yn y silldof, val y mae, Seirth, Ceirch, honno a elwir dipton bongrychleddf. Tri Rheolaeth silldof sydd ; ei hyd ei phwys, ai natur. Llyma rheol i adnabod beth vo silldof betrus ai un ai dwy, a pheth vo silldof ai tromm, ai ysgafn ; lliosocker y gair herwydd silltfaeu ; ac val y bo y gair lliosoc, velly y bydd yn yr unig ; ac yn yr odidawc kyn i lliosogi. Oni wys beth yw, kalonn, ai trwm ai ysgafn, lliosoker a dywetter, kalonnau, a chans trwm yw yn y gair wedi lliosoker ; wrth hynny trwm vydd yn y gair kyn i lliosogi ; ac ynywedd honno oni wys beth yw, amkan ; ai trwm ai ysgafn ; lliosoker y gair a dywetter, amkannau ; ac wrth ei vod yn ysgafn yn lliosawc ysgafn vydd yn unig. Hevyd llyma arwydd bod, l, ac m, yn llythr gloyw trwm o herwydd ssain ac akenn ; Edrych beth yw kalonn, ac nid ysgrivennir onid un l, ped ysgrivennid a dwy y hi ai mewn grym, ll, ac velly yr ysgrifennir trwm neu trom ac un m, a rhaid yw ysgrifennu y kydsseiniaid eraill ddwywaith lle bo gair trwm i ssain. Hefyd oni wys beth yw, Bagl, ai un silldof ai dwy, a pha vodd yr ysgrifennir yn y mydr ; lliosoker Bagl, o herwydd silldafau, a dywetter, Baglau, ac am hynny un silldof yw Bagl ; ac yna pan lliosoker y tawdd yr, y rrwng y llythyren vud ar dawdd am i bod a ssain byddar arni, ac am hynny nis ysgrifennir mewn kerddwriaeth yn yr unig mwy nor lliosawc. Am hynny dwy silldof yw, Bygwyl, a thri yw Bygylau : kans silldof rragor a ddyly vod yn y lliosawc rhac yr unig. Yr ail reol i adnabod silldof yw kyvansoddiad y geiriau val y mae, Lleidr, yn rrannedic a Lleidrddyn yn gyvansoddedic. Y drydedd rreol i adnabod silldof yw arddisgyniad ; o bydd y kyssevin yn un silldof yr arddisgyniad a vydd dwy silldof, val y mae, lleidr, yn gyssevin, ac yn arddisgynedic, val y mae, lleidraidd.

Weithion yr hyspyswn pa sawl peth a berthyn ar silldof ; pedwar peth, nid amgen ; Amser, Rhif, Akenn, ac anadl. Dau amser a vydd i silldof hir, val y mae, Tents ; ac i ryw silldof tri amser val y mae, Ffandrs ; ac un amser a vydd i silldof verr, val y mae, tec. Rhif y mewn silldof yw i llythyrennau mal y dywetpwyd uchod, o un i ssaith. Tair akenn y ssydd i silldof, nid amgen, akenn ddyrchavedic, akenn ddisgynnedic, ac akenn amgylchedic. Dau anadl y ssydd i silldof, un krych, val y mae, serch ; ac un llyfn, val y mae tec. Tair rannu silldof y sydd ; llythyren, amser, ac akenn. Tri rryw llythyren y ssydd, Bogal llythyrenn vud, a llythyren dawdd. Tair silldof y ssydd, silldof dalgron, silldof

leddf, a silldaf ddipton. Tri rryw leddf y ssydd; pengamleddf-kadarnleddf, a thawddleddf. Tair silldaf dalgronn y ssydd. Talgron gwta, talgronn wib a dipton dalgronn. Tair Dipton y ssydd, dipton leddf, a dipton dalgronn, a dipton wib. Tair diptong gymysc y ssydd, dipton dalgronleddf, dipton gadarnleddf, a dipton dawddleddf. Tair dipton ryvedd y ssydd, dipton ddieithr, dipton losgyrnioc, a dipton wib. Tair silldaf odidawc y ssydd, silldaf vyddarleddf; silldaf dalgronleddf; a silldaf losgyrnioc. Tair silldaf gadarn ganiad y ssydd; silldaf dromleddf; silldaf vyddarleddf; a silldaf gadarnleddf. Tair silldaf ysgafn ganiad y ssydd; silldaf dalgron; silldaf bengamleddf, a silldaf vud. Tair silldaf ni cheir Proest ai hatebo; dipton dawddleddf; dipton dalgronleddf; a dipton wib.

Llyma ffordd bellach i adnabod silldaf yr honn y ssydd lath vessur i bob prydydd. Weithion o'r silldafau y gwnair y geiriau, kans rrai or geiriau a vessurir o un silldaf, val y mae aur; eraill a vessurir o ddwy, val y mae, arian; o dair val y mae, gwinwyddon; o bedair val y mae, ysbyddadenn; o bump, val y mae, yagyvaruogod; o chwech, val y mae ysgrivennedigaeth; o ssaith, val y mae, ysgrivennedigaethau, echdywynedigrwydd, datcuddiedigaethau, neu kyvarsangedigaethau.

Pa ssawl gwasgawdlythr y ssydd? Naw; nid amgen, b, c, d, k, ll, m, p, t, a phob un or rhain a gollant val gwasgawd, ac a ddaw grym un arall yn i lle ymblethiad yr ymadrodd, val hynn; yn lle b, y daw f, neu m, val yn y gair hwnn, brŷs, yr wyf ar frŷs, m, yn lle b, val yn y gair hwnn, brawd, vy mrawd; yn lle d, y daw dd, neu n, val yn y gair hwnn, dyrchafael, ym ddyrchafael, neu vynyrcsafael, g, a gyll heb ddim yn i lle pan ddel bogal oe blaen, val yn y gair hwn, Gŵr; ar g, val hyn ynkolli o ŵr, yr c, ar k, yr un ydyn, ac yn eu lle y daw g, neu ch; neu ngh; ynghyd a hynny oll yn y gair hwnn, kablu; val hyn, i gablu; a chablu; vynghablu.

Yn lle ll, y daw l; val yn y gair hwnn, llwfr; e vu lwfr. Yn lle m, y daw f, val yn y gair hwnn; merch, wely ferch. Yn lle, p, y daw b, neu rym ff a honno a ysgrivennir a ph; ac weithiau y daw, mh, ynghyd a bogal or blaen yn lle p; val yn y gair hwnn, porphor; val hynn, ai borphor a fforffor neu a phorffor; neu vymhorffor. Yn lle t, y daw d; neu th; neu nh; ynghyd a bogal oe blaen, val yn y gair hwnn, twng; i dyngu; a thyngu; vy nyngu.

Pa ssawl or kydsseiniaid ysydd varchogythr? Tair; nid amgen l, n, r, sef yr achos y gelwir hwynt vely, am eu bod yn vynychn ynechreu geiriau yn dioddef i ŵyth gydssain eraill eu marchogaeth heb un vogal y rhyngthynt, sef yw yr ŵyth hynny; b, d, f, ff, g, k, p, t; val yn y geiriau hyn, Blaidd: Drud: Braise: Fry: Ffrom: Fflwch: Grym: Glew: Gnawd: Kryf: Kledd: Knyw: Prid: Plwm: Troed: Tlŵs.

Passawl kledren dawddleddf yssydd? Chwech, nid amgen, d, dd, l, n, r, s, ar achos y gelwir hwynt velly am vod yn gwneuthur silldafau tawddleddf ar bob un o naddunt, val hyn; kadw gweddw, elw, enw, erw, asw.

Yma weithion yr ysbysswn passawl peth a bair i sillaf golli i chyfiawn akenn; chwe pheth ai pair, nid amgen, y kyssevin yw i chyvansoddi o silldaf arall; ac yna y mae hi yn newidiaw i henw, ac yn myned o ddyrchafedic yn ddisgynnedic ac yn kolli i chyviawn akenn; kans kyviawn akenn pob silldaf, yw akenn ddyrchafedic. Yr ail peth yw pan gyvansodder tair silldaf ynghyd, y gair hwnnw vydd akenn amgylchedic. Y trydydd peth yw kyvansoddi pedair silldaf ynghyd yn un gair, yna nid oes i'r gyntaf or pedair, akenn gyvrivol yn y byd. Y pedwerydd peth yw, arwydd uchenaïd, sef yw honno h, yr honn a bair i air a lliaws o silldafau ynddaw vod ac akenn ddyrchafedig arno megis pann vo yr arwydd uchenaïd rhwng y ddwy silldaf olaf val y mae, kadarnhau. Y pumed peth yw ranniad y gair, megis pann vo gair y bydder yn arver o'i ysgrivenu yn un gair; ai rannu yn yr akenniad neu yn y dywedïad val hyn, Galâth, neu ysbâs. Y chweched peth yw kyvansoddiad silldafau ynghyd yr hwn beth yssydd yn peri i silldaf ac akenn drom arni golli i phwys, val y mae, Gwenn, kans pan gyvansodder hi gyda silldaf, neu silldafau, val pe i dywedid, meinwen; yna y kyll hi i phwys, ac y gellir odli i gyd a hi honn a vynnwr ai silldaf drom, ai silldaf ysgafn.

Yma y tervyna y Llyfr kyntaf or pum Llyfr Kerddwriaeth Kerdd Davod.

Ysgrivenwyd gau R. I. o Scorlegan yn Llangynhafal 1578.

Y pum amser; ar *pum Modd*;

Mynag, Gorchymmyn Dymunwyf, Kusan,
Kysawilt, Anherrywyf,
Kara, Karwn, oerbwn wyf
Kerais, Karaswn, Karwyf.

1 Enw, 2 geni, 3 Rhoddi mewn rhwyf kyhoeddus, } Y chwe Chenedl.
4 Kyhuddo, 5 Galw, 6 Gwrthglwyf.
Yn, yr, dan, ar a garwyf } Pum Gobenydd Berf.
A, wnn, ais, ysiwn, ssais, wyf.

Howel ap Syr Matthew ai cant.

Weithion yr ysbysswn or ail Llyfr Kerddwriaeth kerdd davawd; kans tair rhan Prydyddiaeth yssydd, nid amgen silldaf: gair: ac ymadrodd. Or geiriau y gwneir ymadroddion yn berffaith; yrhai yssydd gyfrinach rhwng Beirdd Ynys Brydain, ac a elwir Dwned Kymraec.

Pa ssawl rhann ymadrodd yssydd? Wyth; nid amgen; Henw,

Rachenw, Berf, Racferf, Kyfranniad, Kyssylltiad, Arddodiad, a Thafodiad. Or rhain, pedair rhan a dreiglir, a phedair ni threiglir. Y pedair a dreiglir, yw Henw, Rachenw, Berf, a Chyfranniad. Y pedair ni threiglir, yw, Racverf, Kyssylltiad, a Thafodiad. Tair rhan a dreiglir ac achos, ac un heb achos, Henw, Racenw, a Chyfranniad a dreiglir ac achos, a Berf unig heb achos.

Beth yw Henw? Rann ar iaith a dreiglir; a welir, neu a glywir, neu a deimlir; neu a ddysko henw ar beth, val y mae Angel, Dyn, Meddwl, Prens: Ar y weler val y mae Dyn, Awyr: ar a glywer, val y mae, Gwynt: ar ni ellir nai glywed nai weled val y mae, Enaid, Angel, Meddwl. Dau henw yssydd; nid amgen, Henw gwann, a Henw Kadarn. Henw kadarn a saif wrtho e hun heb nerth arall val y mae, Gwr: Henw gwan ni saif wrtho e hun heb nerth arall, val y mae Tec, Hagr, Gwynn, Du, Doeth; a hevyd pob Henw gwan a gymer gymheiriaid, ond pedwar, nid amgen Henw digiedic oi vlaenor val y mae, yr hwnn; Henw govynnedic, val y mae, Pwy; Henw rannedic dosbarthedic, val y mae, yr un rai; Henw anhervynnedic, val y mae, Pwy bynnac. A rhain y ssydd a grym Racenwau, ac er hynny Henwau ydynt. A phasawl notbannoc y treiglir Henw? a thri, nid amgen, Hic, Hec, Hoc, yn Lladin; Hwn, Hon, Hyn, ynghymraec; Hwn yw y Masgl, Hon yw y Ffemal, Hyn yw y Neodr. Pa ssawl peth a ddamweinia ar henw? Chwe pheth, nid amgen; Ansawdd, Kymheiriad, Kenedl, Rif, Ffugr, ac Achos. Beth yw Ansawdd ar Henw? Ansawdd yw Gwybodedigaeth i wybod beth yw Henw ai Priodol ai Kyffredin; Henw priodol a vydd ar wr neu ar le: ar ŵr val y mae, Ieuan: ar le, val y mae Iork neu Llundain. Pob enw ar ni boant velly; Kadarn kyffredin ynt, val y mae Gŵr neu Dref neu Dŷ. Deuryw Henw priod yssydd, Henw bedydd a Llysenw: Henw bedydd val y mae Madog; Llysenw val y mae, Madyn; Beth yw Kymheiriad? Teigradd Kymheiriaid yssydd, nid amgen Possiaid, Kymheiriaid, a Superlliaid: Pa ddelw yr adnabyddir, Possiaid? Pob peth a arwyddoka o henw gwann gwastad heb wneuthur na mwyedigaeth, na lleiedigaeth ynddaw e hun, val y mae; Gwynn, Du, Doeth; y kyfryw hyn Possiaid vyddant. Pa ffurf yr adnabyddir Kymheiriaid? Kymheiriaid yw yr Enw gwann a wnel mwyedigaeth neu leiedigaeth ar y Possiaid o un radd val y mae Gwynnach, Duach Coethach, Tegach, Hagrach, Iachach. Pa vodd yr adnabyddir Superlliaid? Superlliaid a vydd pan vo Henw gwan yn arwyddokau ymwyaf oll, neu y lleiaf oll, val y mae Gwynnaf oll, Duaf oll, Doethaf oll, Tekaf oll, Hakraf oll, Iachaf oll. Pum Kenedl yssydd i Henw, nid amgen; Gwrw, Banw, Neodr, Kyffredin, ac Anwybod; Masgl yw y gwrw, ac a dreiglir a Hwnn; val y mae, y Gŵr hwnn;

Ffemal yw y peth Banw, ac a dreiglir a Honn ; val y mae y wraic honn : Neawdr a vydd pan vo henw gwann yn dyvod mewn grym Henw kadarn ; val y mae ; Dâ mawr yssydd i Ieuan ; y Da yssydd Neodr ac a dreiglir a Hynn, Da, Nerth, Kryfdwr, Gwycheder, Haelioni, Dewrder, Llywenydd ; Neodr ynt ai kyfriw, Kyffredin yw pob Henw gwann ac a aller i roi i gyd a phob un o naddynt, val y mae ; Hael ; kans ef a ellir dywedyd Gŵr hael, Gwreic hael. Anwybod yw y peth ni wypo neb beth vydd ai Gwrw ai Banw, val y mae Kolommen, kans pan welo Gwr Golommen anwybod yw iddaw beth vydd ai gwrw ai banw. Passawl Rif yssydd i henw ? Dau ; nid angen, unic a lliosawc ; unic, val y mae, Gwraic ; lliosawc val y mae Gwagedd. Henwau unic kynnulledic yssydd, ac anhawdd yw gwybod beth ynt ai unic ai lliosawc ; eithr val y gweler y lliaws yn dyvod o honynt ; unic, val y mae Coed ; lliosawc val y mae, koedydd. Dwy Ffugr yssydd i henw ; un rannedic, val y mae Gwr ; un gyvansoddedig a gyvansoddir a dau henw kadarn, val y mae Kerddwr, o ddau henw gwann, val y mae dulas ; o henw gwan a henw kadarn val y mae, Gwynlliw. Chwech achos yssydd i Henw, nid angen ; Nominadio, Genedio, Dadio, Achassiaid, Bogiaid, ac Aplliaid. Nominadio a arwyddokaa henwi ac a ddaw o vlaen Berf, ac a arwyddokaa y peth gwneuthuredic, ac o vlaen y peth gwneuthuredic y daw ar beth dioddevedic o vlaen Berf ddiodevedic y daw, ac ateb yr kwestiwn, pwy, val y mae, Mi a garaf, Ti a geri, Siôn a gar ; Mi, Ti, Sion, yw y Nominadio ; karaf neu kerf yw y Berf, Genedio a arwyddoka genedigaeth ac a vydd pan vo dau Henw kadarn yn dyvod ynghyd ac un yn perchennogi ar y llall ; yr un a vo yn perchennogi a vydd genedic val mae, Penn Rhys ; Rhys yw y Genedio. Neu pann vo yn dyvod yn ei Superlliaid radd, val y mae, Y decaf o'r Dynion ; Y Dynion yw y Genedio. Dadio a ddaw mewn ymadrodd pann ddel peth yn rhoddi i beth arall ; y peth y rrhodder y peth iddaw a vydd Dadio val y mae, Moes i mi ; Mi yw y Dadio. Achusiaid achos a arwyddoka kyhuddaw, ac ddaw ar ol Berf bersonnawl yn ddiodevedic ; neu a ddaw ar ol pob Arddodiad ond a arwyddokaa gwrthod, val y mae yr wyf vi yn Ty. Bogiaid a arwyddoka galw, val y mae ; Ieuan dyred yma ; Ieuan ssydd Vogiaid. Aplliaid a ddaw pan ddel un o'r chwech arwydd hynn o vlaen Henw kadarn, nid angen ; Yr, Gyda, Wrth, Drwy, Or, Noc ; Tri or rrhein a wnant wrthodigaeth ; a thri nis gwnant ; y tri ai gwnant yw, Drwy, Or, Noc ; y tri nis gwnant yw, Yn, Gyda, Wrth ; ac yr na wnant wrthodigaeth, arwyddion Aplliaid ynt. Or achos yr arver ydd ys ymhob jaith yn treiglo diwedd geiriau Yngroec ac yn Lladin ; Yngroec, val y mae, Inpente coste, in parussene ; Yn Lladin val y

Domo in Campo ; a rrai yn yr ysgruthr lan a ossoded or Groec y mae yn iaith ni yn kymerud i gwarant, ac nid or Lladin.

Beth yw rhachenw ? Ran ar ieith a dreiglir, a ddoter yn lle priodawl henw un rryw a henw hayach, ac a gymer dau berason. Chwe pheth a ddamweiniant ar Rachenw, nid amgen, Anssawdd, Kenedl, Rif, Ffugr, Person, ac Achos ; dwy Ansawdd yssydd i Rachenw, nid amgen ; un dervynnedic val y mae, Myvi, Tydi, Evo ; ac un annhervynnedic, val y mae ; Mau, Tau, Eiddaw : un dervynnedic a gymer persson, ac un annhervynnedic ni chymer persson. Tair Kenedl y ssydd i Rachenw ; Masgl, val y mae ; hwnn : Ffemal, val y mae, honn, Neawdr, val y mae hynn. Dau Rif yssydd i Rachenw, unic val y mae, hwnn ; lliosawc, val y mae, Rain. Tair persson yssydd i Rachenw ; nid amgen, y Gyssevin a ymadrodda o honi i hun, val y mae, Mi ; yr ail a ymadrodda o honot ti, val y mae Tydi. Y drydydd a ymadrodda o honaw ef, val y mae, Evo. Chwech achos yssydd i Rachenw val i henw ; Dwy Ffugr yssydd i Rachenw ; un rannedic val y mae Mi ; ac un gyvansoddedic, val y mae Myvi. Ugain Rachenw yssydd, nid amgen, Mi, Ti, Ef, Myvi, Tydi, Evo, Hwnn, Hwnnw, Mau, Tau, Eiddaw, Minnau, Tithau, Yntau, Myhun, Tyhun, Ehun, Einym, Einwch, Eiddynt. Or rrai hyn pedwar tadoc yssydd, nid amgen, Mi, Ti, Ef, Hwnn ; ar lleill oll tynnedigion ynt.

Beth yw Berf ? Ran ar iaith a arwyddocao gwneuthur, neu ddiodef, neu vod, Gida Modd ac Amser a Pherason, ac a dreiglir heb achos na nod bannoc. Saith beth a ddamweinia ar Verf nid amgen ; Modd, Konsigassiwn, Kenedl, Rif, Ffugr, Amser, a Pherason. Pa vodd y mae ansodd mewn Berf ; mewn Modd, a Pherason. Chwe Modd Berf yssydd, nid amgen, Mynagedic, Gorchymedic, Damunedic, Galluedic, Kyssylltedic, ac Hannhervynnedic. Mynagedic Fodd a vynac ymadrodd iawn, ac a arwyddokaa govyn neu draethu, val y mae, mi a garaf verch ; a gaf y verch ? Gorchymynedic Fodd a orchymynn, val y mae ; Gwna dy waith. Damunedic vodd a ddymunna, val y mae mynnwn vy mod yn y Nef. Galluedic Fodd a arwyddokaa nerth a gallu, val y mae, mi a alla godi ; mi a alla redec. Kyssylltedic Vodd a vydd pan vo kyssylltiad yn dyvod mewn ymadrodd o vlaen Berf ; ac yn kyssylltu, val y mae, Ti a gei geinioe pan welych vynghar. Annhervynedic vodd a vydd pan vo dwy Verf yn dyvod i gyd, yna y ddiwethaf o naddynt a vydd annhervynedic verf heb na rrif na pherason val y mae, af i garu. Tri konsigassiwn y ssydd mewn Berf, un mewn a ; ail mewn, i ; y trydedd mewn, e. Pum kenedl yssydd i berf, Gwneuthuredic, Dioddefedic, Neawdr, Kyffredin, a Berf Ddiponent ; Gwneuthuredic, yw Berf a vo yn gwneuthur gweithred i beth

dioddefedic, ac a ddichon Berf ddiodefedic ddyvod o honi, val y mae, karaf : Berf ddiodevedic a ddiodef weithred y wneuthredig, val y mae, am kerir : Berf Neawdra vydd o ddau vodd, nid amgen ; un wneuthuredic ac ni oddef ddim val y mae, safaf, Redaf : arall y ssydd wneuthuredic a diodevedic, val y mae : yr wyf lawen, ef a lawenheir, mi amddiriedaf. Berf gyffredin a arwyddokaa gwneuthur a goddef ynddi e hun, val y mae ; kussanaf, evo am kussenir ; beiaf evo am beir, Berf Ddiponent a arwyddoka gwneuthur, neu ddiodef oi natur e hun yn ddiamrafael, val y mae, dywedyd yn drech, neu mi a ddywedaf, neu ddywedyd, Geni neu Hanfodi. Berf wneuthuredic a vyn Nomnadio oe blaen, ac achusiaid ar ei hol, val y mae ; mi a garaf Verch. Berf ddiodefedic a vyn Nomnadio oe blaen, ac Appliaid gyd ac Arddodiad ar i hol, ar Nomnadio yn diodef ar Appliaid yn gwneuthur, val y mae, Mi am dysgir yn Ygolhaic. Berf Neodr a vynn Nomnadio gwneuthur or blaen, ac ni all gael kyhuddedigaeth ar i hol ond un ar beth a vo priodawl iddi i hun val y mae, Mi a gerddaf y ffordd, ac ni ellir dywedyd, mi ath gerddaf di, neu Ti am kerddi i. Dau rif y ssydd i Verf, nid amgen, unic ; val y mae, karaf, lliosawc, val y mae karwn oll. Dwy ffugr yssydd i Verf un yn rannedic, val y mae ; kydgaru ; Pum hamser yssydd i Verf, nid amgen kynhyrhiol, Amherffaith, Perffaith, Mwy no pherffaith, a Ffutr ; Kynnyrhiol yw yr amser y sydd yr awr hon, val y mae, karaf, Amherffaith yw yr amser nid aeth ymddaith yn gwbl, val y mae karwn, karud, karai. Perffaith yw yr amser a aeth ymddaith yn gwbl, val y mae ; kerais, keraist, karodd. Mwy no pherffaith a aeth ymddaith yr ys talm kyn perffaith, val y mae, karasswn, karassud, karassai ef. Ffutr yw yr amser y sydd yn dyvod rrag llaw, val y mae, karwyf. Tair person y sydd i Verf, nid amgen y Cyssevin val y mae, karaf ; yr ail val y mae kerir : ar drydedd, val y mae, kar ef : ac yn lliosawc ; karwnn, kerwn, karant.

Beth yw Kyvraniad ? Rann ar iaith a gymmer rann i gan Henw, a rann i gan Verf ; i gan Henw i kymer Genedl ac achos ; i gan Verf, i kymamer, Amsser a ssynwyr ; i gan bob un o naddunt y cymer Rif a Ffugr. Chwe pheth a ddamweinia ar Gyvranniad, nid amgen, Kenedl, Achos, Amsser, Synnwyr, Rif, a Ffugr. Tair Kenedl y ssydd i Gyfranniad val i henw gwann. Chwech achos y ssydd i Gyvranniad val i Henw. Tri Amsser Kyvranniad ; kynnyrhiol, val y mae, yn hani ; Perffaith, val y mae ; o gani ; a Ffutr, val y mae ; i gani. Tri rryw ssynwyr y ssydd i Gyfranniad val y mae tair kenedl i Verf ; cans i Verf wneuthuredic y daw dau barth, nid amgen, kynnyrhiol a ffutr. O Verf ddiodefedic y daw dau barth, nid amgen, perffaith, val y

Gwedi karu ; kynnyrchiol val y mae, yn karu. O Verf Neawdr y daw dau gyvranniad, val y mae i Henw gwann, nid amgen ; unic a lliosawc. Dwy ffugr y sydd i Gyvranniad, un gyvansoddedic, val y mae, yn kydgaru ; un rannedic, val y mae, yn karu. Pa ffurf yr adnabyddir kyvranniad yr amser kynnyrchiol ; Pan vo, yn ; yn dyvod o vlaen arwydd Berf annherfyndedic ; yr, yn ; ar Verf annhervynedic a vydd un gair, a'r gair hwnnw vydd kyvranniad o amsser kynnyrchiol, val y mae yn karu, yn kanu, yn tyvu. Kyvranniad o amsser perffaith wrth i ssynnwyr ai dervynn yr adnabyddir ; kans megis Henw gwann vydd y dychweliad ; ac o Verf y daw a thervynu a wna yn edic, val y mae, karedic, dysgedic, Cyvranniad o Ffutr gwneuthuredic a adnabyddir pan vo, y ; yn dyvod ar ol Berf afryolus ac o vlaen Berf annherfyndedic : Yr, y ; ar Verf annhervynedic a vydd kyvranniad o amsser Ffutr gwneuthuredic, val y mae ; y garu, y ssaethu, y ganu. Kyvranniad o Ffutr dioddedic a adnabyddir pan vo, ym ; yn ddiodevedic ; yn dyfod yn ol Berf afryolus, ac o vlaen arwydd Berf annhervynedic ; ar Verf afryolus yn arwyddokau gwneuthur yr Kyvranniad diodevedic, yr, ym ; ac arwydd y Verf annhervynedic a vyddant un gair : ar gair vydd Kyvranniad or amsser Ffutr, o Verf ddiodeddic, val y mae, yr wyf i yn karu, ef am gwnaethpwyd ym karu. Gwybydd vod y Kyvranniad y ddiodevedic ac yn amsser Ffutr. Parth ssathredic a ddaw pan ddel, y, neu, O, ac arwydd y Berf a arwyddokao assymudo, val y mae ; kerddaf ; ac o vlaen arwydd Berf annhervynedic yr, y, neu, o, ac arwydd y Verf annhervynedic a vyddant un gair, ar gair hwnnw vydd parth ssathredic, val y mae, Mi âf i garu, Mi ddof o garu. Henwau parthedic a vydd pan vo arwydd Berf annhervynedic yn myned mewn grym Henw ac arwydd Genedic, val y mae, or karu, yr karu ; ac yn Achussiaid ac Apiliaid, val y mae, yn karu.

Beth yw Rhacverf ? Rann ar iaith a ossoter wedi Berf, ac yn gyflawn ssynnwyr y gorphen ymadrodd neu y dechraa. Tri pheth a ddamweinia ar Racverf, nid amgen ; ssynnwyr, Kymheiriad, a Ffugr. Ugain ssynnwyr y ssydd i Racverf ; kans rrai or racverfau a arwyddokaant amsser, val y mae, Heddiw, Doe, Yvory, Trennydd ai kyffelib hwy. Rai a arwyddokaant le, val y mae, Yma, Accw, Uchod, Issod, Yngod, Obry, Pa le. Rai arwyddokaant rif, val y mae Unwaith, Dwywaith, Teirgwaith, ac a vo kyffelib ir rain. Rai o Ordr val y mae Oddiyno, yn ol hunny, yn ddiwaethaf oll. Rai o wadu, val y mae, Nid, Nage, Nid dim. Rai a arwyddokaant ddangos val y mae ; Syllt, Wele. Rai a arwyddokaant gynnihadu, val y mae ; Ie. Rai a arwyddokaant gyuno, val y mae velly. Rai a arwyddokaant urddo, val y mae ; Oddyna. Rai a arwyddokaant

ovyn, val y mae ; Pa achos ? Ai ef ? O bale ? Hyd ymhale ! Pa ham. Rai o gynghori, val, gwnewch rragoch. Rhai o wenjaith, val... Rai o wyrthwynebu, val y mae ; Nac ef. Rhai o anghyvlawnedigaeth, val y mae ; Prin agos, Gan rawyaf, Hayach. Rhai a arwyddokaant gyffelybrwydd, val y mae ; Val, Vegis, Velly. Rai a arwyddokaant Ansawdd neu Vodddion, val y mae ; Yn ddoeth, Yn deg, Yn Wynn, Yn dda, Yn ddrwg. Yn ddsygedic, Yn gryf. Rai a arwyddokaant ddognedd, val y mae ; Yn rrann, Yn vawr, yn Vychan. Rai a arwyddokaant bettrussaw, neu ammasu, val y mae ; Nid hwyrach, Ond odid. Ac Advydd Rai a arwyddokaant wahann, val y mae ; Yn ol, Ymlaen. Rai a arwyddohaant dyngu, val y mae ; Ym Duw, Ym y Groc. Rai a arwyddokaant... val y mae, Yn gynt. Rai a arwyddocant gynnull, val y mae ; ygd. Rai a arwyddokaant rybudd, val y mae ; How, Hai. Rai a arwyddokaant gymell, val y mae ; Ar ffrwst, neu yn vuan, Rai a arwyddokaant oedi, val y mae ; O hyn allan, hyd yn hyn. Rai a arwyddokaant beresonoliaeth, val y mae ; Gyda mi, Gyda thi, Gyd ag ef. Rai a arwyddokant, gymheiriaid neu vaintioli, val y mae ; Yn vwy, Yn llai, Yn vwyaf oll. Tair gradd gymheiriaid yssydd i Bacverf, nid amgen Possiaid, val y mae ; Yn ddrwg, Yn dda ; kymheiriaid, val y mae ; Yn waeth, Yn well ; a Superlliaid, val y mae ; Yn waethaf oll, Yn orau oll. Dwy Ffugr yssydd i ragverf, nid amgen un rannedig, val y mae yn ddoeth ; ac yn gyvansoddedic, val y mae ; yn annoeth.

Beth yw Kyssylltiad ? Rann ar iaith a arwyddocao kyssylltu neu wahanu rrwng rrannau eraill ; Hi a gysyllta leoedd ac a wahana ssynnhwyrâu. Tri pheth a ddamweinia ar gyssylltiad, nid amgen, Gallu, Ffugr, ac Ordr. Pum Gallu ssydd i Gyssylltiad nid amgen ; un yw kyssylltu neu glymu val y mae ; Gwr a Gwreic. Neu Mi a Thi. Neu Ddyn ar Llall. Yr ail yw gwahanu, val y mae ; Mi nid Ti, Mi neu Di neu Arall. Y trydydd a byrth neu a gyvlawna ymadrodd, val y mae ; Nid amgen, neu er hynny, neu sef yw hynny. Y pedwerydd a vydd achossawl, val y mae, O daw ef, minnau a ddeuaf, pan ddel yvo minnau a ddeuaf, Oni ddaw evo ni ddeuaf vinnau, Mi a drawaf y Gwr kans ef am trewys i ; neu val hyn hevyd, Os, O, Onid, Onis, Onith, Ai, Achos, Paham, Ac achos paham, Ond, Na, Nas, Ni, O achos, Rwng, Aphan vo, Am ba beth, Yn enwedic, Hevyd, Ac hevyd, Yntau, Oddieithr, Neu, Oddigerth, Dros ben. Y pumed gallu yssydd ressymawl, val y mae, O daw ef, Paham na ddaw yntau, Paham y llas y gwr, am iddaw i haeddu, neu val hyn yma hevyd ; Oblegid, Ac oblegid yn wir or achos, Paham yn wir or achos, Or plegid, Am hynny. Llyma henwau y pump Gallu yssydd i Gyssylltiad val y dywedpwyd uchod ; kyssylltu, Gwahanu, kyvlawni, Hachossio, a ressym-

oli. Dwy Ffugr yssydd i Gyssylltiad, un rrannedic, val y mae ; am hynn, ac un gyvansoddedic, val y mae ; Am hynny. Tri Ordr neu dri Urddas y ssydd i Gyssylltiad ; y kyntaf yw raggvlaenu geiriau yn i kyssylltu val mae, Ac, Ar, Ath, A ; yr ail yw kanlyn y geiriau y boant yneu rrwymau, val y mae ; Ne, Neu, Y Naill, Am, An. Y trydydd yw rragvlaenu a chanlyn yn gyffredin y geiriau, val y mae ; Or achos, Or plegyd, Or kas, Or herwydd, Or bydd, O bydd, Neu Oni bydd.

Beth yw Arddodiad ? Ran ar iaith yr hwnn a ddodir o vlaen ymadroddion eraill, y naill ai mewn Ffugr rrannedic, val y mae, At y tad ; Yntau mewn ffugr gyfansoddedic ; val y mae ; Annysgedic, neu Angharedic ; ac a gyvlawnho, neu a newidio, neu a ssynnyro, neu a leihao, neu a ssymuto ssynnwyr y rannau eraill. Apossisiawn, yw ffugr rannedic ; Kompossisiawn, yw ffugr gyvansoddedic. Un peth a ddamweinia ar arddodiad, nid amgen ; Achos ; Passawl achos yssydd mewn Arddodiad ? Dau, nid amgen Achussiaid, ac Aplliaid ; Degarhugain a wasanaetha i Achussiaid, nid amgen, Emyl, val, emyl y Tŷ, At, val, At y tad ; Gar bron, val, gar y bron y brenhin ; O vlaen : val o vlaen y march ; Gyvairwyneb, val gyvairwyneb ar Tŷ : Y tu yma, val, y tu yma i'r tŷ : O bobparth, val o bobparth i'r Dref : Garllaw, val garllaw yr Eglwys ; Heb, val ; heb y Kastell ; Ymhlith, val, ymhlith y bobl ; Unwedd, val unwedd ar ty. Allan, val, allan or maes : Yn erbyn, val yn erbyn gelynyon ; Ynghylch, val ynghylch y pasc ; Parth neu neu tu, val ; parth ar dref ; O vewn, val ; O vewn y gaer ; O vewn y mis ; Er, val, er trugaredd Dduw ; Yn ol, val, yn ol yr Wyl ; Yn agos, val ; yn agos i'r nos ; Is, val ; is gil y ddor. Rwnng, val y mae ; rrwng y tai, neu, ryngom.

Dros, val, dros y mor, neu drossom.

Or tu hwnt, val or tu hwnt ir mor.

Uwch benn, val y mae ; uwch benn y tŷ.

Ymlaen, val y mae ; ymlaen yr wyl.

Erbyn, val y mae ; erbyn yr wyl.

Am, val, am y pared a'r verch.

Hyd, val, hyd Duw ssul.

Oddieithr, val, oddieithr y Ddinas.

Oblegyd, val ; oblegyd yr eisteddfod.

Pymtheg a wasanaetha ir Aplliaid, nid amgen nor rrai hyn.

Or blaen, val ; or blaen ir gwr.

Or tu hwnt ; val, or tu hwnt ir march.

Or tu yma, val ; or tu yma ir gwr.

Or tu ol, val ; or tu ol ir march.

Or tu kevn, val ; or tu kevn ir klawdd.

Or tu bronn, val or tu bronn ir march.

Or tu draw, val ; or tu draw i'r avon.

Wrth ymyl y ffordd ; wrth ystlys y gwr.

Wrth, neu oi wrth bob peth a vo a henw kadarn arno neu Rachenw. Om ty i, Drwy yr avon. Pedwar Arddodiad a wasanaetha weithiau i Achussiaid, weithiau eraill i Appliaid, nid amgen, Yn, val y mae, Yn y ty ; Yr, val y mae ; Yr koed. Dan, val y mae ; Dan y ty ; Ar, val y mae ; Ar y vaink. Y lleverydd ar arddodiadau os hwynt hwy a ossodir i hunain heb air achosawl i wasanaethu yn gyssylltedic a hwynt, ni byddant hwy arddodiadau nam yn newidiol vyddant yn Racervau, val y mae, Y neb ni ochelo ymlaen a vydd yn ediveiriol yn ol, neu val hyn ; kanmol yngwydd a goganu yn apssen, annonest yw.

O bydd y gair achosawl yn y lliosawc rif wedy i gyssylltu ar arddodiad hwnn, Hyd, y gair hwnnw a vydd Genedio, val y mae ; Hyd y clustiau ; Hyd y fferau.

Beth yw Tavlodiad ? Rann ar iaith a arwyddokaa Diheurwydd neu addeviad meddwl dan lev gyhuddedic amherffaith. Un peth a ddamweinia ar Davlodiad, nid amgen ; ar ddangos i hun neu ssynwyr. Pedwar rryw arddangos ysydd i Davlodiad kans rrhai or Tavlodiadau a arwyddokaant lawenydd, val y mae, Wi, neu Gwynn vy myd ; Neu chwerthin, val y mae ; Ha, Ha, Ha. Rai a arwyddokaant ddolur neu dristwch neu ovid, val y mae ; Och, neu Gwae vi. Rai a arwyddokaant ofn, val y mae. Attad, Bw. Rai a arwyddokaant ddiystyrwch, val y mae ; Ffei, Wb, Wb, Wft. Rai a arwyddokaant rybudd val y mae ; How. Rai a arwyddokaant ddistawrwydd, val y mae ; Ust. Rai a arwyddokant annoc, val y mae ; Hys ; ac od oes mwy dealler wrth hynny yw kyffelyb.

Pa rannau o'r ymadroddion a ellir eu rroddi vegis Tavlodiad. Henw gwann ei hun, val y mae, Drwc ; a rryw amsser Rachenw, a Henw gwan, val y mae Myvi druan Weithiau eraill, rresswm kyvan, val y mae ; O Arglwydd da, neu Iesu dy Drugaredd.

Llyma ffordd a ddysc dychwelyd neu dreiglau geiriau val y galler gwybod pa Gas, pa berson, pa vodd a *pha* a pha amsser a ddoter yu yr ymadrodd wrth i wneuthur yn ddyledus ac yn gyvian, nid amgen ; no dysgc i dreiglau ymadroddion yn berffaith val y mae hynn yr Verf. Karaf, kery, kerais, karu, or karu, yr karu, at y karu, o garu, I garu, yn karu.

Pum hamsser a ddaw o vynagedig vodd nid amgen ; kynhyrchiol, Amherffaith, Perffaith, Mwy no pherffaith a Ffutr : Kynhyrchiol, val y mae ; karaf, kery, kar ef, ac yn lliosawc, karwn, karwch, karant. Amherffaith amser, karwn, karud, karai : ac yn lliosawc ; kerym, kerych, kerynt. Perffaith amsser, kerais, keraist, karodd ; c yn lliosawc ; karassom, karassoch, karassant. Mwy no pherffaith

amsser ; karasswn, karassud, karassai ac yn lliosawc ; kaessym, kaessych, karassynt. Ffutr amser ; karwyf, kerych, karo ef : ac yn lliosawc ; karom, haroch, karont hwy rrag llaw.

Dau amser a ddaw o Verf Orchymynedic ; Kynhyrchiol ; kar di, kared ef ; ac yn lliosawc, karwnni, kerwch chwi, karont hwy rrac llaw. Ni ellir yn gynhyrchiol yr awrhoen. Ffutr, val y mae ; kar di rrac llaw, kared ef ; ac yn lliosawc : karwn ni, kerwch chwi : karont hwy rrac llaw. Ni ellir gerchymyn namyn mewn dau amsser, ac mewn dwy berisson.

Tri amser a ddaw o ddamunedic vodd. Kynhyrchiol amsser ; Ef a allai y karaf yr awrhonn, Y kery—y kar ef ; ac yn lliosawc, Ef a allai y karwn, y kerwch, y karant hwy. Mwy no pherffaith ; Ef a allai y karasswn, y karassud, y karassai : ac yn lliosawc ; Ef a allai y kaessym, y kaessych, y kaessynt. Ffutr amsser, Ef a allai y karwn rracllaw ; ac yn lliosawc, Ef a allai y kerym, y y kerych, y kerynt hwy rracollaw.

Pum hamsser o Verf gysylltedic nid amgen ; Kynhyrchiol, val y mae ; O charaf, O chery, O char ef ; ac yn lliosawc, O charwn, O charwch, O charant. Perffaith amsser, O cherais, O cheraiso, O charodd ef ; ac yn lliosawc, O charassom, O charassoch, O charassant. Amherffaith amsser, O charwn, O charud, O charai ; ac yn lliosawc, O cherym, O cherych, O cherynt. Mwy no pherffaith amsser ; O charasswn, o charassud, O charasai ; ac yn lliosawc, O chaessym, O chaessych, O chaessynt. Ffutr amsser, O charaf rracllaw, O chery, O char ef ; ac yn lliosawc, O charwn, O cherwch, O charant ; Neu val hyn, Pan garwyf, pann gerych, pann garo ef ; ac yn lliosawc. Pann garom, pan garoch, pann garont hwy.

Annhervynedig vodd ni ellir kael iddaw na Rif na Pherson, ac am hynny y gelwir ef yn annhervynedig vodd, val y mae ; Redec, Saethu, karu, neidiaw, ar kyffelyb,

Weithion y dysgwn ffordd i ddyohwelyd Berf ddiodevedic, yr ail Genedl or Bervau.

Pum amser a ddaw o Vynagedic Vodd.

Mynagedic Vodd, Kynhyrchiol amser. Am kerir, Ath gerir, A gerir : ac yn lliosawc ; An kerir, Ach kerir, Au kerir. Amherffaith amsser, am kerid, ath kerid, Hi kerid ; ac yn lliosawc, An kerid, Ach kerid, Au kerid. Perffaith amsser ; Am karwyd, Ath garwyd, A garwyd. ac yn lliosawc ; An karwyd, Ach karwyd, Au karwyd. Mwy no pherffaith amsser ; Am kaessid, Ath gaessid A gaessid : ac yn lliosawc : An kaessid, Ach kaessid, Au kaessid. Ffutr amser ; Am kerir, Ath gerir, A gerir ; Ac yn lliosawc, An kerir, Ach kerir, Au kerir.

Modd gorchymynnedic o Verf ddiodevedic, ni ellir i gael, eithr drwy ddodi y Verf Neawdr afryolus val y mae, Wyf, Wyt, Yw, yn y modd gorchymynnedic a chyvranniad o Verf ddiodevedic o amsser perffaith ar i hol, val y mae, Bydd garedic, bydded garedic ; Ac yn lliosawc ; Byddwn garedic, Byddwch garedic, Byddont garedic. Ffutr amsser ; Byddyh garedic, Byddo garedic ; ac yn lliosawc ; Byddom garedic, Byddoch garedic, Byddoch garedic. Modd damunedic kynhyrchiol amsser ; Ef a allai ym kerir, yth gerir, I kerir ; ac yn lliosawc ; Ef a allai In kerir, Ich kerir, Iw kerir hwynt. Mwy no pherffaith amsser ; Ef a allai ym karessid, yth karessid, y karessid ; ac yn lliosawc ; Ef a allai Yn karessid, Ych karessid, Yw karessid. Ffutr amsser, Ef a allai, Ym kerir, yth gerir, Y kerir ef ; ac yn lliosawc ; Ef a allai Yn kerir, Ych kerir, Y kerir hwynt. Amherffaith amsser ; Ef a allai ym kerid, yth gerid, y kerid ; ac yn lliosawc ; yn kerid, ych kerid, y kerid. Modd kyssylltedic kynhyrchiol amsser. Om kerir, Oth gerir, O cherir ; ac yn lliosawc, On kerir, Och kerir, Ow kerir. Amherffaith amsser, Om kerid, Oth gerid, O cherid ; ac yn lliosawc, On kerid, Och kerid, O cherid. Perffaith amsser ; Om karwyd, oth garwyd, O charwyd ef ; ac yn lliosawc, On karwyd, Och karwyd, O charwyd hwynt. Mwy no pherffaith amsser ; Om karessid, Oth karessid, O charessid ef ; ac yn lliosawc ; On karessid, Och karessid, O charessid hwynt. Ffutr amsser. Pann ym karer, Pann ith garer, pann i karer ef ; ac yn lliosawc, Pann yn karer, pan ych karer, Pann i karer hwynt.

Modd Annhervynedic a vydd i Verf ddiodevedic val ir wneuthuredig. Dau gyvranniad a ddaw o honni : un yn amsser perffaith, val y mae ; Karedic ; Ffutr amsser val y mae, Ym kara.

Llyma bellach val y dychwelir y Verf Neawdr afryolus y drydedd Genedl or Bervan.

Wyf, wyd, yw ; Bum, buost, bu ; Bod, Or bod, Yr bod, Yn bod ; At y bod, O vod, I vod.

Modd mynagedic kynhyrchiol amsser, Wyf, Wyd, Yw ; ac yn lliosawc, Ym, Ywch, Ynt. Amherffaith amsser, Byddwn, Byddud, Byddai ; ac yn lliosawc ; Byddym, Byddyh, Byddynt. Perffaith amsser ; Bum, Buost, Bu ; ac yn lliosawc ; Buom, Buoch, Buont. Mwy no pherffaith ; Buasswn, Buassud, Buassai ; ac yn lliosawc ; Buessym, Buessych, Buessynt. Ffutr amsser ; Byddaf, Byddy, Bydd ef ; ac yn lliosawc ; Byddwn, Byddwch, Byddant hwy rrac llaw.

Modd gorchymynnedic kynhyrchiol amsser ; Bydd, Bid ; ac yn lliosawc ; Byddwn, Byddwch, Byddont rrac llaw.

Modd damunedic kynhyrchiol amsser, Ef a allai vy mod, Dy vod, Y vod ef ; ac yn lliosawc ; Ef a allai Yn Bod, Ych bod, Y bod

hwynt. Mwy no pherffaith amsser ; Ef a allai Y buasswn, Y buassud, Y buassai ef ; ac yn lliossawc ; Ef a allai Y buessym, Y buessych, Y buessynt. Amherffaith ; Ef a allai y Byddwn, y Byddud, y Bydddai ; ac yn lliossawc, Ef a allai y Byddym, y Byddy, y Byddynt. Ffutr amsser ; Ef a allai y Byddaf rrac llaw, y Byddy, y Bydd ef ; ac yn lliossawc ; Ef a allai y byddwn, Y Byddwch, Y Byddant hwy rracllaw.

Modd kysylltedic kynhyrchiol amsser ; Od wyf, Od wyt, Od yw ; ac yn lliossawc, Od ym, Od Ywch, Od ynt hwy ; Amherffaith amsser ; O Byddwn, O Byddy, O Byddai ; ac yn lliossawc ; O byddym, O byddy, O Byddynt. Perffaith amsser. O Bum, O Buost, O Bu, ac yn lliossawc, O Buom, O Buoch, O Buant. Mwy no pherffaith amsser ; O Buasswn, O Buassud, O Buassai ef ; ac yn lliossawc, O Buassym, O Buassych, O Buessynt hwy. Ffutr amsser ; O Byddaf, O Byddy, O Bydd ef ; ac yn lliossawc O Byddwn, O Byddwch, O Byddant hwy. Neu pann Vwyf, Pann Vych, Pann Vo ; ac yn lliossawc ; Pann Vom, Pan voch, Pann Vont. Modd annhervynnedic, val y mae ; Bod, a hwnnw a ellir i roddi i gyd a phob amsser ; Henwau parthedic a ddont or un Verf, nid amgen ; Or Bod, Ir Bod, At y Bod, Yn Bod. Dan Barth gaib ysydd ; Un or kynhyrchiol, val y mae ; Yn Bod ; Arall or Ffutr val y mae ; I Vod.

Bervau diagynnedic yw y rrai ni aller i dychwelyd mewn kwbl o voddion, ac amsserau, val y mae ; Moes, Moessed, ac yn lliossawc ; Moesswn, Moesswch, Moessant.

BELLACH AM GASTRAWEN.

Ymadrodd neu gastrawennu yw kyvansoddi geiriau i gyd yn weddus.

Ymadrodd a ddechreuir o bedwar modd ; Weithiau y dechreuir drwy Nomnadio a berf berssonawl pann vo ymadrodd yn arwyddokau manegi peth neu wneuthur, val y mae ; Mi a wna dy. Weithiau y dechreuir drwy Verf amherssonawl, pann vo ymadrodd heb na Rif na Pherson, val y mae ; Neur darllen mewn Ysgolau. Weithiau y dechreuir drwy Vogiaid, pan vo ymadrodd yn arwyddokau Galwedigaeth, val y mae ; Simwnt kan gywydd. Weithiau y dechreuir drwy Aplliaid rrydd pann vo ymadrodd rrydd heb verf ynddo, val y mae ; A mi yn kerdded dros y mynydd Hydd a laddpwyd. Pan ddechreuer ymadrodd drwy Nomnadio a Berf bersonawl, y Nomnadio ar verf bersonawl a ddyleant vod yn yr un rif ac yn un bersson, ac or Nomnadio y dyleir dechrau ymadrodd kyd kystrawenner Ynghymraec y verf yn gyntaf, val y mae ; Yr wyfi yn rhoddi ac yn kynhiadu vynhir am tyddynau. Berf wneuthur-

edic yn gyffredin wedi kaffo Nomnadio oe blaen a vyn cael Achussiaid wedy hi, val y mae ; Mi a dreuliais Varian. Berf dioddevedic yn gyffredin a vynn kael Appliaid gydac Arddodiad wedy hi, val y mae ; Mi am keir ath weithred ti, neu o weithred arall. Berf amherssonol herwydd y mae Berf annhervynedic ac a gastrawennir gydac Achussiaid wedy hi, val y mae ; Mi a chwanychwn weled vynghariad. Gwybydd di mae y neb a veddianno ar y llall a vydd Genedio, val y mae ; llyma Lyfr Simwnt. Ar neb y rodder y peth iddaw a vydd Dadio. Ar neb y dyker oi arno a vydd Appliaid, val y mae ; Mi a dynnaf dy gap o i wrthud di. Gair gwann a gair kadarn a ddyleant vod i gyd yn un achos, yn un genedi, ac yn un rif, val y mae ; Hwnn ssydd vab da, Honn ssydd verch dda ; Y rrain a ymgarant. Pob parth rrywiawc, Pob parth sathredic, a phob Henw parthedic a vyddant unrryw achos wedy hwynt ; ac a vynno y Verf y delont y genthi, val y mae ; Mi a garaf vy Meistr ; Yr wyf fi yn darllain Kato ; Mi a gerddaf i ddarllain Kato.

Bellach rraid yw gwybod gwahanu rrwng kystrawennau val y galler dosparthu rryngthynt. Or kystrawennau rrai y ssydd berffaith o ssynnwyr, ac amherffaith o lef, val y mae ; Pobl a redant. Rai yssydd berffaith o ssynnwyr ac o lef i gyd, val y mae Ieuan a red. Rai y ssydd berffaith o lef ac nid perffaith o ssynnwyr, val y mae ; Pobl a red.

Or kystrawennau perffaith o lef ac o ssynnwyr i gyd, Rai yssydd gerddedic, Rai yssydd angkerddedic, Rai yssydd ail gerddedic. A rrai yssydd anweddedic. Kerddedic yw y gystrawen y bo gweithred y verf yn myned o bersson i bersson arall, neu bersson yn dangos dioddefaint i gan bersson arall yn myned ymhersson arall, val y mae ; Mi a ddarllleaf vy ngwers. Neu vy ngwers a ddarlleir om gweithred i.

Angherddedic yw y gystrawen ni bo gweithred y verf yn myned o bersson i bersson arall ; neu ni bo dioddevaint yn myned o bersson i bersson arall, val y mae Vynghydymddaith ssydd deg.

Ail gerddedic yw y gystrawen y bo dau ryw ddichweinidigaeth iddi, val y mae ; Mi a adolygaf y ti val y bych di vy nghydymddaith.

Unweddedic yw y gystrawen y bo yr unrhyw bersson yn gwneuthur ac yn dioddef e hun, val y mae ; Mi am karaf, Ti ath geri, Yntau ai kar e hun.

Y Nomnadio vyth a gystrawennir yn gerddedic i gyd ar Verf berssonawl ; ar kam achosion i gyd ar berfau amherssonawl ; ar achussiaid i gyd a'r berfau annhervynedic ; kam achussiaid hagen i gyd ar berfau perssonawl, ac i gyd ar Nomnadio a gystrawennir yn gerddedic. Kam achos yw pob achos, Eithr Nomnadio a Bogiaid, ar rrai hynny y ssydd iawn achosion.

Weithion rraid yw gwybod gwahanu y berfau, val y galler gossod pob un yn i chyfie. Or berfau rrai ysydd beressonawl, ac eraill amheressonawl.

Pob berf beressonawl a vyn Nomnadio oi blaen, neu beth a osoter yn lle nomnadio, val y mae ; Darllain ysydd dda.

Pob berf amheressonol a vyn kael kam achos kynn no hi, neu beth a osoter yn lle cam achos, val y mae ; Neur darllain, neu I ddarllain.

Or berfau peressonawl rrai ysydd verfau kedyrn, rrai ysydd verfau galwedic, a rrai ysydd verfau gweinion. Tair Berf gadarn ysydd, nid amgen.

Pump berf galwedic ysydd yn Lladin a dwy ynghambaraec nid amgen, Em enwir, Em gowir. Y berfau eraill ysydd rai gweinion, a berfau kedyrn, a berfau galwedic ; a berfau y bo i grym hwyntau arnynt, val y mae ; Af, a berfau a berthynont ar ddissyvedigaethau, val y mae, Savaf, Eisteddaf ; a berfau a berthynant ar weledigaeth, val y mae ; Em gwelir, Em dangossir ; ar berfau hynn a vynnant kael Nomnadio wedi hwynt, megys kyn noc hwynt ; A pha gystrawen bynnac a vo ar y verf yn y blaen, honno a vydd arni yn i hol yn i dychweliad ac yn i thervynniad, ac yn y kyvrannadau, Annhervynadau y berfau hynny a vynnant gael achussiaid gwedy hwynt, o bydd achussiaid kyn noc hwynt, kans unrryw achos ac a vo kynn noc hwynt a vydd wedy hwynt val y mae Trueni i wr vod yn ddrwg. Mi a baraf wr ewyllysiol i vod yn dda, ac amryw gonstrawen a honno a vydd ar y kyvranniadau a ddel i gan y verf honno, val y mae ; Y peth hwnn ysydd o wr ywyllysiol i vod yn dda ; Mi a welaf wr yn bod yn dda.

Berfau galwedic a vynnant henw priod wedy hwynt ; neu alwedigaeth briod : henw priod, val y mae ; Em gelwir Simwnt ; ac os yr ymadrodd a vydd amgen no hynny, kam ymadrodd a vydd ; oni bydd gossod y verf alwedic yn amhriodol, val y mae ; Em gelwi i dy dadoc ; sef yw hynny ; Em kyfrifir i dy dadoc.

O bedwar modd y govynnir am henw priod val y mae hynn ; Pa vodd y gelwir hwnn ? Pa henw y gelwir hwnn ? Pa henw a gavas hwnn ? Pa henw ysydd i hwnn ?

Or berfau gweinion rrai ysydd verfau rryddion, Rai ysydd verfau erchefnedic. Berf rydd yw yr honn y bo digon o ssynwyr ynddi heb edrychedigaeth o gam achos wedy hi, val y mae ; Ef yn rredec, Ef yn rrodio, Ef yn dywedud.

Berfau erchefnedic yw y rrai y bo ynddynt edrychedigaeth ar gam achos o ddi allan gwedy hwynt, vel y mae ; I gweler, I kynnydder.

Or berfau rryddion rrai a gonstrawennir gyda Genedio, Rai gyd a

Dadio. Rai gydao Achussiaid a Rai gyd ac Appliaid. Y berfau hynn, Truanhau, Kosbi, a phob berf ac a berthyno ar ebryvgy neu goffhau a vynnant wedy hwynt achussiaid neu Enedio, val y mae ; **Mi yn ebryvgy ryngwers, neu om gwers.**

Trugarhau a all gael Dadio gwedy hi, val y mae ; Arglwydd trugarha ymi. Y verf honn, A dal, a gyvansoddir gyda Nomnadio, a Genedio wedy hi, val y mae ; Y gwnn hwun a dal dec o ssylltau. Y berfau hynn, parodhau, gorchymynnu, dywedyt ; a vynnant gael Dadio wedy hwynt ; neu achussiaid a berf annhervynedic, val y mae hynn ; Mi a orchymynnaf yti wneuthur hynn ; ac a vunno kael achussiaid neu verf annhervynedic, val y mae ; Mi a ddywedaf y ti. Neu, Na ddywaid y gair hwnnw y my vi. A phob berf a berthyno ar gymwynassau neu anghymwynassau, a vyn kael Dadio wedy hi, val y mae ; Mi a venffykaf y ti.

Bervau a arwyddokaant arglwyddiaeth neu oruwchelder neu ddarostyngedigaeath, neu ufudd-dawd, neu gymheiriaeth, neu gydymddeithas, a vynnant Ddadio wedy hwynt, val y mae ; Mi a ydolygaf y ti, Mi a ddarostyngaf i ti, Mi a gydymddeithiaf y ti, Mi a gymheiriaf y ti.

Berfau a berthynont ar weddio val y mae ; Mi a weddiaf, Mi a ydolygaf ; neu ar gwynaw, neu ar wylaw a vynnant kael Achussiaid wedy hwynt, val y mae ; Yr wyf vi yn dy weddio di, Mi a wylaf ddwfr.

Berfau a vynnant weithiau achussiaid wedy hwynt drwy ffugr val y mae ; Mi a ddoluriaf vy mhen ; Ac weithiau pan arwyddokao amsser, neu le, val y mae ; mi a drigais i gyd a thi dridiau. Ac weithiau pann arwyddokao achos, val y mae ; Mi yn amkanu, rryveloedd.

Or berfau archeffnedic, rrai yssydd verfau achussiaiwl, rrai yssydd verfau gwneuthuredic, rrai yssydd verfau dioddefedic, rrai yssydd verfau Neawdr, y rrai yssydd verfau kyffredin.

Berf achussiaiwl a vynn achussiaid wedy hi, val y mae ; mi ath gerais di. Rai eraill o verfau achussiaiwl ni allant lehau achussiaid wedy hwynt oni bydd berfau annherfynedic yn ol, val y mae ; Mi ath debygaf di i vod yn varchog. Rai eraill or berfau achussiaiwl a vynnant wedy hwynt ddau gam achos ymravael, nid amgen, Achussiaid ac Appliaid, neu Genedio, val y mae ; Mi a brynaf y llyfr o ddwy geinioc, neu ar ddwy geinioc, neu a dwy geinioc.

Y berfau hyn, Roi, Kanniadhau, Prynnu, ai kyffelyb hwyntau a vynnant Achussiaid wedy hwynt, a Dadio, val y mae ; Mi a roaf y ti geiniog, neu ffloring, neu bunt.

Weithion y ssoniwn am obennyddion berfau. Pump gobennydd berf wneuthuredic yssydd, nid amgen, yn, Af, val y mae ; karaf ;

yn Ais, val y mae; Kerais; yn Wnn, val y mae; Karwn: yn As-swn, val y mae Karasswn: yn Wyf, val y mae Karwyf.

Pump gobennydd berf ddiodevedic yssydd, nid amgen; yn Ir, val y mae; Am kerir: yn Id, val y mae Am kerid; yn Wyd, val y mae; Am karwyd: yn Essid val y mae, Am karessid; yn Awdd, val y mae; Am karawdd rrac llaw.

Pa vodd yr adweinir Appliaid?

Appliaid weithiau a ysgyfl y peth ato, val y mae; Yn y ty, Yn y mor, Yn y Dref; Weithiau eraill ai gwrthyd, val y mae; Oi wrth y dref, Oi wrth y mor. Hevyd chwech arwyddedigaeth yssydd i Appliaid, val y dywetpwyd or blaen, nid amgen, Yn, Gyda, Wrth, Or, Drwy, Noc. Yn, Gyda, Wrth, a arwyddokaant ysgyflledigaeth, val y mae; Yn y ty, Gyda'r brenhin, Wrth i vwnwgl y ty; y brenhin ar mwnwgl, Appliaid ynt o nerth yr Arddodiaid hyn; or, drwy, noc, a arwyddkaant wrthodedigaeth, val y mae; Or ty, Drwy y ty, Noc y vo; val dywedyd. Gwell wyf vi noc e vo. Ac velly y llywodraethir yr achossion. Y nomnadio a wna y peth, y Genedio piau, y Dadio y rhoddir y peth iddaw, yr Achussiaid a gyhudda, y Bogiaid a eilw, ar Appliaid a ysgyfl, neu a wrthud.

Pa ssawl kydgordiad y ssydd mewn Ymadrodd?

Pump, nid amgen y kysevin; sef yw hwnnw, y kyntaf a vydd y rrwng y Nomnadio achos ar verf; hwynt a gydgordiant mewn dau beth, nid amgen, mewn Rif a Pherson: Pa vodd vydd hynny? Yr un rrif ar un bersson ac a vo ir Nomnadio or blaen a vydd ir verf ar i ol, val y mae; Mi a garaf, Ti a geri, Ef a gar.

Yr ail kydgordiad a vydd y rrwng yr Henw kadarn ar Henw gwann; hwynt a gydgordiant mewn tri pheth, nid amgen; Rif, Kenedl, ac Achos: Pa ffurf vydd hynny? Yr un rrif, yr un genedl, ar un achos ac a vo ir henw kadarn or blaen a vydd ir henw gwenn ar i ol, val y mae, Ty gwynn, Neuadd wenn.

Y trydydd kydgordiad a vydd y rrwng henw dygiedic oi vlaenor ai vlaenor; hwynt a gydgordiant mewn tri pheth, nid amgen, mewn rrif, kenedl, a phersson. Pa ddelw vydd hynny? Yr un rrif, Yr un genedl, ar un bersson a vydd ir henw dygiedig ar ol i vlaenor ac a vo yw vlaenor, val y mae yr ymadrodd hwnn; Prens a losgwyd heddyw yr hwnn a dorrwyd ddoe; Derwen a losgwyd heddyw yr honn a dorrwyd ddoe. Da a drefnwyd heddyw yr hynn a gad er ys blwyddyn.

Y pedwerydd kydgordiad a vydd y rrwng henw rannedic dosparthedic a Genedio; hwynt a gydgordiant mewn un peth, nid amgen; mewn kenedl. Pa vodd vydd hynny? Yr un genedl ac a vo i'r henw rrannedic dosparthedic o vlaen y Genedio, a vydd ir Genedio ar i ol yntau, val y mae; Ieuan yw un or dynion, ar Genedio a reola'r henw, rrannedic dosparthedic.

Y pumed kydgordiad a vydd y rrwng Superlliaid radd a Genedio ar i ol : hwynt a gydgordiant mewn un peth, nid amgen mewn kenedl unic. Pa vodd vydd hynny ? Yr un genedl ac a vo ir Superlliaid radd or blaen, a vydd i'r Genedio ar i ol, val y mae ; Mair yw y dekaſ or dynion, un genedl yw Mair ar dekaſ ; ar dekaſ a ddyly vod yn un genedl ar dynion, ac oni byddant velly ni byddant yn kydgordio. A hevyd oni byddant o un natur ni chydgordiant, val y mae ; Y gwr gorau or gwyr. Ryw amsser y bydd rreswm yn sevyll yn lle henw kadarn, val y mae ; Yn klowed bod y brenhin yn mynd i Ddofr.

Pan vych gwedy kael yr henw dygiedic oi vlaenor, govyn y kwestiwn, Pwy, ne pa beth : ar gair a atepo ir kwestiwn a vydd y blaenor, val y mae ; Pwy yssydd wr da ? Yr hwn yssydd yn kadw kyngor i henaviaid a chyfraith.

Y blaenor yn gyffredinol ydyw gair ar yssydd yn myned o vlaen y dygiedic ; ar dygiedic yn i goffhau drachefn.

Ryw amsser y dygiedic oi vlaenor y ssydd ar rresswm kyvan yn myned oi vlaen yn lle i vlaenor, ac a ossodir yn y Neawdr genedl or unic rif, val y mae ; Mi a ddaethum mewn amsser kymhessur yr hwnn beth yssydd orau or kwbl. Namyn os yr henw dygiedic oi vlaenor a vwrir at ddaſ glaws, neu vwy yna y rroir y dygiedic oi vlaenor yn rrif lliosawc, val y mae ; Yr wyt ti yn kyngu llawer, ac yn yved yn vnych, yrrain bethau yll dau ynt elynion ir korff.

Pan vo llawer o vlaenoriaid unic a chyssylltiad kyssylltedic y rryngthynt ; hwynt a vynnant henw dygiedic lliosawc gwedy hwynt, val y mae ; Y rreol ar penndevigaeth y rrhain a ovynnaist di.

Henw dygiedic oi vlaenor wedi i ossod y rrwng dau vlaenor, a eill gadw a phob un yn gyffredin, val y mae ; Mae planed yn yr wybr yr hon a elwir Satwrn.

Weithiau yr henw dygiedic oi vlaenor, weithiau yr henw gwann, a etyb ir tadoc, yr hwnn a ddyellir yn y meddiannol rachenw, val y mae ; Yr oedd bawb yn dywedud pob dayoni, ac yn kaumul fy ffortan ; yr hwnn oedd ym vath vab.

Pob amsser ar ni bo Nomnadio y rrwng yr henw dygiedic oi vlaenor, ar verf ; yr henw dygiedic oi vlaenor a vydd Nomnadio ir verf i hunan, val y mae ; happus yw'r gwr, yr hwn a allodd weled y ffynnon o ddayoni, neu val hynn ; Truan yw'r hwnn yssydd yn rryveddu am arian. Megys ac y gall henw dygiedic oi vlaenor vod yn Nomnadio i'r verf, velly y gall ef vod yn henw kadarn ir gwann ar yssydd ynghysswilt ac ef, neu yssydd yn dyfod yn i ol val y mae hynn ; Na chtar gyvoeth yr hwnn y ssydd waethaf peth yn y byd.

Os rhoir Nomnadio y rrwng yr henw dygiedic oi vlaenor ar verf,

y verf neu air arall ar a ossoter yn y rresswm gydar verf a reola yr henw dygiedic oi vlaenor, val y mae; Ir neb yr archassoeh chwimi ddiolch mi a ddiolchais.

Weithiau y dyellir y blaenor wrth y dygiedic oi vlaenor oddiallan, er nad ysgrivenner, neu nas dywetter, val y mae: Y neb a annrhegassoeh a ddiolch ywch.

Weithiau eraill y dyellir y blaenor ar dygiedic oi vlaenor oddiallan wrth y rresswm val y mae; A garo Duw a gosba drwy ddyall, Y neb a garo Duw a gosba; megys y mae dihareb ymysg y Lladinwyr; Y peth yssydd yw ddyall, nid yw ef yn eissiau.

Ryw henw dygiedic oi vlaenor a vydd yn gyffredin wrw a banw, val y mae y gair hwnn; Pwy, val hynn i'r gwrw or unic rif, Molianwn Grist, Pwy on prynodd ni ar brenn kroes; ac val hyn i'r banw or unic rif, Molianwn Vair, pwy a arweddawdd yn i chroth yn prynwr ni. Ac yn gyffredin ir lliossawc rif hevyd yn gystal ac ir unic, val hynn; Molianwn yr Ebstolion pwy a wnaethant pynkiauw y ffydd Gatholic; yn yman honno y mae pwy yn sevyll yn y lle, y neb.

Nid arddangossir ddim or Nomnadio or kynta neu or ail berason, oni bydd o herwydd disgressiwn dosparth, val y mae, chwchwi a wnaethoch; val pei dywedid; Nid neb arall. Neu o achos Emphassis, val y mae chwchwi yw yn amddiffyn ni, chwchwi yw yn tad ni, o gwrthodweh chwini nyini, ef a ddarfu am danom ni.

Yn y berfau yssydd ai dyall yn perthyn yn unic i wyr ef a ddyellir y Nomnadio or drydydd berason yn vynyeh er nad arddangosir ddim o honi, val y mae; Ef a ddywedir, Hwy a ddywedant, Hwy a grant, ar vath hynny.

Nid yw y gair achossawl bob amsser yn Nomnadio ir verf, Eithr rryw amsser y mae y modd annhervynedic yn Nomnadio ir verf, val y mae; Dywedyd kelwydd ni pherthyn i mi.

A rryw amsser y rresswm a vydd yn Nomnadio, val y mae Iachaf peth yn y byd yw kyvodi yn vorau.

A rryw amsser arall rracferf a Genedio ar i hol a vydd yn Nomnadio ir verf, val y mae; Rann or gwyr a las mewn rryfel. Pan vo y verf wedi i rroi y rrwng dau Nomnadio o ymravael rif, ef a all y verf gydgorio a phob un or ddau yn gyffredin drwy i bod or un berason, val y mae; Dim nid oes yn eissiau yma ond pennillion; neu val hynn, ymrossonnau kariadau yssydd adnewyddiad kariad.

Berfau amherasonawl ni allant gael achos oi blaen val y mae, Karu, Redec, Gwneuthur; Neu Raid ynn, Gweddus iddaw ef.

Henwau rannedic dosparthedic a gysylltir ar amsserau i gyd a berf liossawc, val y mae; Rai a aethant drwy ddeall, rraid yw ymi, neu oedd ymi, gweddus y ymi neu oedd.

O bydd mwy o verfau noc un mewn ymadrodd, Y gyntaf o naddunt a vydd y verf dywysogawl oddieithr i un or tri achos hyn, i lluddias. Un yw i bod yn dyvod ar ol henw dygiedig oi vlaenor; val y mae; Yn tad ni yr hwnn wyt yn y Nefoedd, sancteiddier dy henw di; Yna ni chaiff y gyntaf vod yn dywysawc, eithr honn a ddel ar i hol hithau a vydd, val y mae; Santeiddier. Yr ail achos yw o bydd hi berf gyssylltedic vodd ni all hi vod yn dywysogawl, val y mae: Os kaf lyfr mi a ddiolchaf ywch; neu, Pann weloch vynghariad anherchwch hi,

Y trydydd achos yw o bydd hi berf anhervynedic vodd, neu verf amherissonawl, ni all vod yn dywysogawl un amsser; eithr y verf nessaf a ddel ar i hol a vydd tywysogawl, val y mae; Karu Duw ai ofni y ssydd dda.

Kans or geiriau kyvan yrrai yssydd rannau or ymadroddion, y gwneir yr ymadroddion kwbl, wrth hynny rhaid yw gwybod bellach beth yw ymadrodd, a pha ffurf y gwahaner ymadroddion. Ymadrodd yw kynnullidfa llawer o eiriau i gyd.

Deuryw ymadrodd y ssydd, nid amgen; Ymadrodd perffaith, ac ymadrodd amherffaith.

Ymadrodd perffaith a vydd pan vo henw a berf i gyd yn weddus, val y mae; Mi a garaf Dduw.

Ymadrodd amherffaith a vydd pann vo dau henw neu dri yng-hyd heb verf i gyd ac wynt; neu ddwy verf neu dair ynghyd heb henw i gyd ac wynt; henwau heb verf i gyd ac wynt, val y mae; Gwr, Gwraic, Meroh: Berfau heb henw val y mae; Kanu, Karu Dyagu.

Deuryw ymadrodd perffaith yssydd, nid amgen; Ymadrodd perffaith kyviawn; ac ymadrodd perffaith anghyviawn.

Ymadrodd perffaith kyviawn a vydd pann vo henw a berf i gyd yn weddus gyviawn, heb na gwydd ac apssen i gyd ynddaw: nac unic a lliossawc i gyd ynddaw; ac oni bydd velly kam ymadrodd ac amherffaith, ac anghyviawn vydd.

Dau henw unic cystal ynt ac un lliossawc, val y mae; Madoc ac Ienan a garant Wenllian.

Henw unic kynnullidic kystal yw a henw lliossawc. Ac am hynny iawn Gymraec yw dywedyd; Meirw yw y llu oll; neu y bobl a garant Elen. Ac yn unwedd a hynny, henw kynnullidic lliossawc a dal dau henw unic kynnullidic, val

Yma yr yspyswn or trydydd Llyfr Kerddwriaeth Kerdd Davod, nid amgen; Pedwar mesur ar hugain; kans or Ymadroddion perffaith kyviawn y bydd Mydr, neu Brydiad.

Beth yw Mydr neu Brydiad? Kyvanssoddiad Ymadroddion perffeithion kyviawn o eiriau addurn ardderchwch, a dekaer o

eiriau gwann kymeredic, a arwyddokaant Voliant neu Ogan, a hynny ar Gerdd Davod ganmoledic.

Tair Kaink Prydyddiaeth yssydd, nid amgen ; Kywyddau, Ynglynion, ac Odlau.

Tri rryw Gywydd y ssydd ; Kywydd deuair, Kywydd llosgyrniog ; ac Owdl Gywydd.

Deuryw Gywydd deuair yssydd ; Kywydd deuair vyrion, a Chywydd deuair hirion.

Kywydd deuair vyrion a vessurir o wyth Silldaf, pedair ymhob bann ; val y mae hwnn or dull hen.

Eiliw gwenio Tonn am gerric.

ac or dull newydd val hyn ;

Dewr hil vil vur ; Didarf Dudur.

Kywydd deuair hirion a vessurir o bedair silldaf ar ddeg, Saith ymhob darn, val y mae hwn or hen ddull :

March ffyrf archgrwn byrr i vlew,
Llyfn, llygadrwth, pedreindew.

ac or dull newydd,

Y mae y mi am y myd
Wyneb un yn i benyd.

Kywydd llosgyrniog a vessurir o ddau vann, neu o dri, neu o bedwar, o wyth silldaf ymhob bann, ac yn unawdl bob llosgwrn drwy y Kywydd ; ac yn ssaith Silldaf o hyd, a gair kyrc'h rhwug y pennill ar llosgwrn, val y mae hwnn or hen ddull ;

Lluwch Eiry arwydd Mynydd Mynnau,
Lluoedd ath vawl gwawl gwawr Dehau,
Llathrlun goreu oleuddydd.

ac or dull newydd,

Y mae gorhoff Em a garaf,
O gof aelaw ac a volaf,
O choeliaf gael i chalon.

ac val hyn o dri Bann ;

Iawnach heddyw yw nai chuddio
Uwch i chenedl uwchuwch yno,
Ar i golwoc ar ai gwelo
Alo honno eiliw hinonn.

neu val hynn o bedwar Bann ;

Oll awn ir Gaer y llenwir gwin
I Glas hirddol Eglwys Hyrdin
Y Plas ymy val Powls a Sin
Pantri'r Val val Pentre'r velin,
Aur dilin im ywr dolydd.

Awdl gywydd a vessurir o bedair silldaf ar ddeg, saith ymhob bann, a gair kyrch ynechrau yr ail bann yn ateb ir awdl gyntaf; ar awdl ddiwaethaf yn amrafael a honno yn un awdl drwy y kywydd, val y mae hwnn or henn ddull;

O gwrthodi liw ewyn
Was divelyn, gutynnau,
Kael o honod aradr gaeth
Y waethwaeth I anwydau.

ac or dull newydd val hynn;

Un a dal y Nadolic
Obr diddyg i Brydyddion,
Ac a bryn ddec o bae raid
Llongaid val y gollyngon.

Weithion yr ysbysswn or ail gaink, nid amgen; Ynglynon; Deuryw Ynglyn ysydd, nid amgen; Unawdl, a Phrooest. Tri rryw Ynglyn unawdl ysydd; Unawdl union, Unawdl kyrch, ac Unawdl krwcca.

Ynglyn Unawdl union a vessurir o ddec silldaf ar hugain; un ar bymtheg yn y paladr; pedair ar ddec yn y penn; gossodiad y paladr yn y bumed Silldaf; sef yw hwnnw Racwahan; ac o bydd yr awdl gyntaf yn tervynu yn y sseithfed ssilldaf, bid y gair kyrch yn dair ssilldaf: os yn yr wythved y tervyna bid y gair kyrch yn ddwy ssilldaf; os yn y nawfed y tervyna bid y gair kyrch yn un ssilldaf. Ar tervyniad hwnnw a elwir Gwahan, val y mae hwnn yn tervynu yn yr wythved;

Dylynais klwyvais val y klyw—deukant
Y dekaſ o ddyd byw,
Dolur gormodd am doddyw,
Dilyn pryd ewyn prid yw.

Yr ail ddull ar Ynglyn Unawdl uniawn, yw i drawsgynghaneddu heb racwahan ynddaw, val y mae hwn;

Arglwydd Sain Bened a erglyw—weiniald,
Anawdd kael i gyfryw;
Bid menestr bywyd Mynyw,
Beda ddoeth abadoedd yw.

Ac er na bo racwahan, y mae yn rraid iddaw gael gorffwyssva yn y bumed Silldaf.

Ac weithiau y kenir odidowgrwydd ynddaw, ssef yw hynny rroi y gair kyrch i ateb ir bumed ssilldaf, val y mae hwnn;

Dolur* a gevais o dalau—dwyais,
Dial am bechodau,
Dwyran adwyth dyrnodiau,
Dwr y kryd yn *dyrau*† krau. † dirwyn.

* Simwnd Vychan pan vu yn glaf or kryd.

Ynglyn Unawdl kyrch a vessurir o wyth silldaf ar hugain, Saith ymhob un oi bedwar bann ; y paladr val pennill o Gywydd deua-
air hirion ; ar penn val Owdl gywydd, val y mae hwnn ;

Diboen Veroh Koel Godeboc
I Gred y kevaist y Groc ;
Ugain trychant a wrantu
Oedd oed Iessu Dduw dwysoc

Ac weithiau y kenir y messur hwnn yn brooest kyrch, val y
kanodd Tudur Aled yr Ynglyn hwnn.

Nerth yw dy rann wrth dy rymm
Aeth yn dy ras ath waew'n drwmm
Aethoet iownlwyth Ystanlai
Lle nid ai y llew na dimm.

Ynglyn unodl krwka a vydd pann vo y ddau vann hirion yn ol
ar ddau vann vyrrion ymlaen, ac yn wrthwyneb i Unawdl uniawn,
ac yn un messur ac ef, val y mae hwnn ;

Ir gangen wann ar lannerch
A rodde yn arwydd sserch
A chudynnau brwyn, o chaid annerch hardd
I glaervardd eglurverch.

Deuryw Ynglyn Prooest yssydd ; Prooest Kadwynoc a Phrooest
Kyvnewidioc.

Prooest kyvnewidioc a newidia odlau amravael, ac a vessurir o
wyth ssilldaf ar hugain ssaith ymhob un oe bedwar bann, val y
mae hwnn ;

Y gwr y mydd dri ac un ;
Dad, mab, ac ysbryd, a dyn ;
Duw vara gorff dwfr a gwin
Ydyw oll a ddeallwn.

Prooest kadwynoc a vessurir or un hyd, ac a gadwynir, val
hynn ; Y drydedd awdl yn ateb i'r gyntaf ar bedwaredd yn ateb
ir ail, val y mae yr ynglyn hwnn ;

Mae Rys heb gael mwy or hun
Mae'r genedl ai mawr gwynan,
Mae'r beirdd oblegid marw bun
Mewn llewyg am Wenllian.

Beth yw Prooest ? Kyvnewid bogaliaid a chyd ateb kydssein-
iaid, a hynny yn odlau yr Ynglyn, val y mae yn dangos or blaen ;
a phan vo prooest yn tervynu mewn bogaliaid heb gydsseiniaid ar
eu hol, hwnnw a elwir hanner prooest, neu prooest bogaliaid, val
y mae hwnn.

Doeth ith etholess Iessu
Em addwyn yn vam iddo ;
Dovydd o ddiwad Avi,
Rac dial aval Eva.

Yr Ynglynion eraill, nid amgen ; Ynglyn or hen ganiad, Ynglyn garhir, Ynglyn milwr, ac Ynglyn kil dwrn ; over vessurau ynt, ac nid ydynt yn y pedwar messur ar hugain.

Bellach yr ysbyswn o dryddedd gaingc prydyddiaeth, nid amgen ; Odlau ar bymthec messur ; Toddaid, Gwawdodyn byrr, Gwawdodyn hir, Hupunt hir, Hupunt byrr, Kyhydedd hir, Kyhydedd verr, Kyhydedd nawbann, Byrr a thoddaid, Hir a thoddaid, Kyrch a cwwtta, Klogyrnach, Gorchest Beirdd, Kadwyn vyrr, a Thawddgyrch kadwynawc.

Toddaid a vessurir o bedair silldaf ar bymthec, a dwy awdl unrhyw yn y pennill ; a gair toddaid vegis gair kyrch ynglyn unawdl uniawn yn tervynu yn y ddegved ssilldaf ir bann olaf or pennill toddaid, bid yn naw ssilldaf vyth, val y mae hwnn ;

A vynno evo a vydd yn e bro,
Ar hynn a vynno na bo ni bydd.

Gwawdodyn byrr, a vessurir o ddwy ssilldaf ar bymtheg ar hugain, nid amgen ; dau bennill vyrrion o naw ssilldaf ymhob un, ac un hir val toddaid yn ol, val y mae y pennill hwnn

Lle bu'r Gaer vaen llwybr gwyr a vynnai
Lloegr o dir o dir Ffrank yn Ievank a wnai,
Llew blin ym myddin maeddai
Llym varchog enwoc a ddigonai.

Gwawdodyn hir a vessurir o bymtheg ssilldaf a deugain ; pedwar pennill byrrion o naw ssilldaf bob un, a phennill o doddaid yn ol o bedair ssilldaf ar bymthec, val y mae y pennill hwun ;

Rhedaf rrad breisgaf lle rred brwyegion,
Rannai rroid ossai ir rreidussion ;
Reol Rys deol rryw westeion ;
Reidwest rrod llnest radau Leon ;
Ryddglos rradd agos, Ri digon rryddlys
Rys, ryw vaan ysby Rufain oebion.

Hupunt byrr a vessurir o bedair Silldaf ar hugain ; dau bennill o ddeuddec ssilldaf bob un ; a thri phennill byrrion ymhob un o bedair ssilldaf, ar ddau gyntaf yn ateb yw gilydd ; ar trydydd yn arwain yr awdl val y mae y pennill hwun ;

Iawn oi perchu	}	o bob eirchiad
I bawb erchi		
Ar y diben	}	I Sion Abad.
Oes anniben		

Hupunt hir a vessurir o un Silldaf ar bymtheg yn unic, os dau bennill, un ssilldaf ar bymtheg ymhob un ; a phedwar pennill byrrion ymhob un, o bedair ssilldaf ; ar tri cyntaf yn unawdl ; ar pedwerydd yn arwain yr awdl, val y mae hwun ;

Mi a baraf Im gwenn araf Gann a garaf	}	Gan o Gerydd.
Am lyvaesu Fy nivlassu Am lliassu		

Am lyvaesu Fy nivlassu Am lliassu	}	Em llioesydd.

Kyhydedd verr a vessurir o bedwar pennill o wyth Silldaf ym mhob un ; ac yn unawdl bob un, val y mae hwenn,

Yn Ior ydwyt Sion waredawc
A'n cun eurvalch Siancyn arvawc
Wyr Faredudd arf Riwaedawc
Aer arvodau orwyr Vadawc.

Kyhydedd hir a vessurir o ddau bennill o bedair ssilldaf ar bymthec ymhob pennill, a thri phennill byrrion unawdl o bump ssilldaf bob un yn y dechrau, a phennill byrr o bedair ssilldaf i arwain yr awdl val y mae hwenn.

O rroes voes veissydd, Ivor rragor rrydd, Ev a roe Davydd	}	I veirdd ddenwvy.

Oes deiroes dirion A bair Mair yn Ion I buro kanon	}	Aber konwy.

Kyhydedd nawban a vessurir o bedwar pennill o naw Silldaf bob un ; ac yn unawdl oll, val y mae y pennill hwenn ;

Aruthr yw llongaid wrth ddryll angor
O bai yw gweddi heb egwyddor ;
O byddai megis budd ymagor
Y bobl o Wynedd heb i blaenor.

Byrr a thoddaid a vessurir o bedwar pennill byrrion o wyth ssilldaf bob un val Kyhydedd verr, a phaladr ynglyn ar eu hol yn diweddu pob pennill or awdl ; a phaladr ynglyn or blaen yn nechrau'r awdl, val y mae y pennill hwn.

Yno'r awn win llawn Ion llwynau—Hyrddin,
Yw heirddion neuaddau,
I dai'r dalaith Duw ar delwan,
Ac ynn bedwar gwin a lwydau,
I bur llynnoedd o berlannau
Ynn a redant yn wirodau,
Yno gwelir gwir dan gaerau nevawl
Arglwyddawi roi gwleddau.

Hir a thoddaid a vessurir o drugain Silldaf, nid amgen, pedwar pennill byrrion o ddec Silldaf ymhob un, a phennill o Doddmaid yn ol, o ugain Silldaf, ac yn unawdl oll, val y mae hwn.

Gwnn a wna venaid gain enau vwyniant
Gweddio'r Iesu gwiwdduw oreussant

Gar bron y delwau gwawr breiniau dylwant ;
 Gwyddai Dduw deilwng gweddi ddi doliant,
 Gwiwras a gavas gwarant oe gweddi
 Gan Dduw oll iddi gynnydd a llwyddiant.

Kyrch a chwтта a vessurir o un ssilldaf ar bymtheg a deugain,
 nid amgen, chwech o bennaillion byrrion unawdl o ssaith ssilldaf
 ymbob un a phennill yn ol o bedair ssilldaf ardded, val penn
 ynglyn unawdl kyrch, val y mae hwnn.

Lloer ddeddfol llariaidd addved,
 Llawen oedd i llunieiddied
 Llawnglud verw llonn glodvored,
 Llym orchest haul llu merched,
 Llys dirion drem llesteiried,
 Lludd vu varw lleddf vvyried :
 Lllyn son mewn llwyn oe sserch
 Llais vannereh ; lles a vynnied.

Klogyrnach a vessurir o ddeuddec Silldaf ar hugain, nid amgen ;
 dau bennill o wyth ssilldaf bob un yn y dechrau, val hanner Ky-
 hydedd verr a phennill yn ol o un ssilldaf ar bymthec, ac yn
 hwnnw dri phennill byrrion, dau yn unawdl o bump ssilldaf bob
 un, ar trydydd o chwech yn arwain yr awdl, a gair kyrch yn y
 drydedd ssilldaf yn ateb yr ddau bennill vvyrrion, a thair awdl yn
 y pennill oll, val y mae hwnn.

Brwygwr dynion braisgc Ior doniawc
 Bro aer rinwedd breyr enwawc ;
 Brad vugad vwgwl,
 Brawdwr killwr kwl,
 Braich yniwl Brecheiniawc.

Gorchest beirdd a vessurir o un bann o bymtheg Silldaf, ac yn
 hwnnw y bydd dau bennill vvyrrion o bedair ssilldaf bob un yn un-
 awdl ; ar ail ssilldaf or ail pennill yn ateb ir ail or kyntaf, ac yn
 gydssain ac yn groes gynganeddawl bob un ; a phennill o ssaith
 ssilldaf yn ol yn arwain yr awdl ; ar pedwaredd ssilldaf ar ail o
 hwnnw yn kydsseiniaw ar pennaillion byrrion, ac yn ddwbl ryw-
 iawc kroes gynganeddawl, val y mae hwnn ;

I rrwydd air hir
 Yw chwydd, Och wir !
 Y swydd ai sser y syydd ssaith.

ac yn gymar i hwnnw ;

I glai a glyn
 Y rrbai or hun
 Idd ai y ddyn I Dduw 'ddaeth.

Kadwyn vyrn a vessurir o ddeuddec Silldaf ar hugain, nid am-
 gen ; Dau bennill o un ssilldaf ar bymthec bob un, a gair kyrch

ymhob un or rreini yn y ddeuddeuced Silldaf yn ateb ir wythved, ai gynghaneddu yn ddwbl bob pedair ssilldaf a phob wyth ; ac yn y pennill oll y bydd tair awdl heblaw y pedair awdgyrch, nid amgen, yr awdl gyntaf yn tervynu yn yr unved ssilldaf ar bymthec ; yr ail awdl yn yr ugeinved ssilldaf ; ar drydedd awdl yn diweddu y pennill ; a gwybydd vod y pedair gyrch uchod yn unawdl, val y mae hwnn.

Gwennvun gwynvawr gainwyn gynvyl
Gariad gweryl giried gorau,
Gwirvodd gyrvau gorvydd gweurvyl
Goruc eryl gwiw ragorau.

Tawddgyrch kadwynawo a vessurir o bedair Silldaf a thrugain ; ac yn hwnnw y bydd pedwar pennill byrrion o un ssilldaf ar bymthec ymhob un ; ac ymhob un or ddau bennill gyntaf y bydd dau bennill vyrrion o wyth ssilldaf bob un ; ar ssilldaf gyntaf oll yn ateb ir awdl, ar wythved ssilldaf yn ateb ir ddeuddegved, ac yn yr unved ssilldaf ar bymthec, bod yr awdl ar bedwaredd ssilldaf or ail bann yn ateb ir bedwaredd ssilldaf gyntaf ; ar wythved or ail bann yn ateb ir wythved or bann kyntaf, ar deuddegved or ail bann yn ateb ir deuddegved or kyntaf ; ac yn y deuddegved ssilldaf ar hugain, bod yr ail awdl ; Ar hanner arall a geuir val dau bennill yn gyvochr or Hupunt hir ai gyvochri, val y mae y pennill hwnn.

Adkas doddiant oed kystuddiau
Wf a lluddiau yw vy lladdiad,
Y mae koddiant heb ddim cuddiau
Ar y gruddiau or gorweddiad ;
Em mi biau Amlwo iau,
A gweliâu, a goleuad ;
Am eliau oer yw nghriau
Yth rann diau Oth wrandawiad.

Llyma bellach ffordd i wybod ac i adnabod messurau y gerdd, y rrai a dynnwyd or Lladin drwy athrawiaeth Einion offeiriad, a Davydd Ddu Athraw, y rrai a gonffyrmyodd y messurau a dynnasant ac a dynnodd eraill oi blaen. Y rrai hynny a ddechreuodd ar voliant i Dduw er yn amsser Enos ap Seth, ap Adda, y gwr kyntaf a voliannodd Dduw, ac a wnaeth Ddelw, yr honn yn Lladin a elwir Ffugr, sef yr amsser y dechreuwyd ynghylch chwechant o vlynyddoedd o ddechrau Addaf, ac o hynny hyd enedigaeth Crist y kynnhaliodd y proffwydi ef dan i wellau yn proffwydo Iessu. An Iaith ninnau pann gredassann i Grist ai kavas drwy yr Ysbryd Glân, a galw yr Ysbryd Glân a wnaethant yn Awen yr honn a ddiwlanna gan bechodau, ac a amlha gann gyvarwyddydd, a gwybodau, a Santeiddrwydd.

Weithion ysbyswn am Golofnau, ac am eu rrif, nid amgen.

1. Y verr Gyhydedd, ai messur yw pedair Silldaf.
2. Y wenn Gyhydedd, ai messur yw pump Silldaf.
3. Y lās Gyhydedd, ai messur yw chwech Silldaf.
4. Y gaeth Gyhydedd, ai messur yw ssaith Silldaf.
5. Y draws Gyhydedd, ai messur yw wyth Silldaf.
6. Y drwsgl Gyhydedd, ai mesur yw naw Silldaf.
7. Y Gyhydedd hir, ai messur yw deg Silldaf.

Ac or ssaith Golofn hyn y tynnwyd pedwar messur ar hugain kerdd davod, y rhei y mae Beirdd Ynys Prydain yn ymarver oe kanu, ac oe gwneuthur.

Pum messur a vu orau ar odlau, a wnaeth Taliessin ; y rrai elwid gynt, pump kolofn kerdd Daliessin, nid amgen ; Toddaid, Gwawdodyn byrr, Kyhydedd hir, Kyhydedd verr, a Hupunt byrr ; a rrai ai geilw hwynt Pump Kadair Kerdd davod.

Gwedy hynny y dychymygwyd pedwar messur eraill, nid amgen ; Gwawdodyn hir, Kyhydedd nawban, Byrr a thoddaid, a Chlogwrnach, yr hwnn a elwir Dull Kynddelw.

Gwedy hynny y dychymygawdd Davydd Ddu Athraw dri messur eraill, nid amgen ; Kyrch a chwta, Hir a thoddaid, a Thawddgyrch Kadwynoc.

Einion Offeiriad a dychymygawdd yntau, Hupunt hir ; Davydd ap Edmwnt, a dychymygawdd ddau vessur yn lle Ynglyn or hen ganniad, ac Ynglyn milwr ; nid amgen, Gorchest Beirdd, a Chadwyn Vyrr.

Bellach y ssoniwn am gymeriadau y mewn Kerdd Davawd, y rrai a vyddant yn rrwymau y penn kyntaf ir Gerdd val y mae yr awdlau yn rrwymau y penn diwaethaf.

Sef yw kymeriad, dechrau y bannau ar yr un llythyren a chadw hynny ; a hynny a lygrid yn vnych er keissiau ssynwyr yn y Gerdd.

Tri rryw Gymeriad y saydd, nid amgen ; Kymeriad llythyrennol, Kymeriad kynghaneddol, a Chymeriad ssynhwyrol.

Kymeriad llythyrennol a vydd val hynn ;

Kalonn dynnion Dwy Wynedd,
Kredo'r beirdd or kryd ir bedd.

Kymeriad llythyrennol kynghaneddol a vydd pan vo dechrau y bannau yn kyngheddu ai gilydd, val hynn ;

Kanu bum Ymryn Kunalit ;
Kwyno'r wyf akw'n yr allt.

Neu val y mae y pennill hwnn ;

Pum heryr pwy am heyrodd ;
Pum haerwy aur voi pum rrodd.

k

Pob Kymeriad ar a vo yn dechrau ar vogaliaid er na boant o unrryw, a elwir Kymeriad llythyrennol, val y mae hwnn.

Ystiwart Rhos a dart rrydd
Iechyd eryr i'ch deurydd.

Kymeriad ssynnhwyrol a vydd pan vo y bann kyntaf or gerdd yn govynn ssynwyr or ail bann i gordio ac ef; a hwnnw a vydd kymeriad kymeradwy er na bo ef llythyrennawl, val y mae hwnn;

Ni ddug neb yn ddigon abl
Bleth vanaur heb lwyth Venabl.

Kymeriad llythyrennol ssynnhwyrol a vydd val hyn;

Gwaed Ywain guraidd a geidw'n gras
Glynn Dwfr ac o lin Defras.

Kymeriad kyfochredic ssynnhwyrol a vydd pann vo ssain kyfochredic yn dechrau y bann, val hynn;

Lluryo dan blyc dien blaidd,
Suruc a gwregys euraidd.

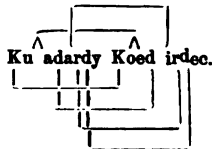
Tri rryw o Gymeriad pennkerddiaidd y ssydd, nid amgen, Kymeriald kynghaneddol, Kymeriad llythyrennol ssynnhwyrol, a chymeriald kyvochredic. Dau ryw Gymeriad Dysgybliaidd yssydd: Kymeriad llythyrennol, a Chymeriad ssynnhwyrol.

Pa ssawl peth a bennkerddeiddia kerdd davawd?

Pump peth, nid amgen; Kymeriad pennkerddiaidd, kroesgynganedd, odl benkerddiaidd, sef odli ar silldaf gadarn ganiad, gyfochr, a ssynwyr naturiol.

Yma yr yssbysswn or pedwerydd Llyfr Kerddwriaeth Kerdd davod, nid amgen noc or kynghaneddion, Y rrai yssydd yn rrwymaw pob messur yn y Gerdd.

Beth yw kynghanedd? Kyd atdeb kydsseiniaid a chyfnewid Bogaliaid, mal y dengys y pennill hwnn yn eglur.



Pa sawl kynghanedd y ssydd? Pump, nid amgen; kynghanedd groes, kynghanedd draws, kynghanedd ssain, kynghanedd lusg, a chynghanedd bengoll. Ac or pump kynghanedd a henwyd uchod, dwy brif gynghanedd y ssydd, nid amgen; kynghanedd groes a chynghanedd ssain neu unawdl; ar tair eraill tynnedigion ynt or ddwy hynny.

Kynghanedd groes yw yr orau or kynghaneddion, ac a genir yn groes union gyflawn val y mae y pennill uchod.

Kynghanedd ssain a gydsseinia yn unawdl, val hyn ;

Llyr i gadw gwyr gydao ef.

Or ddwy gynghanedd hynny y mae y tair kynghanedd eraill yn tyvu.

Kynghanedd draws a dynnir or groes ac a vydd pan vo un neu ychwaner or kydsseiniaid ymhervedd bann neu vraich o gerdd heb ddim yn ateb ydynt a thrawsi drostyn i gyrchu kynghanedd, val y bann hwnn

Kwert hardd mewn kyvair tec.

Kynghanedd draws gyverbyn a vydd pann ranner gair, a chymeryd y rhan olaf o honaw i gynghaneddu, a gadael y rran gyntaf yn llanw yn y kanol, a throwsi drostaw, val hynn.

Eisiau | am gymwyn | aswr.

A phan vo bann neu vraich o Gerdd heb ddim ond un klo kyngan ynddo, ar kenol yn adwy wac val hynn,

Penn | ar yr haelion ai | parch ;

Honno yddys yn arver oe galw kynghanedd draws vantach, o herwydd bod kymaint yn hyll o honaw o ddiffyg kloiau kyngan ; Sef yw klo kyngan, kyd ateb kydsseiniaid a chyfnewid bogeiliaid val y dywedpwyd or blaen ; Ac yn draws vantach gyverbyn, val y bann hwnn ;

Aur sydd vetel ragorawl.

Kynghanedd lusc a dynnir or ssain yn unawdl, ac a vydd pann vo y Silldaf nessaf at y brifodl yn kyd sseiniaiw, neu yn kyd odli ac un or gorffwyssvae or blaen ac oddiyno'n llusgaw at y brif odl mewn aken ddisgynnedic, val hynn ;

Odid ym gael dy haelach,

a honno nid yw weddus na chymwys osid yn y bann kyntaf o bennill mewn kywydd.

Kynghanedd benngoll a dynnir weithiau or groes, ac a vydd pann vo y penn kyntaf or bann yn kynghaneddu ar penn diwaethaf yn kolli, val hynn ;

Arglwydd eurglawr y Dehau.

Neu val hyn hevyd yn ssain bengoll ;

Y dydd tekaf haf hinon.

Ac yn lluso benngoll pan vo un neu ddwy or kydsseiniaid y rrwng y llusgiad ar brif odl, val hynn ;

Marchawc uwch nenn y Penryn :

Ar gynhanedd benngoll a ddeholwyd, ac a gaethiwyd yn yr Eisteddfod ddiwaethaf a vu ar Gynghaneddion a messurau yn amsser yr awdur ariandlyssawc Davydd ap Edmwnnt, eithr mewn paladr Ynglyn unawdl uniawn, ac yn y kyfle hwnnw y mae yn rrydd i chanu.

Ac velly y tervyna y pump kynghanedd hynny.

Gynt ydd oeddid yn arver o gynghanedd braidd gyvwrdd, a honno a vydd pan vo un klo kyngan neu ddau ynghanol braich o Gerdd ar ddeupen yn kolli, val hynn ;

┌───┐
Y gwr hael o hil Rodri

A honno hevyd a ddeholwyd yn yr unrryw amsser neu gynt.

Tri rryw groes gynghanedd y ssydd ; kroes rywiawc, kroes o gysswllt, a chroes ddisgynnedic.

Kroes rywiawc a vydd yr honn a aller i chanu wyneb a gwrthwyneb, ac yn groes gynghaneddi bob ffordd, val y mae y pennill hwnn ;

Ku adardy Koed irdeg ;
Koed irdeg Ku adardy.

Kroes o gysswllt a vydd pan vo yr unrrhyw gydsseiniaid yn diweddu y brif orffwysva ac a vo yn dechrau y braich, neu y bann, val hynn ;

A theg yw'r llwyth Eigr a Llyr ;

a

Kenau Efrog wineufrych.

Kroes ddisgynnedic a vydd pan vo y ssildaf nessaf at y brifodl yn prostio ar brif orffwysva, ac yn disgyn oddiyno i odli ; ac y mae yn rraid ir orffwysva vod yn aken ddyrchafedic, ac ir odl vod yn aken ddisgynnedic, ac am hynny y gelwir hi kynghanedd ddisgynnedic, val hynn ;

Pwy nith gar pennaeth gwrol.

Neu val hynn ar orffwysva yn tervynu mewn dwy gydssain

Bondo gwydr Bendigeldran.

Ac weithiau y bydd yr orffwysva yn tervynu mewn bogal val hynn ;

Un a thri yn ethrywyn.

Neu yn tervynu mewn dwy vogal val hynn ;

Ach gwaed rhyw ywch gadw rheol.

Ac or tri rhyw groes gynghanedd uchod gorau yw y groes rywiawc, o herwydd gallu i throï wyneb a gwrthwyneb, ai hodli ar yr aken a vynner or ddwy. A nessaf ati hithau yw y groes o gysswllt, o herwydd gallu i hodli ar yr aken a vynner or ddwy val y llall. Ac or tair kroes gwaethaf yw y ddisgynedic o achos bod yn gaeth iddi yr aken ddyrchafedic val y dywetpwyd or blaen.

Kynghanedd groes rywiawc a vydd weithiau heb gymwys gymalu wyneb a gwrthwyneb rrac nessed y brif orffwysva at ddechrau y bann, neu y braich, val hynn ;

Mae plaid y mab hael oi win.

A honno a ellir i galw kroes anhydyn.

Tri rhyw groes o gysswllt ysydd ; Kroes gyvan gysswllt, Kroes hanner kysswllt ; a chroes ddwbl kysswllt.

Kroes gyvan gysswllt a genir val y mae y ddsbarth or blaen, val hynn ;

A theg yw'r llwyth Eigr a llyr.

Kroes hanner kysswllt a vydd pan vo un gydssain drom a grym dwy ynddi yn tervynu yn y brif orffwysva, a chydssain o hanner i grym hithau yn nechrau y bann neu y braich, a chymeryd yr hanner olaf o rym y gydssain drom i ateb ir gydssain gyntaf or bann, val hynn ;

Gwinllannau Ffraink yn llawn ffrwyth ;

neu val hynn hevyd ;

Bu wir roi'r hap ar y rryw ;

neu val hynn hevyd eto ;

Due voliant i Gyveiliawc

ac yn groes hanner kysswllt ddisgynnedic ;

Dannaw kant i un kynted.

Kroes ddwbl kysswllt a vydd pann vo dwy gydssain ynghyd yn y brif o orffwysva yn ateb ir ddwy gydssain gyntaf or bann, val hynn ;

Drwy'r gwelydr ai ar goler.

Kroes goll y gyntaf a vydd pann vo n, yn gyntaf kydsain yn y bann, ac heb yr un yn ateb iddi, val hynn ;

Ni phlygwyd Rys a phlyg trin :

A phob un or tair kroes a ddigwydd velly weithiau, ac o bydd hi traws goll y gyntaf, kam vydd.

Tri rryw gynganedd ssain ysydd ; Sain lefn, Sain gadwynoc, a Sain o gysswllt.

Sain lefn a genir val y mae y ddosbarth or blaen, val hyn ;

Llyr i gadw gwyr gydaef.

Sain gadwynoc a vydd pan vo un or geiriau kyntaf or bann yn kyd odli ar trydydd gair, ar ail yn kydateb ar pedwerydd, val hynn ;

Pab Rufain bro eurgain braff.

Sain o gysswllt a vydd pan vo y sseiniad diwaethaf o gysswllt dau air val y mae hwnn ;

Fyngherdd am y ddager dda.

Neu gysswllt wrth y klo kyngan, val hynn ;

Oes bun nac yr un o gred.

Neu val hyn hevyd ;

Ac ergyd hevyd divai.

Tri rryw gynganedd lusc y ssydd ; Llusc lefn, Llusc o gysswllt, a llusc dwbl kysswllt.

Llusc lefn a genir val y dosparthwyd or blaen, val hynn ;

Odid ym gael dy haelaoh.

Llusc o gysswllt a vydd pan gymerer y llythyren gyntaf a vo yn dyvod ar ol y brif orffwyssva gydar orffwyssva ac o gysswllt y ddwy lythyren hynny gwneuthur odl i ateb ir Silldaf nessaf at y brif odl, val hynn.

Nid a dyn gall dan allud.

Llusc ddwbl kysswllt a vydd pan vo dwy gydssain yn yr unrryw vodd yn niwedd yr orffwyssva ac yn nechrau y gair nessaf ati, val hynn ;

Y gwr kadr vraich paladr vriw.

Kynganedd gyvnewid a vydd pan vo bann o gerdd heb gydateb kydsseiniad eithr kyfnewidiadau bogaliaid, val hynn ;

Ieuank a hael yw Ywain.

Kynganedd ewinoc a vydd pan vo, h yn kymhorthwyaw un or tair llythyren hyn, b, d, g, I ateb i un or tair llythyren pika, sef yw y rreini p, t, k, val yn y bannau hynn ;

Kaer gai enwog hir gynnydd
Parohus yw y mab hir chwyrn ;
Tudur Llwyd hyder y llew.

Hevyd pan vo un or ddwy gydssain hynn ; l, r, yn wasgedic
gyd ac un or tair kydsain a henwyd uchod, b, d, g, ac h, ar i hol
val y bannau hynn ;

Kroenwynn val dilwgr hynod.
Tri gwaladr hy o Gwlen.
Bwrw plyc ar barabl hygar.

Ar vath hynny a elwir kynghanedd ewinoc. Hevyd pann vo
un or tair kydsain hynn b, d, g, yn diweddu y naill air, ar un-
rrhyw gydssain yn dechrau y gair nessaf at hynny ymhlethiad
kynghanedd, yna y gallant oe hydrym yll dwy ateb i un or tair
llythyren pika p, t, k, val yn y bannau hynn.

Pisagl wyd ar bob bonedd,
Trysor gwlad di rus Ior glew.
Af ar kan i vrig Gwynedd.

Hevyd ef a all un or tair kydsain uchod b, d, g, i hun ateb i un
or tair llythyren pika pan vo hi yn niwedd gair ac un or llythyr-
ennau hynn ff, k, ll, p, ss, t yn nechrau y gair nessaf ymhlethiad
kynghanedd, kans egni a grym un or rhain ai kyffry hithau yngrym
llythyren pika, ac yna y gall ateb llythyren bika or un natur a hi
yn dyvod ar ol hynny, val yn y bann hwnn.

Brig flydd a bair koffa hwnn
Y mab koch mwy hap y kaid,
Aed llawer at y lluoedd.
Brig prenn o bark y prynwr
Heb swydd mor happus a hwnn.
Ymhob tir mae hap yt oll.

Dyaller eraill or vath wrthynt hwy. Hevyd tri gallu yssydd i
silldaf gadarnleddf wrth gynghaneddu, un yw kytateb ai ryw i hun
mewn kynghanedd ddisgynedic, val hyn ;

Llys gadr lliwus y gwyrwyd.

Ail yw kydateb a Silldaf dalgron val yn y pennill hwnn ;

Brain Syr Rys bro ainesio ruthr.

Y trydydd yw kydateb a dwy Silldaf dalgron val hynn ;

Ao Iaith hagr gwaethygu.

Hevyd pann vo y deuddec cydsain hynn, ff, f, k, g, p, b, t, d, ll,
l, th, dd ; yn dyvod ynghyd bob yn ddwy yn y modd hwnn ym-
hlethiad kynghanedd.; yna y kyll y rrai ysgafu hynn eu grym ai
nerth, kans y llail ai gorchvyga hwy val yn y pennillion hynn ;

Praff fonedd pur a ffynnant.
Brig kenedl broau Kynan.
O hap breuder pur ydwyt.
O waed Tudur at Edwin.
Velly mal y wraig Voel llwyd.
Wrth ddyvod or eithavoedd.

Hevyd ef a ganodd D^{dd} ap Edmwnnt val hynn ;

Gair oth vronn gwawr ddyffrynnoedd ;

A Gruffydd Hiraethog, val hynn ;

Oth actiau'r praff ddoctor Prys.

Tri pheth a berthyn ar gynghanedd groes ; Kydateb, Kyfnewid a Gorffwyssva.

Pedair gorffwyssva yssydd mewn pennill o gywydd, un yn y kynghaneddion, un yn yr amseroedd, un yn y perssoniaid, ac un yn yr awdl.

Pump gorffwyssva yssydd yn y kynghaneddion, kans ymhob un or gyntaf hyd y chweched y gellir gorffywys.

Dwy orffwyssva a vydd yn yr amseroedd, a dwy yn y perssoniaid a ddengys eu ssynhwyrau ai rrannedigaethau.

Bellach yssbysswn am gynghaneddion kymysgedic o ddwy neu dair ynghyd mewn un bann.

Kynghanedd sseingroes rywiawc a vydd gwedy y chymysgu o ssain a chroes bob un yn i gilydd, val hynn ;

Llaw a barr draw lle bo'r drin.

Kynghanedd sseingroes o gysswllt.

Gwressog yw'r kog ar ssiwgr kann.
Ath wayw nowllath a nillud.

Kynghanedd sseingroes gydgysswllt a vydd pan vo kysswllt y sain, a kysswllt y groes ynghyd, val hynn ;

O droi y rrod i ryw Rys.
I Gelli Wig ac yw llys.

Kynghanedd groes ssaingysswllt golli y gyntaf a genir, val hynn ;

Ni thyf rrwdd ith vyw ar honn.

Kynghanedd sseingroes gadwynoc rywioc a genir, val hynn,

Trist vydd llif tros Davydd Llwyd.
Lle arch o hyd Llywarch hen.

Kynghanedd sseingroes o gysswllt gadwynoc ddisgynnedic a genir, val hynn ;

Nim gyrr bun im gwir boeni

Kynghanedd drawsgroes o gysswllt gadwynoc ddisgynnedic, val hynn ;

Uchel vaich Hywel Vychan.

Kynghanedd groes rywiog goll y gyntaf a vydd val hynn,
Ond treulio da trwy lid oll.

Kynghanedd groes o gysswllt goll y gyntaf a vydd val hynn ;
Ni thynnir bath hwnn or byd.

Kynghanedd groes goll y gyntaf ddisgynnedic ;
Nid yw hawdd i dyhuddaw.

Kynghanedd sseindraws ddisgynnedic,
Vynawc rriain Vain Vuned.

Kynghanedd sseindraws gadwynoc ddisgynnedic,
Od aeth gair rrod ath geraint.

Kynghanedd groeslusc ddisgynnedic a vydd val hynn ;
Nid oes dyn un destunion.

Kynghanedd drawslusc ddisgynnedic ;
Nan hol dirgel nan helynt,
Y gwr ar warr y garrec.

Kynghanedd sseingroes gadwyn gysswllt a genir val hynn ;
Pwy a wnai gost pennaic Ial.

Kynghanedd groes ddisgynnedic gysswllt orffwysva a genir val hynn ;
A maen perl mewn parlmant.

Tri lle y kyll w, i grym bogal ac ni ellir bod hebddi yno er hynny, un yw ynghessail g, gonglawc, val hynn ; Gwych, Gwedd ; Yr ail yw ynghessail ch, val hyn, Chwyl, Chwech, ar trydydd yw, ar ol llythyren dawdd, val hyn ; Marw, Erw, Galw, Elw.

Nith gar eithr ryw ddifeithwraic.

Paham os yw yr w, yn colli i grym bogal akw nad yw y pennill yn i le neu yn iawn ? Am i vod yn anhardd yn y glust, er bod y rreolaeth yn i gadw ef, kans ni wnaed kerdd ond er melysder ir glust, ac or glust ir galon ; ac velly yn gyffelyb y pennill hwnn.

Naw oi genedi yn Gwynedd.
Neu val hynn :
Ac i ostwng o ystyr.

Ac weithiau eraill y bydd yn velys yn glust, ac yn torri rreolaeth, val hynn ;
Kawn vedd rrad hynneddvau Rhys.

a rheitiach yw gochel hwnnw nor llall.

Ac yn ddiwaethaf or pump llyfr kerddwriaeth kerdd davod, yr hwnn a elwir prydlyfr yr yssbysswn bellach, ac yn gyntaf or beiau gocheladwy yrrai a elwir y beiau kyffredin ai perthynassau, neu i keinkiau ; ac ir holl veiau hynnynid oes oni ddau wreiddyn, neu ddau ychwynniad, Sef yw y ddau hynny ; rrw y ac eissiau, neu gormodd a rry vychan ; ar beiau hynn a berthynant at y Prydlyfr ; kans ni ddichon prydydd vod yn Benkerdd neu yn Athraw i iawn ganu, ac i iawn varnu, nes gwybod y beiau kyffredin ai dosbarth.

Henwau y beiau kyffredin yw y rrain. Gormodd odlau. Dybryd Sain yr hwn yssydd yn brooest ir awdl. Tin Ap. Karr y mor-ddiwes. Rhy debyg, ymssathr odlau. Tri thwyll yssydd ; Twyll gynghanedd. Twyll awdl. A thwyll gymeriad. Dryc ddychymyc. Dryc ssynwyr. Dryc ystyr. Unic a lliosawc i gyd. Gwrw a Banw i gyd. Gwydd ac apsen i gyd. Lleddf a thalgronn i gyd. Trwm ac ysgafn i gyd. Kyrch a llefn i gyd. Kam Amsser. Kam bersodion. Kam achos. Kam ossodiad. Yrrain yw anafau kerdd davod ac iawn yw eu gochel ; kans tri pheth a ddyly prydydd ; iawn ddysgu, iawn ganu, ac iawn varnu.

1. Gormodd odlau a vydd pan vo dwy awdl mewn un bann o bennill o gywydd lle ni ddylai vod onid dwy i gyd yn y pennill kyvan, val y mae hwnn.

Ai gad wyth oes gydai thad.

Neu hevyd pa vessur bynnac or messurau y bo yntau vwy o odlau noc y mae y ddosbarth yn i gynnwys hynny yssydd ormodd.

2. Dybryd ssain a vydd mewn kynghanedd ssain pann vo y sseiniaid yr odliad diwaethaf or gynghanedd, yn prostiaw ar brif-awdl val y bo dybryd i glywed val hynn ;

Yn arglwydd arwydd iraidd.
Kado i daradr drwy derydr.
Pe kedwid am dir gwir gwyr.

3. Prost ir awdl yssydd yr un rrywogaeth a dybryd ssain, ond i vod ef yn y gynghanedd groes neu yn draws, ac a vydd pan vo prif orffwyssva y gynghanedd ar brif awdl yn prostio ynghyd, val hynn.

Y dewr gwrol drwy gweryl
Y dyn ve ffaelodd dy don.

4. Tin Ap a vydd pann vo pennill o Gywydd deuair hirion neu ddeusair yrrion, ar ddwy awdl yn yr un aken, a honno yn ddyrchavedic val hynn ;

Y gwr a luniodd y gad
A wnaeth iw vro annoeth vrad.
Gwrab oedd yn gyrru bw
Gwreigan gul greg yn galw.

Eithr y mae yn y pennill hwnn ddau vai eraill, nid amgen, Torr mesur a Thwyll odl.

5. Karn ymorddiwes yr hwnn a elwid gynt garllaes, yssydd debyg i Din Ap ; eithr bod y ddwy awdl ar aken ddisgynnedic val y mae hwnn ;

Dwrn a chledd duedd dieingl
Drws a deugwrr dros Degeingl

6. Rhy debyg a vydd pann vo yr orffwysva gynhaneddawl ar awdl mewn aken ddisgynnedic, ac yn debyg bob un iw gilydd ; o achos ni bydd onid un gydssain neu ddwy yn i diweddiad yn i llestair i gydodli yn ddwbl, val hynn ;

Ievan vynghariad Ievank.
Llawer diwrnod llawen.
Rhydec vu yr anrhydedd.

Ac o bydd y vath beth yn yr aken ddyrohafedic ni ellir dim oi alw yn rrydebyg, namyn tebyg, ac nid yw vai, val y kanodd Davydd ap Edmwnt i verch herwydd i gwallt

Y mae a pheth am i phenn
Yr haf val y Rhiw Velen.

Ac weithiau hevyd y bydd Rydebyg o rann y Reasswm neu y Synnwyr pann vo gair a dau ddyall ynddaw, un at y moliant ac un at y gogan ; kans mynych y kymerir y gerdd i'r deall gwaethaf, ac y dywedir mai rrydebyg ir gogan, val hynn ;

Oer oer i holl Gymru rrawc.
Oedd orchudd gwr ardderchawc.

Er bod ardderchawc yn arwyddokau arbennic neu urddassol ; eto os kenid ef i wr a vai yn dyvod o ordderchiad, ef ai tybid yn edliw, ac yn rrydebyg i hynny.

7. Ymssathr odlau a vydd pann vo yr orffwysva gynhaneddol neu rann or ssilldaf honno yn ymsathr ar awdl, val hynn ;

Y gwr o Gaerlleon Gawr.

kans balch yw'r awdl, ac y hi yw llygad y Gerdd, ac am hynny ni oddef hi ddim yw briwo.

Y mab rry hydr ymhob brwydr.

Ac weithiau y bydd ymssathr odlau mewn kynghanedd lusc' neu unawdl pann ddyker llythyren neu ddwy or awdl i helpio y gynghanedd val hynn ;

A chrwk ar i vrest a llestr.

kans ni ddichon yr un llythyren neu yr un llythyrennau wneuthur

dau wasanaeth ar unwaith, kynghanneddu ac odli hefyd. Ac weithiau eraill y bydd ymsathr odlau pan ssathr dau bennill neu dri mewn kywydd wrth i gilydd yn unawdl.

8. Twyll gynghanedd a vydd pann vo kydsain neu ddwy yn y naill rann or klo kyngan, neu or kloiau kyngan heb ai hatepo yn y rrann arall val y mae hynn ;

Meirch unlliw mae Machynllaith.

ac mewn kynghanedd ssain val hynn ;

Kawgiau a chreithiau'r vrech wenn.

neu val hynn yn vwy anafus ;

Parabl dyn trwyadl om tref.

Neu mewn kynghanedd lusc, gadael llythyren yn y naill air heb i gynghaneddu yn y gair arall, val hynn ;

Mae yr ystolff val golchffon.

Ar bai hwn a gyffelybir i adael un gledren or blaid heb eiliaw. Hevyd pan vo kynghanedd bengoll ; honno a vydd pann vo dechrau braich neu bann o bennill yn kynghaneddu ar diwedd heb vod, val hynn ;

Arglwydd eurglawr y Dehau.

Sef y tybygir hwnnw i gleddyf ai vlaen drwy y wain. Ac os ar y penn kyntaf y bydd eissiau, tebyg yw i gleddau heb pwmel.

9. Twyll awdl a vydd pan vo ymrafaelion gydsseiniaid, neu vogaliaid yn yr odlau, val hynn ;

Llynn o ddwr am lleinw o ddi
Llonaid tagell Llynn Tegid.

Neu val y pennill hwnn ;

Y llwdn gwaraidd llydan gwrw
Llwydvawr ysydd yn liedvarw

Neu val hyn hevyd ;

Dialedd ac nid yw elw
Drwy wall i un dorri llw.
Raid i arglwydd drwy erglyw
Roi i stad dan restiad Duw.

10. Twyll gymeriad a vydd pann vo ymrafael gydsseiniaid yn y kymeriadau heb ssynwyr naturiol yn i achub, val hynn ;

Karw penn au gwyr piau ni
Paladr o Fran ap Beli.

Ac nid yw dwyll gymeriad dechrau pennillion ar ymrafaelion

vogaliaid, kans kyvnewid trwy vogal yw kynghanedd gyfnewid, ac velly y gellir alw yn gymeriad kynghaneddol val hynn ;

Y ddyd vwyn a ddaw'n vynych
Im meddwi gorff moddawl gwych.

11. Dryc ddychymyc a vydd pann ddychymyger ar voliant reswm gwann diffwrwyth, Ie ac a ellir i ddyall yn hawdd, at vwy gogan no moliant, val hynn ;

O daw eisiau da ar den
Un llenad ath wna'n llawen.

Er bod dychymyc y Brydydd mae y wraic, e ddychymygai eraill mae y llenad olau i yrru gwarthec.

Bei yw o herwydd Dilechdid neu Logic.

12. Dryc ssynnwyr a vydd pann vo kerdd vessuredic gynhaneddol heb ssynnwyr ddosparthedic ddyallus ynndi, neu heb verf ber-ssonawl i ddangos y ssynnwyr, val hynn ;

Llun egoriad Llonguric
Ai vlaen ar Velin y Wic.
Dau wy a chellog mwyalch
Eidion, ac wy, odyu galch.

Bai o herwydd Dilechdid.

13. Dryc ystyr a vydd pan gyffelyber o'i wrth i destyn oi nattur, val hyn ;

Katrin vodd katerwen vain.

Bai mewn Retoreg.

14. Unic a lliossawc a vydd pan vo henw lliossawc a berf unic i gyd, val hynn ;

Miloedd ni char ond Maelawr.

Neu pann vo henw unic a berf liossawc i gyd val hynn ;

* * *

Ac hevyd pan vo henw kadarn lliossawc a henw gwann unic i gyd val hynn ;

Y gwyr dewr or gard euraid.

A mynych y kymhwysir keinkiau or bai hwinn mewn kyfleydd drwy esgus ; sef yw hwinnw, bod yn dekach y kam nor iawn, achos i vod yn y rresswm yn dalvyrrach, ac yn ddiwytnach

Bai yw hwn o herwydd rhan o ramadeg a elwir Castrawen, ac nid herwydd cywyddiaeth, ac velly y mae y ddau nesaf hefyd.

15. Gwrw a Banw ynghyd a vydd pann vo henw kadarn or genedl wrw, a henw gwann or genedl vanw i gyd, val y pennillion hynn ;

Gwr ffol nid gorhoff weled.
Y hi yw'r ffwl ar y ffair.
Vry nid hardd i vorwyn tec.
A vynn destyn vun distaw.

16. Gwydd ac apssen a vydd pan rodder y drydedd berisson i gyd ar ail ; neu yr ail i gyd ar gyntaf, val hynn ;

Mi evo Sion am vy ssir
Yw'r dynion ni rydweinir.

Ac o dechrau prydydd ymadroddi i gerdd megis yngwydd y gwr ; ni ddylai mwy i throi yn apssen, rrag y bai hwinn.

17. Lleddf a Thalgronn a vydd pan vo ssilldaf leddf yn ateb i ssilldaf dalgronn, neu i ddiethr ; weithian mewn kynghanedd lusc, val hyn ;

Yn Ial gwnal Ruffydd Maelwr.

neu val y pennill hwinn ;

Raid rifo'r gwyr yn llwyrach.

neu val hyn, yn y gynghanedd ssain ;

Vy sswydd o vewn manwydd Mai.

ac weithiau y bydd yn y brifawdl, val hynn hevyd ;

Ni thrinwyd llew aelwyd Llyr
Natur Sion ond trwy ssynwyr.

weithiau eraill y bydd mewn ynglyn prost yn y prostiad, val hynn ;

Y gwr balch ssy'n digio'r byd,
Ac er i vudd y gwyr i vod,
Yn wir gostyngir i stad
Anhoff i wedd oni phaid

neu val hynn, mewn diptoniaid ;

Y llew gwych wrth ennill gair
Weithion i gyd aeth yn gawr ;
A nos, a dydd yn was dewr
Yn lladd amkanai yn llwyr.

18. Trwm ac ysgafn a vydd pan vo gair trwm a gair ysgafn i gyd a hynny yn yr un aken, a honno yn ddyrchafedic, val hynn, mewn kynghanedd lusc ;

I wlad Von nid eiff honno.

Ymhob gair a lliaws o ssilldafau ynddaw y silldaf diwaethaf ond un a vydd ac aken ddyrchafedic iddi oddi eithr i arwydd uchenaidd neu ranniad yr aken beri iddi i cholli, val y mae yn nechrau y llyfr yn sson, Trwm ac ysgafn mewn kynghanedd ssain ;

Ar dorr merch y kor y kaid. [Sef yw honno yr Allor.]

Hevyd rraid yw gochel y bai hwinn mewn ynglyn unawdl, ac mewn ynglyn prost, ac mewn messurau odlau ; kans pann dde] pennill yn gyntaf i odli mewn aken ddyrchafedic kynlyner pwys honno drwy'r awdl i gyd, pa un bynnac vo ai trom ai ysgafn, ar a ddigwydd or pennillion ar yr aken honno.

19. Kyrch a llyfn yssydd vai anafus mewn kerdd yr hwnn yw kamosodiad bogaliaid a hynny ymerthynassoldab y brifawdl ar orffwyssva gynghaneddol, pa un bynnac vo yr orffwyssva ai aken ddyrchavedic yntau aken ddisgynedic ; kans yn yr akennion hynn y dily bod kyd ateb a chyfnewid yn rrywiawc, val y pennill hwnn ;

Ku adardy
koed irdeg.

Ac yn gyrch a llyfn, val hynn ;

Am Roland Abermarlais
O vraster ev a rwystrodd.

Ac val hynn, mewn aken ddyrchavedic.

Huw Konwy fry hy kawn varn.

Ac mewn aken ddisgynnedic, val hynn ;

Yn y dwrn yn dirynnu,
I Deirnon y dirynnaf.

Neu,

Parabl Syr William Robert.

A phan vo allan o berthynassoldab yr awdl nid yw vai, ac am hynny y gelwir ef bai gwahanredawl, neu gwahanedic, val hynn ;

Byw ar dri broder o Ial.

Ef a vydd weithiau gwrthssen allan o berthynas yr awdl, val yn y bann olaf or penill hwnn ;

Pwy oll a ddug pell ydd aeth
Warthoff aur wrth vilwriaeth.

20. Kam amsser a vydd pann rodder yr amsser dyvodioe neu ffutr yn lle yr amsser kydrychiol, val hyun ;

Pan dynner penyd anian
Mae'n growndwal mae'r wal yn wann.

Neu val hyn ;

Y mae Neithiwr y vory
A mwnai'n vraise mewn mann vry.

21. Kam berason a vydd pan rodder y naill veddiant yn lle y llall, val hyn ;

Tir kaeth vydd y Twrk ith vab.

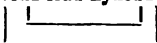
22. Kam achos a vydd pann roer achos amherthynassol yn yr ymadrodd, val dechrau ymadrodd drwy Verf amherssonawl, val hynn ;

Neur mynnu un or manwydd.

23. Kamossodiad a vydd mewn kynghanedd, awdl gorffwyssva, neu vessur ;

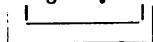
kam ossodiad mewn kynghanedd a vydd pann gamossoder y kydsseiniaid oi kynnewidiad yn anghyfleus er bod kimaint o bob un ai gilydd, val hynn

Kawn vedd rrad kyneddvau Rys.



neu val y pennill hwnn ;

Vathrod ag ef wyth drwy gas.



Ar vath ymossodiad a hynn a elwir yn dwyll gynghanedd hevyd. Kamossodiad mewn awdl a vydd pann gamossoter y bogaliaid yn yr orffwysva ar awdl val y mae yn dangos or blaen mewn kyrch a llyfn, val hynn ;

I deirnon y dirynnaf.

Kamossodiad mewn gorffwyssva yw gossod yr orffwyssva mewn kroes gynghanedd yn rry agos ir awdl, val hynn

Y gwr a brig ar bregeth.

Kam ossodiad mewn messur yw gossod Racwann neu osodiad mewn messur paladr ynglyn unawdl uniawn yn y chweched assildaf yngwrthwyneb y dosbarth.

Bai yw kamgyfanssoddiad mewn kynghanedd val y pennill hwn ;

Oes yr un is yr awyr.

Kam gyfanssoddiad ir kynghanedd ddisgynnedic yw na bytho i gorffwyssva gynghaneddol or un natur amsser ar ssilldaf nessaf ir awdl ; oddieithr bod lleddf a thalgronn yr hwnn nid yw vai yn y lle hwnnw, val hynn ;

Gwr llwyd a geiriau Lladin.

Neu val hynn, ar orffwysva ar vogaliaid.

Heddyw doe hawdd yw dyall.

Ar bai hwn a ddigwydd yn vnych o herwydd kyfanssoddiad geiriau neu ymadroddion.

Bai hevyd yw amherthynas mewn kerdd ganmoledic, sef yw hynny, peth ni chynweddo i'r dyn y pryter neu y kaner iddaw.

Bellach yssbysswn am y pedwar ffugr y rrai yssydd yn esgusodi dros bedwar kam neu bedwar bai. Beth yw Ffugr ! Esgus neu liw diarffordd ; Y gyntaf yw ffugr, (Sillepsis) ymgynnull yr honn a esgusoda dros wrw a banw ; wrth ddwyn y rrann at y kwbl ; Sef yw hynny pan vo rrann a chwbl yn yr ymadrodd a henw

gwann y rryngthynt, yr henw gwann hwnn a roi'r at y kwbl ac nid at y rrann, val y mae; Gwr gwylliw, Gwraic wendroed; kans y gwr ar wraic y sydd anedic, ac yssydd gwbl ac yssydd yn perchennogi ar y troed ar llaw, y rrai yssy rannau or kwbl; a iawn yw ir kwbl gael y veistrolaeth. Yr ail yw ffugr (Synechdoche) arddangos yr honn a esgusota dros unig a lliosawc; ssef vydd honno pann vo y kwbl yn unig ar rrannau yn lliosawc, ac velly dwyn y rann at y kwbl val hynn; Gwr llygeitdu, Gwraic wenn i dwylaw. Y drydedd yw ffugr (Evocatio) ymoralw, ar ffugr honno a esgusota dros Wydd ac Apssen, wrth roi y naill berason at y llall val y mae; Mi yw'r gwych; neu, Ti yw'r gwr gwych. Ac yn iawn ymadrodd diesgus, val y mae, Myvi wyf vi. Tydi wyt ti, Evo yw'r gwr gwych. Y bedwaredd Ffugr yw (Apheresis) Torr penn gair, a honno a yrrha rai or geiriau, val y mae; Tec yw d'wyneb, ac yn ddiesgus, Tec yw dy wyneb. Y Ffugrs eraill a dynnwyd or Lladin ac or Groec. Nid anghenrhaid imi wrthynt, kans yn Ffugrs ni yw moddion prydyddiaeth, ssef yw hynny esgussion drwy awdurdod o waith Beirdd kadeiriawc neu yr athrawon penkerddiaidd a vuont or blaen; a phennillion o gerdd y rreini yw yn gwarant an arddelw ninnau i ganu yn i hol; kans nid yw Ffugrs hwyntau yr ieithoedd eraill ond yn ol gwaith awduriaid oi hiaith or blaen. Tri gwarant y ssydd i ymadrodd, nid amgen: Llythr, Lliaws, ac Arfer; ac nid gwarant, kam arfer.

Llyma yr ugain peth kynwyssedic a berthynant ar bennill o gywydd deuaire hirion; Messur, Ssynnwyr a Chynghanedd; pump gorffwyssva yssydd mewn kynghanedd ymhob ssildaf or gyntaf hyd y chweched y gellir gorffywys. Pedair gorffwyssva yssydd mewn pennill; un yn y kynganeddion; un yn yr amsseroedd, un yn y perssoniaid, ac un yn yr awdl. Dwy orffwyssva a vydd yn y perssoniaid yn kyflawni. Tair gorffwyssva yn yr amsseroedd i ddangos i ssynnhwyran, ai rrannau. Tri braint y sydd i bennill o Gywydd penkerddiaidd; dysgyblaidd ac isselradd neu dinkerddiaidd.

Kans or ymadroddion perffaith kyflawn y bydd mydr neu brydiad; wrth hynny rraid yw gwybod beth yw mydr neu brydiad. Mydr neu brydiad yw kyfansoddiad ymadroddion perffaith kyflawn, a dekaer o eiriau gwann, ardderchawc, addwyn, addurn, a arwyddokaant moliant neu ogan, a hynny ar gerdd davawd gamoledic.

Raid yw gwybod bellach pa ffurf y dilyer moli pob peth or y pryter iddaw; a pha bethau y dilyer brydu iddynt. Deuryw beth y dilyer brydu iddynt, nid amgen; peth ysbyrdawl nefawl, a pheth korfforawl bydawl; peth ysbyrdawl nefawl, megis Duw a Mair ar

Saint, ar Engylion ; peth korfforawl bydawl, megys Dyn, neu lwdu neu gyfle.

Duw a volir o achos i vod yn greawdr holl gyfoethawc ac yn dad ysbrydawl i bob creadur, ac yn drugarawc hael, a holl daeoni, a holl doethineb, a holl allu a meddiant yr holl vdyssawdd gantaw, ai vod yn wynnvydic, ac yn vawr vrydus, ac yn vrenhin nef a dayar ac uffern, ac a ssanteiddrwydd, a chreadigaeth, a thadoliaeth a maboliaeth, ac ysbrydolder, ac un dwywolder ac anrhydedd heb drank heb orffen, Amen.

Mair i vam a volir o achos i morwynawl weryndawd ai ssanteiddrwydd ai glendid buchedd, ai thegwch, ai gogoniant, ai haelder, ai hanrhydedd, ai doethineb, ai hufuddawd ; ac oi bod yn vam y drugaredd, ac yn vrenhines nef a dayar ac uffern ; a haeddu o honai ymddwyn yn i gweryndawl groth kreawdr hollgyfoethawc y creaduriaid oll, ai bod yn wry kyn esgor ac wedy esgor.

Y Saint ar Engylion a volir o achos eu glendyd ai ssanteiddrwydd, ai gwrthiau, ai rrinweddan, ai nefolion weithredoedd, ai ddwyawwl ogoniant, ac o eu bod yn wassanaethwyr ir hollgyfoethawc Amherawdr y Brenhinoedd ; ac o nefolion bethau eraill anrhydeddus.

Deuryw ddyn a volir, nid amgen ; Gwr a Gwraic. Deuryw wr a volir, nid amgen, Ysgolhaic a Lleyc. Deuryw Ysgolhaic a volir, nid amgen, Gwr eglwyssic, a Gwr bydawl. Deuryw wr eglwysic y ssydd, nid amgen, Gwyr eglwys vydawl a chrefyddwyr. Deuryw eglwyswyr bydawl yssydd, nid amgen ; Pab, neu Gardinal, neu Esgyb, neu Archessgyb, neu Archddiagoniaid, neu Ddeaniaid, neu Offissialyaid o Breladiaid ; a Ddarostyngedigyon, val Perssonyaid a Bikaryaid ac Offeiriyaid ac Ysgolheigyon eglwyssu.

Preladiaid a volir oi saneteiddrwydd ai glendyd buchedd ai trugaredd wrth weinyaid ai helussenau, ai kadernyd yn kynal kyfreithiau yr Eglwys ai breinyau, ac o bethau eraill ysbrydoliu anrhydeddus ; a meddylier yn hysbys voli pawb yn i radd i hun ac yn i ragorfraint.

Darostyngedigion a volir oi haelioni ai bonedd ai buchedd devodau, ai helussenau ai hanrhydedd ai doniau, ac o bethau eraill addfwyn.

Deuryw grefyddwyr y ssydd, nid amgen ; Preladiaid val Abadau a Phrioriaid, Darostyngedigion val Brodyr a Menych, a Chrefyddwyr eraill.

Preladiaid kreyddwyr a volir megys Preladiaid eraill, ac i gyda hynny oi kreydd, ai buchedd, ai Santeiddrwydd, ai dwyolion wassanaethau, ac oi nefawl ai hysbrydawl gariad ar Dduw, ac o gyfiawn lywodraeth ar i ddarostyngedigion grefyddwyr eraill, ac

oi hystadau eglwysic, ai doethineb, ai kyflawnder yn kynnal kyfreithiau yr Eglwys ai chymediwiau ; ai trugaredd wrth reidussion a thlodion, ai gweddiau, ai gweithredoedd ysbrydolion, ai haelioni yn kynnal llysoedd a phethau eraill ysbrydolion, anrwydeddus klodvawr yn ddiordwac, ddibechadurus ; ac o bethau eraill perthynassol voliant.

Krefyddwyr eraill darostyngedigion a volir oi hufudd-dawd, ai darostyngedigrwyd i Dduw, ac yw Preladiaid, ac o bethau eraill nefolion ysbrydawl.

Deuryw Ysgolheigion bydawl ysydd, nid amgen, Athrawon, a Dysgyblion.

Athrawon a volir oi kelfyddydau ai gwybodau, ai uchelder natur, a chyfreithiau, a blaenwydd kanon a buddugoliaethau yn ymrysonau, a doethineb ar ovynnau a gollyngau drwy athrylith a chelfyddodau a dosbarth.

Dysgyblion a volir oi dysg ai hethrylith a gwybodau ai haddwynder, ac oi bod yn ddefnyddiau gwyrda.

Deuryw leyc a volir, nid amgen ; Arglwydd ac Uwchelwyr.

Arglwydd megis Brenhin neu Amherawdr neu Dywysawc, neu Yarl, neu Varwn, neu Bennaeth arall a volir oi gadernyd, ai ddewredd, ai vilwriaeth, ai allu ar wyr a meirch, ac arfau, a chyfoeth, a thraul, ai ddoethineb, ai gymhendawd yn llywyaw gwlad a theyrnas ; a chreulonder wrth i elynion ; a gwarder a hygarwch wrth i wyr ai gyfeillion ; a haelioni rroddion a gwleddau, a mawrvryd gweithredoedd a digrifwch, a bonedd ; a thegwch pryd a gwedd, ac addurnyant gwisgoedd, ac aur neu a thlyssau, a mawrvrydussion vedylliau, a gwroliaeth gweithredoedd a phethau eraill addwyn anrwydeddus.

Uchelwr a volir oi ddewredd ai gadernid, ai vilwriaeth, ai bryd, ai vonedd, ai addwynder, ai haelioni, ai ddigrifwch, ai ddoethineb ai gymhendawd, ai wrdahaeth, ai gynnhalyad, ai gyvoeth ai vawrvrydus weithredoedd, ai wladwriaeth ; ai gywirdeb o air, a gweithred, a meddwl wrth i arglwydd.

Tri rryw wraic a volir, nid amgen, krevyddwraic, a gwreic dda, a morwyn ievank rianaidd.

Krevyddwraic a volir o ssancteiddrwydd a diweirdeb a glendyd buchedd, a chrefydd a glendyd morwyndawd, air a meddwl, a gweithred ; ac o nefawl gariad ar Dduw ; a phethau eraill ssantaid ysbrydawl, megys y molir krevyddwr.

Gwreic dda o arglwyddes, neu uchelwraic a volir o bryd a gwedd, thegwch ac addwynder, a digrifwch ac haelioni, a lledneisrwydd a doethineb, a chymhendawd, a diweirdeb, a dissymlder, ymadroddion ; a phethau eraill ardderchawc, addwyn kanmoladwy ;

ac ni pherthyn prydu i wreigdda herwydd sserch a chariad, kann ni pherthyn iddi gordderchgerdd ; ac o bydd sswyddoc i gwr ef a ellir prydu iddi ac yw gwr herwydd braint y sswydd.

Morwyn ievank reinaidd a volir o bryd a gwedd a thegwch, a diweirdeb a morwyndawd, a rreinaidd ledneissrwydd, a chwrtteis-srwydd, a boneddigeiddrwydd, a hygarwch, a dissymlrwydd, a haelioni ac addvwynder, ac eglurder klod, a devodau da, a sserchowgrwydd, a gwychder ; ac iddi y perthyn prydu herwydd sserch a chariad, a rrieingerdd ; ac val hynny yn yr vol y molir mab ievank sserchawc.

Ni ddily prydydd vod yn oganwrr a gwneuthur sswydd klerwr ; kans swydd prydydd yw moli, ni ddily oganu neb, nes rroi brovi dair gwaith ; ond tewi ai voli a ddichon ; ef a ddichon vod yn deuluwr kans sswydd dysgybl yw.

Dewiniaeth a sswynau ac ofergerdd a chroessanaeth ni pherthyn ar brydydd, Ystoriau ysgriven ac ymddiddanau kyfannedd ; ac odidogion ovynnau, ac atebion a berthyn ar brydydd i ddigrifhan llysoedd ac i ddiddanu gwyrda a rrianedd, ac i ymddiddan a doethion ; kans rran o ddoethineb annianawl yw prydyddiaeth, ac ethrylith ; kans o un or ssaith gelvyddydd yr henyw, ac awen a henyw or ysbryd glan.

Llyma y kampau ysbrydolion a berthyn ar brydydd ; Ufudd-dawd, Haelioni ; Diweirdeb, Kariad perffaith, Kymhedrolder bwyd a llyn, Amynedd dda, a dilesgrwydd ; y rrai hynn yssydd wrthwyneb ir ssaith bechod marwol, nid amgen ; Balchder trahaus, Anghywirdeb, Godineb, Kynghorvynt, Glothineb, Llud, a llessgedd ; y rrai a lygrant yr awen ac a laddant yr enaid.

Tair kaint yssydd o Gerdd davawd, nid amgen ; Klerwriaeth, a Teuluwriaeth, a Phrydyddiaeth.

Tair kaint a berthynant ar glerwriaeth, nid amgen, Ymssennu, a dyvalu gair tra gair, a danwarded.

Tair kaint a berthynant ar Deuluwriaeth, nid amgen ; Testyn-jaw a dyvalu gwers tragwers yn deuluaidd araf, a gordderchgerdd deuluwraidd drwy eiriau ymwys.

Tair kaint a berthynant ar brydyddiaeth, nid amgen Kywyddau, Ynglynnion, ac odlau kerddwriaidd, anhawdd eu kanyad ai dychymir.

Tair enaid kerdd yssydd, nid amgen ; Messur, Synnwyr, a Chyng-hanedd.

Tri thwyll y ssydd ar Gerdd, nid amgen ; Twyll gynghanedd, Twyll awdl, a Thwyll gymeriad.

Tri bai kyffredin yssydd ar Gerdd ; Torr Messur, dryc Ystyr, a cham Ymadrodd.

Tri thorr messur yssydd ; hir, a byrr, a thwyll yn yr awdl.

Tri rryw ddryc ystyr y ssydd ; Kamm ddychymic, Amherthynas, ac eissiau enaid.

Tri cham ymadrodd yssydd ; Unic a lliosawc i gyd, Gwrw a banw i gyd, a Gwydd ac apssen i gyd.

Tri amherthynas kerdd ; Moliant a gogan i gyd, Rwy ac eissiau i gyd, ac eissiau Berf.

Tair rran ymadrodd yssydd ; Henw, Rac henw, a Berf.

Tri Byw ymadrodd yssydd, ymadrodd perffaith, Ymadrodd kyf-iawn, ac ymadrodd addurnedic.

Tri rrann Prydyddiaeth yssydd ; Silldaf, Gair, ac Ymadrodd.

Tri bai gwahanredawl yssydd ar Gerdd davawd. Prost ac un-awdl i gyd. Lleddf a Thalgron i gyd, Trwm ac ysgafn i gyd.

Tri bai gwahanredawl eraill yssydd ar ynglyn unawdl ; Karn ymorrdiwes, Tin App, a Dryc ossodiad ; sef achos y gelwir hwynt yn veiau gwahanredawl neu gwahanedic, am eu bod yn rryw van-nau yn veiau, ac mewn mannau eraill heb vod.

Tri pheth a berthyn ar wr wrth gerdd davawd, Kerdd, a Chof, a Chyfarwyddyd.

Tair kaink yssydd ar Gerdd davawd, Kywyddau, Ynglynion, ac Odlau.

Tri chof y ssydd ; Iachau, Arfau, a Rhandiredd.

Tri chyfarwyddyd yssydd ; Hengerdd, Ystoriau, a Barddoniaeth.

Tri pheth a berthynant ar Glerwriaeth ; Goganu, Ymbil, a Gwarthruddaw.

Tri pheth a berthynant ar Deuluwriaeth, Haelioni, Digrifwch, ac Emynhaedd ; neu ervyn da yn deuluaidd.

Tri pheth a berthynant ar Brydydd ; Klodvori, Digrifhau, a Gwrthwynebu gogangerdd.

Tri pheth a hoffant gerdd ; Dyfnder Ystyr, Odidawc Veddl, ac Awdurdawd y Prydydd.

Tri pheth a anhoffant gerdd ; Baster ystyr, Sathredic ddychymic, ac Anurddas y Prydydd.

Tri pheth a gyweiriant gerdd ; Addurn gyfansoddiad ymadrodd-ion, Amllder Kamberaec, a dychymygvawr gerddwriaeth.

Tri pheth a urddant gerdd ; Deheurwydd neu huawdlrwydd parabl, Awdurdawd y prydydd, a chyfarwyddiaid a wypant varnu.

Tri pheth a annurddant Gerdd ; I ddatganu yn annamsser heb i govyn, I chanu yn amherthynas ir neb nis dylai, ac eissiau kerddwyr a wypynt varnu ar gerdd.

Tri pheth a amlhaant awen kerddawr, Hengerdd, Barddoniaeth, ac Ystoriau.

Tri pheth a bylhaant awen ; Anghyfarwyddyd, Angherddwriaeth, ac Anghammawl.

Tri pheth a lwgr awen oll, Tra meddwdawd, Tra godineb, a thra ysgymundawd.

Tri pheth a ddily kerddor eu gochel ; Llynnu neu ddiota, Puteinia, a Dissio neu dablara.

Tri pheth a ddily kerddor eu kanmol ; Haelder, Digrifwch, a Cherddwriaeth.

Tri pheth a ddistrywia kerddor ; Noethi, ac anghydvadnabod ac Anghanmawl.

Tri pheth a vawrhaant gerddor, Gwisgoedd, Kyvadnabod a Chanmawl.

Tri pheth ni chyngain mewn kerddor ; Anwadalwch, Ysmalhawch, a Angherddwriaeth.

Tri gwarant kerdd ; Kerddwriaeth, a Hengerdd, a Meddwl da.

Tri pheth y kae kerdd arnynt heb vyned yn eu herbyn ; Hengerdd yr hen gerddorion. Dychymig vawrgyweindeb y prydydd newydd, a chelfyddyd o gerddwriaeth na aller myned yn i herbyn.

Tri pheth ni ddily kerddor eu kredu yn hawdd lle pryto prydyddion, Gogan kler, Kam ganu o benkerdd kamoledig, A pheth ni allo bod herwydd doethineb.

Tri pheth a ddily kerddor eu gwneuthur ; Iawn ganu, Iawn ddysgu, Ac iawn varnu.

Tri pheth ni ddily kerddor eu gwneuthur oi vodd ; Kam ddyagu, Kam varnu, a goganu yn ddiachos.

Tri pheth a lawenha kerddor ; I ganmawl, a gwarandaw i gerdd yn ganmoledic, a Roi rroddion iddaw.

Tri pheth a goddant, neu a ddigiant gerdder, ac ai tristhaant ; I amherchi, a goganu i gerdd, ai nakhau.

Tri gwarthrudd kerdd ; I hanghredu, I goganu, ai chamvarnu.

Tri anhepkor kerdd ; Eglur barabl, Hydereofn, A cherddwriaeth.

Tri pheth a gyweiriant gerdd, ac ai teilyngant ; Ehedrwydd, neu huawdlrwydd parabl, Kywrandeb ssynwyr ac anianawl ddyall.

Tri pheth a anghyweiriniant gerdd neu ymadrodd ; Pwl ddatkaniad, ac anghywraind ssynwyr, ac anystyriol ddyall y parablwr.

Tri pheth ni ddylu kerddor i haddef ; Kyfrinach, a Chywilydd Kydymddaith, a Chelwydd argyweddedic.

Tri pheth ni ddily kerddor eu kelu, Barn iawn ar Gerdd, a Gwir diwaradwydd, a Chlod dyledus.

Tri pheth anwedus ar Gerddor ; Ffrost, a gogangerdd, a Chroesanaeth.

Tri pheth a ganmolant Gerddor ; Haelder, a Digrifwch, a Devodu da.

Tri pheth a waradwyddant Gerddor ; Kybyddiaeth, Gwladeidd-rwydd, a dryc ddevodau.

Tri pheth a ganhiedir i Gerddor ; Klodvori pawb, Barn gyflawn, a Diddanwch.

Tri pheth a bair karu Kerddor ; Kytundeb, Kynhilarwydd, a chlodvori Dynion.

Tri pheth a bair kashau Kerddor ; Anghynnilarwydd, Anghytundeb, a Goganu Dynion da.

Tri ffrwythlawn Gerddor ; Prydydd, Bardd, ac Ystoriawr.

Tri over Gerddor ; Klerwr, a Bardd y blawd, a Hudol.

Tri pheth a wna ffrwythlawngerdd ; Diddanu meddwl, Gwellhau kof ac ethrylith, a distrywio dryc veddyliau.

Tri pheth a wna overgerdd ; Methu, a Llygru ssynwyr, A mwyhau pechod.

Tri growndwal; doethineb Ievengtyd i ddysgu, Kof i gadw, a Synnwyr i ddyall.

Tri chyweirgorn kadwedic kerdd davawd ; Kalon i veddyliaw, Keudawd i gadw, a thavawd i draethu.

Tri pheth a ddyly vod ar voliant Gwr, klod, gweddi, a chyngor.

Tri pheth a ddyly vod ar ovyngerdd ; Dissyf, Dyfol, a Diolch.

Tri pheth a ddyly vod ar varwnad ; Argyllaeth, Kwynvan, a Dyhuddiant.

Tri pheth a ddyly bod ar ogangerdd, pe perthyn i benkerdd i gwneuthur ; Edliw, Difenwi, a Regu.

Tri pheth a ddyly bod or rieingerdd ; Moliant, Serchowgrwydd, a Chariad.

Tri rryw brifgerdd yssydd ; Kerdd davawd, a Cherdd dant, a Cherdd vegin.

Tair prifgerdd davawd yssydd ; Prydu, Datganu, a chanu gan dant.

Tri phrifgerdd prydyddiaeth yssydd : Gwengerdd, Rieingerdd, a Unbenngerdd.

Tair kaink y ssydd ar gerdd davawd * * *

Tair rran kerdd y ssydd ; Silldaf, Gair, ac Ymadrodd.

Tair rran Silldaf y ssydd ; Llythyren, ac Amsser, ac Akenn.

Tair rran Gair yssydd ; Llythyren, Silldaf ac amsser.

Tri rryw Llythyren y ssydd ; Bogal, Llythyren Vud, a Llythyren dawdd.

Tri rreolaeth Silldaf, ei Hyd, ai Phwys, ai Natur.

Tri pheth a berthyn ar gynghanedd groes ; Kyd ateb, Kynfnewid, a Gorffwyssva.

Tair rran iaith yssydd ; Rann veddyliedic, Rann ddywededic, a Rann Yagrifenedic.

Ffynydd neu Tervyn y pumed Llyfr Kerddwriaeth.

Angchwanegiadau,

Tri chodiad Serch ysydd, Cae, a chusan, ac annerch.

Tri ymlyniad serchog, Haelioni, a Digrifwch, a Syberwyd.

Trywyr y kyngain serch arnun, Gwr digrif diwladaidd, a gwr hael dewr, a Gwr bonheddig teg.

Trywyr ni chyngain serch arnun, Gwr hagr gwladaidd, a Gwr llwrf bocсахus, a Gwr kybydd tlawd.

Tri hyborth serchoc, Hirnos dawelsech, a Drws tawelddor, a Thylwyth kysgadur.

Tri anhyborth serchoc, Nos verr lawoc, a Dor wichiedic, a gwrach anhunoc ymgeingar.

Trri anhepcor serchoc, llygaid i wilio, a Thavod i wadu, a chydymaith i esgusodi.

Tri hydyb serchoc, over Eiriau bocсахus, a mynych olygon, a llawer o Lateion.

Tri didyb serchoc, un Gennad gywir, ac anvynych gyvedd.

Elasoes pwy'r oesawr Iesu
Yw'r oesawr Ior mawr y mi
Ai lyssoedd lwysiad lessu
Heb laesiad dad rhad Duw tri. Simwnt Vachan.

Ynglyn or pum prif Gynghanedd.

Simwnt o Thelwal sy omer ssoniant
Synnwyr tri Philosopher
Salmon ddisalw i galwer
Siob o wraidd pob sobrwydd per.

Dymchwelawdl a vessurir o ugain Silldaf, pump pennill byrrion o bedair Silldaf bob un, ar ddau gyntaf yn unawdl un gyfochr ar ddau eraill yn ymrafaelio odl, ac yn unawdl un gyfochr hwyntau yll dau; ar pennill diwaetha yn dychwelyd adref yn unawdl un gyfochr ar ddau gyntaf; ar ail bann yn kynghaneddu ar trydydd, ar pedwerydd yn kynghaneddu ar pumed val hyn;

Y gwr gorau
Ymric iorau
A mawr giried
I air gwiried
Ai ragorau. Simwnt Vachan.

Heulwawr hy olau hoylwiys,
Win heiliaw, hael iawn heb berau
Heulwen Pywys.

Simwnt Vachan ai kant y Pennill a dau or pedwar messur ar hugain yn un.

Eto y mae llawer o bethau ar ni ddoeth kof eu traethu or blaen ac yssydd angenrheidiol ssoniaw am danynt.

Pa ssawl lle y rhoir y llythyren honn; F, ynniwedd gair yn ol bogal? Tri lle, nid amgen; Kyssevin bersson neu y bersson

gyntaf oi verf, val hynn ; af, karaf, neu wyf, karwyf ; yr ail yw ar ol gair yn kyrchu at ei liaws, neu at ei amlhaad ; val Tref, Trefydd, kryf, kryfion ; haf, ac at i amlhaad, val y mae ; hafaidd. Y trydydd yw ar ol Suparlliaid radd, val y mae ; Tekaf, Haelaf, Glanaf. Eithr ar ol y gair hwnn, gorau, ni roir dim honi.

Gwenvun gwynvawr	geinvwyn	gynvyl	_____
Gariad gweryl	giried	gorau	_____
Gwirvudd gyrvau	gorvydd	gweurvyl	_____
Goruc eryl	gwiw	ragorau	_____

Llyma'r achos y kavas kadwynn vyrr i henw, am vod y vodrwy gyntaf or gadwyn heb gyd odli yn gayad, val y mae y lleill ; Eithr er hynny y mae y bann olaf or vodrwy honno yn ateb ir brifawdl heb gyfochri, ac i ddangos hynny y mae y vodrwy heb i gwasgu ynghyd, a Dafydd ap Edmwent a wnaeth y messur hwnn gyntaf ; ac ar ei varwnad ef y kanwyd y pennill hwnn ;

Kanu oedd well kynn i ddwyn
Klymu gwawd kwlm y gadwyn.

Mewn ymadrawd y mae tair Rann, nid amgen, Enw, Gair, a Llef ymgyffred.

Pa beth yw Enw ?

Rann o ymadrodd a ellir ei deimlaw, i weled, i glywed, neu i ddyall, megys, Llaw, enw yw ; Ty, enw yw ; Daeoni, enw yw. Ac or enwau rrai ynt ffyrion, rrai ynt Ddodiaid. Enw ffyrf a saif i hunan heb ddodi llef arall ynghysslwt ac ef, val y mae ; Dyn, Maen, Athrawiaeth. Enw Dodiad yw yr hwnn ni ddichon ssevyll i hunan heb ddodi llef arall ynghysslwt ac ef, val y mae ; Da, Drwc, Tec, Hagr. Or enwau Dodiad rrai a dreiglir yn ddau vannoc, val y mae ; Gwynn, Gwen, Kryf, Kref. Eraill ni threiglir, val y mae ; Coch, Glas ; Enw ffyrf yssydd y naill ai yn enw priodol ir peth a arwyddocao, val y mae ; Simwnt, Hafren ; neu yntau yn gyffredin i vwy, val y mae ; Dyn, yr hwnn a wasanaetha yn gyffredin i holl hil Addaf. Pa ssawl nifer ssydd i enw ? Dau, nid amgen ; unic a lliosawc ; y nifer unic a ymadrodd am un peth, val y mae ; Llyfr ; y niver Lliosawc a ymadrodd o vwy noc un, val y mae ; Llyfrau. Pa ssawl dychwel ssydd i Enw ? Dau, ssef y dychwel unigol ar dychwel lliosoc ; Y dychwel unigol, val y mae ; Brenhin ; ar dychwel lliosawc, val y mae ; Brenhinoedd. Pa ssawl bann yssydd i enw ? Hwnn, Honn, Hynn. Passawl Ryw yssydd i enw ? Pump, nid amgen ; y Gwryw, y Banw, y Kyffredin ryw, y Ryw Nidrol, ar Ryw Ambeuus ; Y gwrrw a ssonia am y rrywogaeth bennaf, val am Wr ymhlith Dynion, March ymlith Keffylau, a Tharw ymhlith Gwartheg. Y Ryw Banw a ssonia yn vynyachaf am gymar y Gwrrw ac weithiau mewu modd arall. Y

Kyffredin ryw yssydd gyffredin o ddyall ir gwrrw ar banw, val y rran vwyaf or enwau dodiaid, megys y mae ; Da, Drwc, Kanolic. Y Ryw Nidriol a nidria ymadrodd oi wrth y gwrw ar banw, val pann ddyweter, hynn ; heb yngan am yr un or ddeuryw. Y Ryw amheus, a bair amhau ai or gwrw ai or banw y bydd yr ymadrodd, val y mae ; Dyn, Llwdn, Aderyn, Pysgodyn. O ba enw y gwnair gogyfuchiad ? O bob enw Dodiad or a ddichon ymwyhau, neu ymleihau y gellir ffyrflio gogyfuchiad o honaw. Pa ssawl gradd gogyfuchiaid yssydd ? Tair, yssef yr Isselradd, y Berveddradd, ar Uchelradd ; yr Isselradd a arwyddokaa beth heb ddadl ogyvuuch, val y mae ; Hael ; y Berveddradd a ymogfywuchia uwchbenn yr Isselradd, val y mae ; haelach ; yr uchelradd a ragora hyd yr eithaf, val y mae ; Haelaf, neu, Gorau ; Neu val hynn ; Da, Gwell, Gorau ; neu Drwc, Gwaeth, Gwaethaf ; neu Bychan, Llai, Lleiaf. Passawl persson ssydd i Enw ? Tair, nid amgen, y bersson gyntaf a ymadrodd o honai i hunan, val pann ddyweter ; Myvy, Nyny. Yr ail bersson a ymadrodd wrthaw, val y mae, Tydy, Chwchwy ; a phawb a phob peth ar a ymadrodder arnaw, val y mae, Duw edrych arnom.

Y Fedwen fonwen fanwelt,
Eglur wyd o gil yr allt.

Y drydedd bersson a ymadrodd o honaw ef, val y mae ; Ef, Hwy, neu Hwynthwy.

Pa beth yw Gair ?

Rann mewn ymadrodd a dreigllir gyda Modd ac Amsser, ac a arwyddokaa gwnenthur neu weithredu, val y mae ; karaf ; neu oddef, val y mae, Im kerir ; neu vod, val y mae ; Wyf. Or geiriau rrai ynt berssonawl, val y mae ; karaf, kerir, karef. A chynnifer nad oes bersson uddunt a elwir amherssonawl, val y mae ; rraid yw imi, Dir iddaw ef.

Ac or Geiriau perssonawl y mae pedwar rryw, nid amgen ; Gweithredol, Dioddefol, Nidrol, a Chyffredin.

Gair gweithredol a arwyddokaa gwnenthur rryw weithred val y mae ; karaf, kerir, kar ef.

Gair dioddefol a arwyddokaa dioddef, val y mae ; Im kerir, ith gerir.

Gair nidriol a nidra weithredu na ddioddef, val y mae ; wyf.

Gair kyffredin a arwyddokaa ryw amsser weithredu val y mae ; mi vlinais ddau Varch ; Amsser yr arwyddokaa ddioddef, val hynn ; Mi vlinais yn marchogaeth.

Pa niver Voddion ssydd i Air ? Pump, y Mynegawl, y Gorchymynawl, y Kyssylltiol, y Dumunawl, ar Annhervynawl.

1. Y mynegawl vodd a vynac ryw ymadrodd, val y mae ; karaf, neu a hola, val y mae ; a geri di ?

2. Y Gorchymynawl Vodd a eirch, neu a orchymmyn, val hynn, kar di.

3. Y Damunawl Vodd a ddeissyf neu a adolwc vegys hynn ; Duw na cherid, Mair nas kawn.

4. Y Kyssylltiol vodd a gyssylltir llef y gyd ac efo, mal hynn ; Pann garer, neu, oş kerir.

5. Yr Annhervynol a arwyddokaa gweithredu, dioddef, neu vod, ac nid oes iddaw na niver na phersson, a phann ddel dau Air yng-hyd, y diwaethaf a vydd or modd annhervynol val hynn ; Mi chwenychwn ddyssu.

Pa niver amsser ssydd i Air ?

Pump ; Sef amsser Kyndrychiol, Amsser amherffaith, amsser Perffaith, amsser mwy no pherffaith, ac amsser Arddyvodioc. Yr amsser Kyndrychiol a ymovynn or awr honn, val y mae ; karaf. Yr amsser Amherffaith a sson am yr amsser nid aeth haibiau yn berffaith, val y mae ; karwn. Yr amsser Perffaith a ymadrodd or amsser aeth heibiau yn berffaith, val hyn ; kerais. Yr amsser mwy no Pherffaith a draetha or amsser a aeth heibiau yn vwy no pherffaith, val hynn, karasswn. Yr amsser Arddyvodioc a chwedleua o amsser i ddyvod, val hynn ; karwyf.

Pa niver Persson ssydd i Air ?

Tri ymhob un or ddau niver ; yn yr unic, val hynn ; karaf vi kerid, kar ef ; Ac yn lliosawc, val hynn ; karwn ni, kerwch chwi, karant hwy.

Y wedd y treiglir geiriau afreolus.

Y mynegawl Vodd o amsser Kydrychiol.

Unic.—Karaf, kerid, kar ef.

Lliosawc—Karwn, kerwch, karant.

Amsser Amherffaith.

Unic—Karwn, karud, karai ef.

Lliosawc—Kerym, kerych, kerynt.

Amsser Perffaith.

Unic—Kerai, keraist, karodd,

Lliosawc—Karassom, karassoch, karassont.

Amsser mwy no pherffaith.

Unic—Karasswn, karassud, karassai.

Lliosawc—Karessym, karessych, karessynt.

Amsser Arddyvodioc.

Unic—Karwn, kerych, karo ef.

Lliosawc—Karom, karocho, karont.

Y Gorohymynol Vodd ; O Amsser Kydrychiol.

Unic—Kar di, kared ef.

Lliossawc—Karwn ni, kerwch chwi, karont hwy.

Anhervynol Vodd ; O Amsser Kydrychiol.

Karu.

A gwybydd nad oes i'r modd hwnn na niver na Phersson ; Gwybydd hevyd, mae or gwaith goddef y peidiais a threiglo y gair hwn ; Karu, mewn anghwaneg o Voddion ac Amsserau, kanys gwaith over y tybiais adysgrivennu kynn vynyched perssonau mor unweddawl, ac mor underfynawl heb ddim kyvnewid o ddieithr doddi ; Ef a allai, Neu, O, Neu Pann, attunt ; Pwy rai a wahodd yn Iaith yn gytrym ac o govynn yr araith Gamberaec.

Gwedd y treiglir Gair dioddefol.

Y Manegawl Vodd o Amsser Kyndrychiol.

Unic—Am kerir, Ath kerir, Ai kerir.

Lliossawc—An kerir, Ach kerir, Ai kerir hwynt.

Amsser Amherffaith.

Unic—Am kerid, Ath gerid, Ai kerid.

Lliossawc—An kerid, Ach kerid, Aw kerid hwy.

Amsser Perffaith.

Unic—Am karwyd, Ath garwyd, Aw karwyd.

Lliossawc—An karwyd, Ach karwyd, Aw karwyd.

Amsser mwy no pherffaith.

Unic—Am karessid, Ath garessid, Ai karessid.

Lliossawc—An karessid, Ach karessid, Aw karessid.

Amsser Arddyvodioc.

Unic—Am kerir, Ath gerir, Ai kerir ef.

Lliossawc—An kerir, Ach kerir, Aw kerir hwy.

A bid digon hynn o essampl or Gair dioddefol, gan nad oes mwy o amravael gyfnewid ar dervynnau y perssonau yn y moddion ar amsserau eraill.

Gwedd y treiglir y Gair Nidrawl afreolus.

Y Mynegawl Vodd o Amsser kydrychiol.

Unic—Wyf, wyd, Yw.

Lliossawc—Ym, Ych, Ynt.

Amsser amherffaith.

Unic—Byddwn, Byddyd, Byddai.

Lliossawc—Byddym, Byddyeh, Byddynt.

Amsser perffaith.

Unic—Bum, Buost, Bu.

Lliossawc—Buom, Buoch, Buont.

Amser mwy no pherffaith.

Unic—Buasswn, Buassud, Buassai.

Lliosawc—Buassym, Buassych, Buassynt.

Amser arddyvodioc, neu arddyvodioc.

Unic—Byddaf, byddi, bydd ef.

Lliosawc—Byddom, byddoch, byddont.

Gorchymynol Vodd.

Unic—Bydd di, byd ef

Lliosawc—Byddwn, byddwch, byddont.

Amser Arddyvodioc.

Unic—Bydd.

Dymunawl Vodd o Amser Kydrychiol, Amherffaith a Pherffaith.

Unic—Ef a allai, vy mod, dy vod, ei vod.

Lliosawc—Ef a allai, ein bod, eich bod, eu bod.

Amser mwy no pherffaith.

Unic—Ef a allai y buasswn, y buassud, y buassai.

Lliosawc—Ef a allai y buessym, y buessych, y buessynt.

Amser arddyvodioc.

Unic—Ef a allai y byddwn, y byddud, y byddai.

Lliosawc—Ef a allai y bydym, y byddych, y byddynt.

Cysylltiol Vodd o Amser Kydrychiol.

Unic—Od wyf, Od wyt, Od yw.

Lliosawc—Od ym, Od ych, Od ynt.

Amser Amherffaith.

Unic—O byddwn, O byddud, O byddai.

Lliosawc—O byddym, O byddych, O byddynt.

Amser perffaith.

Unic—O bum, O buost, O bu ef.

Lliosawc—O buom, O buoch, O buont.

Amser mwy no pherffaith.

Unic—O buasswn, O buassud, O buassai.

Lliosawc—O buessym, O buessych, O buessynt.

Amser Arddyvodioc.

Unic—O byddaf, O byddwch, O bydd ef.

Lliosawc—O byddwn, O byddi, O byddant.

Anbervynnedic Vodd, Amser Kydrychiol, Amherffaith, ac Arddyvodioc, heb niver na phermon.

Bod.

Pa ssawl Kordiad yssydd yn iaith Gamberaec ? Tri chordiad :
Y kyntaf rhrwng y Gair ar Gyfranniad ; Yr ail rrwng yr Enw
ffyrf ar henw dodiad ; Y trydydd rrwng yr atywediad ai vlaenor.

Y Gair a gordia ai Gyfranniad mewn niver a phersson, val pann
ddyweter ; Mi a garaf.

Yr henw ffyrf ar henw dodiad a gordiant mewn rryw a niver, val pann gyssyllter hwy ynghyd, val hynn ; Ty gwynn, Neuadd wennu.

Yr atywediad ai vlaenor a gordiant mewn rryw, niver, a phersson, val yn yr ymadrodd hwnn ; Doeth yw'r gwr yr hwn a ddywaid ychydic.

Termau a newidiwyd.

1. Enw ffyrf dros : Enw kadarn.
2. Gair dros : Verf.
3. Llef ymgyffred dros : Rac enw, Rac verf, Kyssylltiad, Kyfranniad, Arddodiad, a Thaffodiad.
4. Enw dodiad dros : Enw gwann.
5. Niver dros : Rif.
6. Dychwel dros : Achaws.
7. Ryw dros ; kenedl.
8. Gwryw dros : Masgl.
9. Banyw dros : Ffemal.
10. Nidriol dros : Neodr.
11. Amheus dros : Anwybod.
12. Gogyuchiaid dros : Kymheiriaid.
13. Yr Isselradd dros : Possiaid.
14. Y Berveddradd dros ; kymheiriaidradd.
15. Yr Uchelradd dros : Superlliaid.
16. Kyfranniad dros : Nominadio achos.
17. Atywediad dros : Henw dygiedic oi vlaenor.

Yma y ssoniwn bellach am Ffugrau ai rrhannau y rrai a ymchwelawdd William Salbri or Lladin Ynghamberaec.

Shema (Dull neu Dullwedd ymadrodd,) ssydd ryw ssikrhawch ar air neu araith neu ssynwyr, yn rragori ar ddevod y kyffredin. ac yn dair rran y perthir, ssef, 1. Ffugr, 2. Bai, 3. Rinwedd.

Pa beth yw Ffugr ? Agwedd neu Ffurf dieithr amgenach no chyffredin ar ssynwyr, ar araith, neu ar eiriau.

Deuryw ssynwyr yssydd, ssef, 1. Synwyr, 2. Gair.

Ffugr Synwyr ssydd pan amgener y ssathredic ymadrodd ar resswm neu ssynwyr.

Ffugr Gair y ssydd pann adnewydder neu newidiaw peth ar air mewn araith, y tu hwnt ir arver gyffredin, ai rywiau ynt Ffugr, Gair, Ymadrodd, Adeilad, neu gyfansoddiad.

Ffugr Gair ai rannau ;

Ffugr Gair yw'r honn a elwir Trawsffurfiad, yssydd ryw y ssymudiad mewn un gair ac nid mewn anghwaneg ai rannau.

Prothesis

Arddodiad

Epenthesis

Ymssang

Proparalepsis	Argymeriad
Aphæresis	Racddygiad
Syncope	Kytrwch
Apocope	Amdrwch neu Losgyrndorr.
Extasis	Estyniad
Systole	Kywasgiad neu Vyrhaad.
Diæresis	Gwahaniad
Episynalcephæ	Kynglyniad neu Gyssylltdiad
Synalcepe	Dilead
Antithesis	Trawslythyr
Metathesis	Traws Osodiad.

Prothesis (i e Appositio,) Arddodiad yssydd Anghwanegiad ar ddechrau gair o lythyren neu silldaf; Arddodiad llythyren val hynn; Gordd tros Ordd: Datreiniat tros; Atceiniat. Arddodiad silldaf val hynn; Ys da, tros Da. Ys moel, tros moel.

Epenthesis, Interpositio. Ymssang yssydd pan ssanger llythyrenn neu ssilldaf gyntaf ar olaf llythyrenn, mal hynn; Medddawd tros Meddawd; neu val y mae n yn ymlusgo mewn llywer o eiriau, val hynn; Noethui, tros Noethi. Koegni tros Koegi; Deng air tros Degair. Silldaf val y mae Llwntrach, tros Llwrtrach. Kybwl tros Kybwyll.

Proparalepsia, Præsumptio, Argymeriad, ssydd pann anghwaneger diwedd gair, mal hynn; Dewindabaeth, tros Dewindab. Hayachen, tros Hayach; Dyn vaches, tros Dyn vach.

Aphæresis Ablatio, Racddygiad, yssydd pann dynner ymddaith ddarn or penn kyntaf i air llythyren val hynn; sef tros; ysef, Silldaf, val hynn, andaw tros gwrndaw.

Syncope, Concisio, Hytrwch, ssydd ffugr wrthwynebus i natur i Ymssang, kans trychu darn i vaes o berwedd gair a wna, val hynn; Harlech, tros Harddlech, Anghyssbell, tros Anghyssyllbell, Gwrysbrysg, tros Gwrysgbrysg, Tegasswn tros Tebygasswn.

Apocope, Abcisio, Amdrwch, neu Losgyrndorr, ssydd pann dorner llythyren neu silldaf or penn ol i air. Llythyren mal; Trydy, tros Trydydd: Brais, tros Braisc. Silldaf, val hynn.

Gwae wlad oer gwylio derwenn

We darfo i wynt dorri phen.

[We, wedi.]

Extasis, Extensio, Estyniad, yssydd pann estynner ssilldaf verr o natur ai dywedyd yn hir, val pann ddyweter, Meichiau, tros Meichiau, neu val y pennill hwnn;

Pa elor hwy ple'r ai honn

Pe bai elor Fabllon. Lewys Mon.

neu Lloegyrr, tros Lloegr.

Systole, Contractio, Kywasgiad, neu vyrhad ar ddwy Silldaf o naturiaeth yn un, val y mae : kans, tros kans ; neu dyrd, tros dyred ; mynd tros myned.

Diæresis, Divisio, Gwahaniad, yssydd pan wahaner un silldaf yn ddwy, val y mae, Kreydd, tros Krydd ; Gwehydd, tros Gwydd.

Episynaløphæ, Conglutinatio, Kynglyniad neu Gyssylltiad, ssydd ar ddwy silldaf yn un val y mae ; Gwarau tros Gwaryau ; Gwan, tros Gwahan, Gwydd, tros Gwehydd.

Synaløphe, Deletio, Dilead, ssydd pann ddileer, neu pan doddo ymddaith y vogal gyntaf o ddwy yn dyvod ynghyd mewn dau air, val y mae ; V'oes tros Vy oes ; n&d, tros naad.

Antithesis, Positio, Trawslythyr, yssydd pann ossoter llythyren tros lythyren, val y mae ; Eurych, tros Aurych ; Tebyc, tros Tybyc.

Metathesis, Transpositio, Trawsosodiad, y ssydd ar lythyren, val y mae ; Baglur, tros Blagur ; Ni ssylf, tros ni ssyfl.

Ffugr Ymadrodd ai rannau. Ffugr ymadrodd ssydd yw ffuryf ar ymadrodd a newydd gyfansoddiad. Ai rithiau ynt y rhai hynn.

Atyblyg	Kynhebyg
Edryd	Tebyg ddiwedd
Adymgymeriad	Dychymygaidd, neu Dychym-
Gogysswllt	ygiaith
Argyfenw	Ataliaith
Agwedd y geiriau	Llusgiad
Kynhebygodl	Lliaws gysswllt
Lliossodl, neu Llioddreigl	Digysswllt
Unhyd	Gwrthnewid

Anadyphosis, Atyblyg, a vydd pann adrodder y gair diwaethaf or neillwers yn nechrau y llall, val y bydd mewn gostegion odlau diwedd y naill ynglyn yn dechrau y llall, val hynn.

Sequitur pulcherrimus Astur : Astur Equo fidens.

Y neb a garo Ddaw ; Duw ai kar ynte.

Aeth hiraeth rhwng bronn a thoryn,—i char

Aed alar yw dilyn ;

I dy Dduw aed wedd ewyn,

O dy Dduw nid ai y ddyn. Ddd ap Edmwnt.

Anaphora Relatio, Edryd, a vydd pan ad-ddyweter yr un gair ynechrau llawer o benhillion, val y mae hwnt ;

Ynys Von yw vy ennaint,

Ynys yw hi lawn o ssaint,

Ynys Colchos wrth Rossyr,

Ynys Roeg yn ssirio gwyr.

Lewys Glynn Kothi.

Hpanalepsis, Adgymeriad, (hyd y dywaid Donat) vydd pann vo yr un gair yn dechrau ac yn gorffenn ymadrodd, val hynn ; Vynghalonn a lanwodd oth gariad ; ac o achos hynny y torrodd Vynghalonn.

Epizeuxis, Subjunctio, Gogysswllt, a vydd pann gogyssyllter yr un gair ddwywaith heb gywng er mwyn gorllenwi, ac anghwanegu grym a nerth yr ymadrodd, val hyn ;

Mawr y darvu marw dewrvab,
Marw mawr mawr ; Mair ! Mair ! ai mab. Tudur Aled.

Paronomasia, Agnominatio, Argyvenw, a vydd pann vo ryw ymgyffelybiad ar eiriau o amravael arwyddokaad, val hynn ;

Daly y tant ir dellwyd hen.

Schesis anomation, Habitus Nominum, Agwedd, y geiriau a vydd pann gwplysser llawer o eiriau, a chyffelyb lynkwlw, val hynn ;

Marsa Manus Peligna cohors festina virum vis.

Por klod nod nudd budd byddin,
Post kost kad partreiddiad trin. I. ap Gr. ap Crach o Lelyn.

Paromion, Assimile, Kynhebyg, a vydd pann ddechreuo llawer o eiriau ar yr un llythyren ol yn ol, val hynn ;

O Tite tute tati tibi tanta tiranne talisti.

Dwg duth didawl druth dadl dri dewr Dudur,
Dros dir didwyll derdri
Dyn daer doeth dan dy dwr di
Daly dalw drist del dail drosti.

Homœoteuton, Imiter desinens, Tabyg ddiwedd, a vydd pann ossoter llawer o eiriau ynghyd a voont yn tervynu yn unodl neu o un ffunydd, val y mae ;

Dysgu kymysgu, masgoed, ai mysgu,
Dysgu, dilasgu dan dew lasgoed.

Homœoptoton, Kynhebygodl, a vydd pann vo lliaws o eiriau yn yr un treigl, ac yn unodl, neu yn gyffelyb y llythyrâu diwaethaf i pob un, val hyn ;

Tadmaeth mamaeth laeth a llo.

neu,

Ievan vynghariad ievank.

Polyptoton, Traductio, Lliossawdl neu Lliossdreigl, a vydd pann vo llaweroedd o dreigliadau gwahanedic dervynau, val hynn ;

Ex nihilo nihil in nihilum nil posse reverti. Persius.

Nid oes arver or ffugr honn yn Gamberaoc, can nad ydyw'r un gair yn newid terwynau yn yr achossiaid val y Lladin, ar y penn ol ir gair ond y penn blaen.

Unhyd a vydd pann vo Restr yr araith yn kyrheuddyd yn unhyd hyd ynhervyn y klaws, mal hynn ;

Er y ssydd a vydd ac a vu—o aur
Ac arian Ynghymru
Ni yynnwn verch geinsserch gu
Dec rwyddwallt dy geryddu.

Prosopopœia, Personæ fictio, Dychymygaidd, a vydd pann rodder i beth mud vod vn davodioc ; ar ffugr yma kyd bo hi tra arveredic i gan Veirdd a Phrydyddion, eto nid anllai ymarver y chwedleuwyr o honai noc wyntau, val hynn ;

Syganai'r Bi gri groethlem.

Aposiopœsis, Attaliaith, a vydd pan vo y naill ai gan lid, ai yntau o dremic yr atdalionn bart or ymadrodd yn ol heb ei ddywedud, val y mae ;

Arohfiddaw roi benthic march imi,
Ac onid ef.——— Lewys Mon.

Pwy yw Ustus Powysdir
Fywys* yn hai heb Sion hir. * deall Fywys acê yn hai, &c.

Climax, Gradatio, Llusgiad neu Gytgam, vydd pann lusger gair o ddiwedd y naill ssynwyr i ddechrau y llall, val hynn,

Ni wyr, ni wyl, Ni welodd, ni cherddodd.

Polysyndeton, Lliosgysswllt, vydd pan ossoter llawer o eirian yn yr un lle ; a lliaws o gyssylltiadau y rryngthynt, val hynn ;

Hugyn a Siockyn a Siak. Ddd. ap Gwm.

Asyndeton, Digysswllt, a vydd pann vo ymadrodd heb gysswllt ynto, val hynn ;

Merched, Gwragedd, Bonedd byd,
Meibion, plant ievaink, mebyd. Ioan Kent.

Dwr, tân, awyr, ser, terra, a mor,
A wnaeth mab Maria ;
Angylion Nef plant Efa
Gwyllt, gwar, gwellt, gwydd, nos, dydd, da.

Gwrthnewid a vydd pan ddadtroer y ssynwyr, val y dywawd Katw.

Nid wyfi yn byw er bwyta ; onid bwyta er byw.

Efugr adeilad neu gyfansoddiad ai rannau. Ai rithiau ynt y rrai hynn. Rac gymeriad, Kymeriad, Arddodiad.

Prolepsis, presumptio, Rac gymeriad, a vydd pan gymerer y kyvann a chrybwyll i rannau, ai dychwelyd drachefn tu a'r un peth, val hynn ;

Ffynu'n dec ffo yno'n dau
Ffoes honn a ffoais innau.

Tair afon gynt a rifwyd
O ddwyfron Fumlumon lwyd :
Un a gyrraedd in goror
Ac un a myso eigion mor.

Syllepsis, Conceptio, Kymeriad, a vydd pan vo teilyngach yn ardynnu neu yn kael i ragor ar a vo llai teilwng ; pa rai hagen a bwyllant or un peth, val y mae ;

Mi a thi yn yagrivennu.

Appositio, Arddodiad, a vydd pan gwplysser heb gyssylltiad ddau neu vwy o henwau kedyrn yn yr un lle, val y mae ;

O Dduw gwynn Veddyg einloes
Nad i verch newidio v'oes.

Bai, ssef yr ail rann i Schema. Bai mewn ymadrodd a vydd megis rryw gyveilorn yr hwenn kyd goddever i brydyddion weithiau ; eto y mae yn anrhaith i oddef allan o gerdd. Ai rywiau ynt ; Tywyll, Anhrefnus, Aviaith.

Obscurum, Tywyll ai rannau, a vydd pann ddamweinio bod tywyllwg yn yr ymadrodd, naill ai o rann y geiriau ; ai yntau o rann adail neu ossodiad y geiriau. Ai rannau ynt ; Amhriawd, Llawn llonaid, Adroddair, Tebygair, Gair ymwy, Diffyc, Gogylch iaith.

Acyron, Improprietas, Amhriawd, a vydd pan draws arverer gair yn erbyn i arwyddokaad priawd, mal hynn ;

Myned i goed lle'irgoed llwyn
Ag an llwyd 'rwyf i gyllwyn.

Pleonasmus, Llawnllonaid, a vydd pann lanwer yr ymadrodd a geiriau over, val y mae ;

Ar genau hwenn gwenn ganmawl
A ganwyf tra vwyf o vawl. Lln. Gr. ap Med. Hen.
O gwyr ateb gair eto
A vin atebed evo.

Tautologia, Repetitio, Adroddair, a vydd pann adrodder yr un gair, neu yr un ymadrodd drachefn, val hynn ; * *

Homologia, Tebygair, a gwaeth yw hwn nor bai uchod ; ar bai yma a ddigwydd pann vo yr holl araith yn unwedd ac arno eissiau kyfnewidiad ac amryw waith ar ymadroddion er mwyn

dyhuddaw y gwrandaiaid ; mal y bydd gan mwyaf araith ymadrodd neu gerdd pob annysgedic, oddieithr bod rroddiad berffeithlawn iddaw.

Gair ymwsydd pan vo amrauel ddeall mewn gair, neu ymadrodd, val y mae ;

Duw a Mair am helpio ; neu Duw am air, &c.

Diffyc a vydd pann vo gair yn eissiau yn yr ymadrodd, val hynn, * * * * *

Goglychwaith ssydd ryw broffeschwedl trawssgreurad, trwssiad odidawc ; neu yntau rryw wych dakliad a lliaws o amryw eiriau perthynassol yn estyn chwedl byrr o hyd y bwa ; yr hwn a ellid i draethu ar ddeuair neu dri, val y mae y penn kyntaf ir kywydd a ddechrau yn y modd hynn ;

Govalu heb dy heb dal ;
Gwanhau'r wyf gan hir oval. Tudur Aled.

Anhrefnus ai rannau ynt. Anhrefnus a vydd pann na bo na threfn noc urddas ar y geiriau. Ai rannau pennaf ; Isselder, Kroesanair, Koeg ddynewared, Anffugredic, Dryc ossodiad, Bolyssothach.

Tapeinosis, Meiosis, Isselder, ssydd vai pan ostynger ar urddas y peth gan isselder, eiddildra, neu lesgedd y gair, val y mae ;

Dy gywion dwg yn d ol.
Dykant hwy deucant heol.

Y gwr ai wallt yn gaer wiw
Val gwichiedyn gwych ydyw. L. Daron yn wr ievank.

Kakemphaton, Kroesanair, a vydd pann aller treiglo yr ymadrodd tua deall kroessan, val hynn yma ;

Hwde gerdd dyn hoewdeg wyd
Gann dy Vardd gwynn dy Vorddwyd.
Huw ap angen Coch y pwyth.

Kakozelon, Mala affectio, Koeoddynewared, a vydd pan el un heb lwyddo i geissio dynwared, neu ddylun ar ryw athrawiaeth, mal y mae kler y dom yn keissiau ymwaredyd y penkeirddiaid ar eu kerdd hwy.

Aschematiston, Male figuratum, Anffugredic, a vydd pan vo yr araith neu yr ymadrodd yn ssyml, ac yn unllath a heb ffagrau ynto ; y rrain y ddyleynt vod mal sser neu vain gwyrthvawr yn disgleirio ar dan ar i hyd or penn bwy gilydd ; ar bai yma yw arfer o wneuthur kerdd neu vydr or un defnydd, or un dyval, ac or un agwedd ; ac mor gwbl gyffelyb eu dychymic mal pe llunid wrth yr un patrwm, neu i bwrw yn yr un volt.

Kakosyntheton, Male collocatum, Drycossodiad, a vydd pan ossoter gair yn anghyson.

Bolysethach ai cymysgiaith a vydd pann gymyager a cherdd Gamberaec, gair neu eiriau o osbiaith arall, neu ryw eiriau hen a newydd kymhessur ac anghymhessur, val y mae ;

Vy mhwrn melved vy mherwon,
Vy nghoffr aur vynghyff o Ron.
Vy mhwrn Gods mersi am hynna, Dr. Sion Kent.

Aviaith ai Rywogaethan. Aviaith yssydd vai yn tywys tua rryw lediaith. Ai rannau a ynt ; Beius, Avieithair, Adeilad.

Barbarismos, Beius, y gelwir bai pa bynnac y bo ai wedy i ysgrivenu, ai wedy i ddywedyd yn erbyn iawn ddevod yr iaith ; a hynn a ddigwydd drwy arddodi, tynnu ymddaith, newidio, neu drawssodiad ar lythyren, ssilldaf, akenn, amsser, ton neu uchen-eidiad ; ai oechwyno ystyriaeth y ffugr honn ir Gymraec. Edrych am essamplau o hynn lle y ssoniassom uchod or ffugrau ; a chyda hynny ar gywyddau ac odlan o waith llawer or prydyddion or to ssydd heddiw. I. e. 1652 ut dicit R. V.

Barbaralexis, Avieithair, o ymchwelyd pwyll y ffugr honn er mwyn kymraec a vydd pan ymarverer a'r gerdd neu araith Gymraec o air o iaith arall, megis o Wyddelaec, Ffrangaeg, Lladinaeg, neu un iaith arall hebddi i hunan.

Solecismos, Adeilad, a vydd rryw ossodiad amharus ac anghymhessur ar rannau yr ymadrodd y peth a ddigwydd drwy holl berthynasau rrannau yr ymadrodd ; Mal pann rodder, Achos dros Achos, Kenedl tros Genedl, Amsser dros Amsser arall, Modd dros Vodd, Rhif dros Rif. Tafodiad dros Dafodiad, Arddodiad dros Arddodiad.

Mae imi yn oeri vy min—am anadl
Am mwnwgl am deulin
Am dwylaw am dau elin
Mae'n glo ia hyd ymhen glin.

Dau lin dwy elin beth a dal i bod.

Vy mod, tros pe buasswn er ys talm, neu er ys dyddiau, val hynn,

Mynwn vy mod ymannos,
Yn torri penn Atropos. Gutto'r Glynn.

Atropos, a dyrr yr edef. Clotho, Lachesis. Y rei ynt y tair Chwirydd yn llywio hoedl Dyn, medd y Groecveirdd.

Binwedd, y drydedd rann i Schema. Binwedd vydd y peth drwy ei nerth y trwssir ac yr ardechookeir yr araith uwchlaw ymadrodd y kyffredin annysgedic. A dau rywogaeth yssydd iddaw ; Priodoldab neu Addasder, ac Addurn.

Priodoldab ai rannau. Priodoldab vydd yr ymadrodd yr hwnn, nac ar draethawd nac ar ysgriven ni bo dim amhriawd ynddaw. Ai rannau ynt ;

Analogia,
Tassis,
Syntomia,

Cyssondeb,
Estyniad,
Crynodeb.

Analogia neu Gydwedd yw y math ar gyffelybiaeth wrth dyb Diomedes oddiwrth y naill at y llall, i gymhwyso ystym a ffordd i scrivennu, er nad wyf yn gweled achos yw dervynu velly; kans pann yw Diomedes yn gwneuthur honn yn rrann a pharth o briod-older, ni vedraf i weled pa beth y mae ef yn veddwl.

Tassis, Extensio, Estyniad, a vydd drwy yr honn y parheir melus a ddidangar voddustra y geiriau, am yn bod yn rroi aken dromm ar rai, akenn lemm ar eraill, ac un amgylchedic neu blygedic; yr honn rinwedd yn enwedic a berthyn i lithrad a threigl y gair.

Syntomia, Evidentia, Krynoded, a vydd pann gymwyser mewn ychydic grynoded o eiriau odidawc kynwysnerth kwbl ystyriaeth hir chwedl, rresswm, neu stori vawr; ar ffugr honn a vydd goleuni neu lewyrch ir araith; a ffawd a gwyrth y ffugr honn yw arver o eiriau yn kyfladd briodawl ddigymell, ac y tybiai ddyn nid yn unig i vod yn klywed y stori neu goffadwriaeth am weithred a ddarvedd ymlaen llaw, eithr drwy ryw gynhyrviad kalon bod megis yn gweled ai lygaid gynhyrchiol y peth y pwyllid o honaw gar i vronn yn berssonawl; vegis llawer o bennillion ar varwnad Tudur Llwyd, o waith Tudur Aled; ac ar ddigoniant Ywain Glyndwfr a gant Gruff. Llwyd ap Ddd. ap Einion Lugliw, val hynn.

Peraist vy naf oth lavar,
Fyst melt rhwng y dellt ar dur.
Drylliaist duliaist ar dalwrn
Dy ddart hyd ymon dy ddwrn.
O nerth ac arial kalonn,
A braich ac ysgwydd a bronn.
Gyrraist ti yno gwrs donioc,
Y llu gyrriad ychen lloc, &c.

Mae oes dyn ar Dduw moes di un or ddau,
Ath vrain val Ywain am welliau,
Caith ai'n veirw unwaith, &c.

Ornatus, Addurn, ai Rywogaethau. Addurn araith a vydd air mor Ysmala o honaw e hun mal nad rraid yssbysrwydd gyffredin-ach am danaw. Ai rywiau ynt;

Synthesis,
Cyriologio,
Tropus.

Kyvossodiad,
Perthynas,
Kynnwrf.

Synthesis, kyvossodiad, vydd rryw gyfadail gyfaddas gyfansodd-edic drwyadlaidd a bair glybod y naill air yn vwy gorchestol nor llall, val y mae annerch lythyr neu araith, Gruffudd ap Ieuan ap Lln. Vachan.

Cyriologia, Perthynassol, yw yr honn araith gwir berthynassol y bo y gwir ddefnydd e hun yw chanmol, val hynn ;

O thery gwyr uthr i gyd,
 Ai gwewyr yn o gy'yd ;
 A phob un oi gorph o bydd
 Ai galonn val i gilydd ;
 Dan Dduw ni wyr dyn ddeall
 Pwy'n y llaw pian pean y llall.

Tudur Aled ai adroddai ac ai kanmolai'n vawr, eithr nys dywat o gwyddiat pwy ai kant, ai efo, ai arall.

Tropus, Kynnwrf, a vydd ymchwelliad neu ssymmudiad gair, neu ymadrodd oe briodol ssynwyr arwyddokaad i arwyddokaad arall, a hynny drwy rinwedd orchestawl ewybrgoeth ; ai rrannau ynt y rrai hynn ;

Metaphora,	Trawssymudiad,
Catachresis,	Kamarver,
Metalepsis,	Trawsgymeriad,
Metonymia,	Traws enwad,
Autonomasia,	Newid enw,
Epitheton,	Addasair,
Synecdoche,	Dyall,
Onomatopeia	Gair gwneuthur,
Allegoria,	Atychwel,
Periphrasis,	Amgylchwedl,
Hyperbaton,	Traws chwedl,
Hyperbole,	Kelwydd,
Emphasis,	Gair kudd rym,
Homeosis.	Kynnhebygrwydd.

Metaphora, Translatio, Trawssymudiad, a vydd ffugr dra phrydferth, a naturiaeth y ffugr honn yw benffygu, neu yssymudo gair oe briodolder e hunan i ryw gyffalybrwydd kyfnessaf, val pan ddyweter, mi a welaf, dros, yddwyfi yn ddyall ; ac y mewn llawer o voddion yr arverir y ffugr honn ; ac un modd yw pan ddycker gair perthynassol i ederyn, neu anifail, neu bwystvil yw gwplyssu a dyn val pan ddywetter, edrych y trydar, neu'r gweryru yssydd ar y verch yma, val

Gwann a hen yw'r anghenvil,
 Ac nid gwann gnoaid i gil.

Syr Rys o Garno i Gutto'r Glynn.

Hevyd pan venffykier yngwrthwyneb i hynny, megis ; Eos Glyn Teivi, am Ddafydd ap Gwilym.

A hevyd pan vwrier bod ssynnwyr gan beth marw ar nid oes ganddo, val hynn yma ;

Llawer kollwyn heb gwyno
 Llithrad hwnn rryd llethr y to ;
 Llawer yn hyd ynhrir Lleya
 Llwyn hese yn llawen o hynn.

Ieuan Gethin ap Ieuan ap Lleision.

Catachresis, Verborum Abusio, Kamarver, a vydd pan rodder gair yn agos at i arwyddokaad i hunan, ac eto yn ystlyssu peth i heibiaw, val pan alwodd Davydd ap Gwilym Ivor Hael,

Kyvallt a mab aillt y beirdd.

Metalepsia, Transumptio, Trawagymeriad, a vydd pann ddyaller y ssynnwyr gann i gyrcu or gair bwygilydd, val hynn ;

Dydd Ebrill duodd wybrenn,
 Yr hwyl wiw ar yr haulwenn,
 Pan aeth dewrvab arabedd
 O lys y gwalch liosoc wedd.

Y droella Vorwyn ar Varwnad i Wm. ap Gr. ap Deiwos wrth vronn boddi yn pysgotta yn Llyn Aled, ir hen Robt. Salbri o Lanrwst.

Metonymia, Transnominatio, Traws enwad, a vydd pann rodder y dychymygwr dros y peth a ddychymygawdd, val doddi enw Bacchus yn lle gwin, am mai ef ai dychymygawdd ac ai gwnaeth gyntaf ; neu pann roddes y peth a vo yn kynnhwys neu yn kynnal y peth dros y peth e hun val hynn. Moes i mi lathen, tithau a gei bot : yn lle llathaid a photiaid.

Eroed gras pob fformasiwn
 E hauwyd dysc yn het hwnn.

neu pan gymerer y tywyssawc neu yr penn kiwdawt dros a vo dano, mal hynn ;

Digel pan las Llywelyn
 Dewis gwr oedd dywysog ynn.

neu pan gymerer yr awdwr dros y gwaith, val hynn ;

Ni ddylai un darpar prydydd vod unawr heb Ddavydd ap Edmwnt, neu Dudur Aled yn i law.

Autonomasia, Transnominatio, Newid enw, a vydd pan ddywetter, y bardd, yn lle Taliesin ; neu y prydydd, a meddwl Ddd. ap Edmwnt, neu pann ddywetto gwyr y deyrnas yma, y ddinas, am Llundain ; neu yn Ffraink ; y ddinas am Paris, neu yr Skottiaid y dref, am Edinbwrch ; a thrwy y ffugr honn y dywaid y Kymro am bendefig i wlad, y gwr ;

A chrio i Gymro y gamp.
 Pann vo'r ymdynnu am dani,
 At wr y ty trawud ti.

**Epitheton, Apposition, Gair doddi neu Addasair, a vydd pan gym-
erer gair kyvaddas ai ddodi mewn kerdd, weithiau er kael kyng-
hanedd, weithiau er lliosogi, er kyflawni, neu addurnaw y gerdd,
weithiau eraill er mwyn pob un, val hynn ;**

Y fedwen fonwen vanwallt.
Gafr hwn, oes gyfryw a hi ?
Mae'n dinnoeth, ai mynn dani. Sn. Ddd. Trevor.

**Synecdoche, Intellectio, Dyall, a vydd pa bryd bynnac y dyallom
lawer wrth henwi un, val y mae ;**

Mwyaf rryvel a welais,
Y asydd rrwng Kymro a Sais.

neu pan ddeallom y cwbl wrth ran, val ;

Llawer kalonn bron heb ri
Brudd herwydd briddo Harri.

neu ;

Marw yw gobaith ein iaith ni
At y gad eto y godi.

neu eto pann ddyallom y rryw wrth y rhith, val y mae hyn ;

* * * * *

neu pann ddyallom y peth defnyddedic wrth y defnydd, val hyn ;

Yw yn olwyn ennlyir
A thynnu'n hwn aethnen hir.

neu ;

Er klybod darvod a dur
Newid hoedl Owain Tudur.

**Onamatopeia, Dychymygair neu air gwneuthur, a vydd pan
wneler gair ssain, neu leverydd y peth a glywom, val hynn ;**

Porth Tomas porth nas porth nik,
Porth a ganydde gwkw yn ddiguek.

Knik knek nim dawr pe knokid. Ddd. ap Gwlm. ir Bi.

Wich wach ar ol chwech ychen. Wm. Lleyrn, ir Fenn.

Kanu rrink kena rronka. Tudur Penllyn.

Bwmbard i wr ai bumbya.

**Allegoria, Arallaeg, Inversio, Atychwel, a vydd pann ddyallom
amgenach ssynwyr noc y bo y geiriau yn i estyn ar yr wyneb, val
y mae ;**

Pam na welwch ehwi i'r gwynt.

Pam na welwch ehwi i'r gwlaw.

Ni wnel gyngor i vam gwnaed gyngor i llysvam.

Ænigma,
Parœmia,

Dychymic Gwmraec,
Diareb,

Ironia,	Gwatwogerdd
Sarcasmos,	Cellwair du
Astysmus,	Cellwair teg,
Antiphrasis,	Gwrthwynebair
Charientismus,	Tec dros hagr.

Enigma, Dychymyc, a vydd ymadrodd tywyll yr hwnn ni ddileir kanmawl ymarver dim o honaw, val y mae ;

O bwriad lam ar wartha mam
Mi a wn pam ; a mynn y pab ;
Ni ydoedd gam imi vwrw llam
Ar wartha mam lorwerth y mab.

Parœmia, 'Adagium, Diareb, vydd dywedriad kyffredin adnewyddedic o hynodrzydd odidawc, val y mae ;

Deuair sydd raid i dyall ;
Gair mam, gair llysvam yw'r llall.

Ironia, Illussio, Gwatwogerdd, vydd rryw vugeilrres neu watwor nid yn llawn llythr ar eiriau ; ond ar akenn, neu agwedd y dyn ai dyweto, neu y dywetter wrtho, mal y gellir akennu yr ymadrodd yma,

Ys da vab, Och vi da.

Sarcasmos, Jocus Amarulentus, (marw-wawd, R. V.,) Kellwair du, neu air ssur vydd megys y mae ateb Rys Goch o Eryri wrth vachgen a ovynnai iddo wrth weled llawer o gyllyll (ar wdkneiff oedd ganto) ai gwagrydd ydoedd ef ; syganeï yntau, Ie mynn Bagl Gadvan, a mi glywais vod kant gan dy vam di.

Astysmus, Urbanitas Orationis, Kellwair teg, yw aml vwynder ymadrodd.

Antiphrasis, Gwrthwynebair, yw dychwelud un gair ar watwor, vegys pe galwai un ddwbwch Vorwyn drwsgl, ddybryd yn olwg hafddydd, neu un swga, dromserth, drombluog, y greirvyw ; a gwatwogerdd mewn un gair yw hyun.

Charientismus, Teg dros hagr neu Voes dros anvoes, vydd pann adrodder geiriau tyner esmwyth, am eiriau hagr ystormus, val y mae araith rrai wrth glywed y kyfryw ddoedyd.

Nawdd Duw rrag drwc.

neu val y kanodd Syr Davydd Trevor.

Diachos oedd y duchan,
Er hyn o lid mae rrai'n lan ;
Rhyvedd medd llyfr an rrifai
O ba vvw neb eb i vai.

Periphrasis, Circumlocutio, Amgylchwedl, vydd pann amgylch-

ynwr chwedl neu ymadrodd a llawer o eiriau, a hynn a wneir weithiau er lliossogi neu er amlhau ac estyn yr ymadrodd, val y mae ;

Mae dyn dig amdanad Wenn
Mwy i berigl na mab Urien.

Gwr march rrwng yr og ar mur,
A vu nal yw vy nolur.

Erehi yn hy gwedi gwin
Y tws lle cad Taliessin. Mredydd ap Rhys tros y Bola Croen.

Ath vwnwgl tan bleth vanaur. Tudur Aled.

Da gwyddost yn post an parch
Troi dwylaw val traed alarch. (i novio.)

Am veroh brenhin y Gwindir (sef Ffraink.)
Oedd van hardd wiw addwyn hir.

Tadmaeth mamaeth llaeth a llo.

Weithiau eraill er kuddio a thewi a serthedd neu groessanaeth, neu ymadrodd bustlaidd anghymhessur, val y canai Iouan Llwyd brydydd.

Val kymaint volioq gamel
Ydyw i bwrs a dwy bel,
Ag wrtho ar lun gwerthyd
Lywaeth hardd o lath o hyd.

Cuddian ryw vann ar a vo
Ymy gweddus i guddio.

Hyberbatum, Transgressio, Trawschwedl, vydd rryw draws eiriau neu gwneuthur yr ymadrodd yn wydn ac yn wrthnyssic ac yn anhawdd i ddyall, val hynn ;

Ychydic dod ym oth help. ¶

Anastrophe,

Dialypsis,

Diacope,

Synthesis,

Hysteron, proteron.

Atychwel,

Dieithr ssang,

Trichollt,

Plith draphlith

Tin drosbenn.

Anastrophe, Reversio, Atychwel, yw unic gamossodiad y naill air or blaen ar llall ar ol yn gwrthwyneb i le val y mae ;

yn Virgil yn lle,

Yr Ital gyferbyn,

Gyferbyn ar Ital.

Dialysis, Parenthesis, Interpositio, Gwahaniad Ymadrodd, neu Dieithr ssang, neu Ymadrodd dod, a vydd pann wahaner gossodiad ymadrodd gann ssengi rhesswm i mewn i ganol yr hwnn pei geded allan ni wyddid i eisiau chwaith, val y mae y pennill hwnn ,

Pottwn (un nid oeddwn i)
Goganwr a gae gynt. Hywel Kilan.

Kymer reswm (trwm bod rhoeb)
A dod reswm da drosoch. Tudur Aled.

A reswm pann ssanger i mewn a gylchir a rryw hanner cylchau,
a rreini uchod er rryddhau rac y darlleydd yn ebrwyddach.

Diatrope, Imesis, Diocetio, Trychollt, a vydd pann drycher y gair
yn ei ganol ai dorri yn ddai hanner a ssengi gair neu eiriau rrwng
y ddau hanner hynny, val hynn ;

Ysgavarn—yn narn y nos
O god yma yn agos. Deio ap Ieu. Du.

Yn y Rhyd gwn y rhedant
Y Tyvod gorvod a gant. Rhyd y Tyvod.

Bartho nid rhaid ymwrthod
Lomeus glaer weddus glod. Ddd. ap Glm.

Gwenn a dyrr gwyn a dyarwyf
Vrewi achlan vriw a chlwyf. Gutto'r Glynn.

Chwaer i Wenn gymmen gemmaur.
Vrewi ai gwallt o vrig aur. H. ap Ddd.

Synchysis, Confusio, Plith draphlith, vydd pan yssoter geiriau
benn draphenn allan or iawn drefn naturiol, val hynn ;

Cysur byrr, coes i roi bwyd
Am urddol, yn lle morddwyd
Goreu perchenn ar wenn wiw
Ty o Addaf hyd beddiw. Gr. Hiraethog.

Gwyltio'r vorwyn vwyn veinwen,
Gwaagu a ffo gwyg ei phenn. Ddd. ap Gwilym.

Am ffrw del Wmffre dalaith. T. Aled.

Velly hevyd y mae y pennill yma o waith Davydd ap Gwilym,
os Rhossyr wych yr oedd ef yn i veddwl, ac os mynnu i achub
rrac unig a lliosawc i gyd.

Gwyl Bedr y bum yn edrych
Yn Rossyr aml gwyr, gwych. Ddd. ap Gwilym.

neu yntau,

Llawn wyf o ddig na thrigai
Bath yw imi byth ym mai.

Hysteron Proteron, Hysterologia, Tin dros benn, Kyntaf yn olaf,
a vydd pan ddatganer yn ol, y peth a ddyleid ymlaen, val y mae
bannau or kywydd a gant Dr. Sion Kent, ac a ddechrau modd
hynn ;

Gwyn i vyd er gwynvydu
Y dyn kyn gloes angau du

A vetro gweddio'n dda
 Er ennill bodd wyr Anna
 A chael korff Crist uchelgrair,
 A chyffes o vynwes Vair.

Hyperbole, Superlatio, Kelwydd, yssydd ffugr a averir er mwyn
 angwanegu neu leihau coel am a ddywetter, val hynn ;

Gorddu yw brig Iwerddon
 Gan vwg keginau o Von. Lewys Glynn kothi.

A bod i law be dai lu
 Ar gleddyf er ei gladdu,
 Ai lun gwrol yn gorwedd ;
 Ef a wna'r beilch ofni'r bedd.

Pei bai ganmil yn ddilys
 O Erych rrif ar dir Rys.
 A thrichan gwinllan a gwin
 Ac yn malu gan melin.

Pe bai r ddaeor yn vara,
 Neu vlas dwr val ossai da ;
 Yn i wledd rryfedd barhan
 Dwr a daeor dri diau. Ddd. Nanmor i Rys or Tywyn.

Kynt nar dwyreinwynt:

Emphasis, Metonymia, Gair kuddrym, a vydd pann vo gair yn
 guddiedic yn arwyddokau peth gwiw i nodi, neu pann egorer pwyll
 yn eglurach ; ar ffugr honno a ddamwain mewn amryw voddion ;
 ac un modd vydd pann rodder yr henw kadarn yn lle'r henw
 gwann, val hyn ;

A throi oesoedd a thrasserch
 Y meirw i vyw y mae'r verch.
 Val maeth meddyginiaeth gain,
 Eilryw im geilw dyn aelvain.
 Saer dy vawl sorriad wyf fi. tros sorrodic.
 Aryf oedd i holl Gymru.

Homœosis, Kynhebygrwydd, vydd pann eglurer peth dieithr
 drwy ryw gyffelybrwydd ar ni bo hynn ddieithred. Ai rywiau
 ynt ;

Icon,	Kynddelw,
Parabole,	Kyffelybrwydd,
Paradigma,	Dyddamec.

Icon, Imago, Kynddelw, vydd pann ddyvaler peth ir llall, val y
 mae digon o ssamplau ar holl gywyddau dyfaliadau, val y mae hwn.

Y mae'n debyg mewn deubeth
 I vlacu ffiamm velen i phoeth.
 Y mae a pheth am i phenn
 Yr haf val y Rhiw Velen. Ddd. ap Edmunt.

Parabole, Collatio, Kyffelybrwydd, vydd pann gyffelyper pethau
 o amravael rywogaeth, megys hynn ;

Tebyg wrth gynnyg annerch
Yw Ievan Vychan i verch ;
Y mwyaf kuafai kar
Hithau Degau ai digar. Guttur Glynn.

Paradigma, Diddamec, vydd pann ddyker essampl allan o ryw
Ystori wrth yr hwnn yr annogir naill ai gwneuthur peth, neu
yntau yw ymochlud val hynn ;

Hywell a wnaeth mab maeth medd
Awen gain Ywain Gwynedd
Gerdd o vydr hydr i hawl
Oi ragoran Ri gwrawl. Ieu. ap Rydderch ap Ieu. Llwyd.

Gwnaf innau kyn maddau medd, &c.

Sain Kristoffer a vu'n offrwm
Yn dwyn Krist vegys dyn krwm,
Er dwyn baich aur dan y byd
Y savodd Erkles bevyd.
Ynteu'r gwr yn y lleuad.
Ar drain ar warr hyd yr iad
Drwy ddadl pedwerydd ydwy
Dyn afaich iawn dan vaich wy.' Gutto'r Glynn.

Hypozeugma, Subjunctio, Dangysswllt y gelwir pann gyssylltio
y Verv ar penn diweddaf ir rresswm yn ol llawer o eiriau, val
hynn ;

Ales, Sabel hael, Elin iaith ddidwyll
Elabeth wedi Katrin,
Annes, Sioned llwyddged llin,
A gwenn gwyr oergwn gwenn. Simwnt Vychan.

Prozeuma, Præjunctio, Racc gysswllt, pann ossoter y Verf o
vlaen klawsau bychain, val hynn ;

Trech yw d'anian nath ddyse ; dy chwant nath resswm ; dy envydrwydd
nath ddoethineb.

O Dduw pwy a ddaw y pwenn,
Or hil ir eskubor honn ?
Y march gwineu i Ieuan
Ap Hywel ap Llywelyn.

Interogatio, Govynchwedl.

Beth a yrr blaen byth ar blaid ?
Blaenor a byw ei ionaid.

English Translation
OF THE
ANCIENT WELSH GRAMMAR,
COMPILED BY
EDEYRN THE GOLDEN TONGUED,
WITH COPIOUS
Notes:
BY THE
REV. J. WILLIAMS AB ITHEL, M.A.

INTRODUCTION.

THIS is the system, according to which Edeyrn the Golden-tongued arranged the Cymric letters, parts of speech, and the metres of vocal song, with the view of their being remembered and preserved.

He performed it by command, and at the desire of these three lords paramount, namely, Llywelyn the son of Gruffydd, prince of Aberffraw and king of all Wales; Rhys Fychan, lord of Dinefwr and Ystrad Tywy; and Morgan Fychan, the son of lord Morgan, the son of Caradog, the son of Rhydderch, the son of Iestyn, the son of Gwrgant, lord of the territory between Nedd and Afan and Cil Fai, and lord paramount of Morganwg.

The said Edeyrn, through his acute and profound genius, his reflection, and various acquirements, his memory and retention, and through the authority of his own tongue, which would confer authority upon any tongue that was instructed, or capable of being instructed, formed this system of the letters, parts of speech, and metres of vocal song, both to show how they ought to be disposed in their proper collocations, and that it might prove in respect of them a perpetual standard—being remembered and maintained as a suitable code of doctrine.

For, as it is here laid down, does Edeyrn declare it to the heart that loves, the reason that considers, the tongue that expresses, the memory that retains, and the nation that supports it. So that in this respect no man in the world, possessing a tongue, could recite as authoritatively and instructively as he could, nor any other person have the power to remove one point out of the order of his code, in virtue of his own memorial and record, nor in virtue of the record of any other man whatsoever. And no one can do that with regard to his [Edeyrn's] rule, except from the record of the people;—from his own private record he cannot.

Edeyrn compiled this Analysis from the record which Einiawn the priest had formed, and which had obtained the judgment of the lord's court, and of the jury of the country.

The addition, which Edeyrn made to it, obtained also in the same manner the judgment of the courts of his lords, and of the jury of the country. And as it is here set forth, did he place his code on record, with a view to its preservation, lest the arrangement of letters, parts of speech, and metres of vocal song be lost, as well as the science of Bard and Bardism, which God bestowed, through the Holy Spirit, upon the Bards of the Isle of Britain, who were of the nation of the Cymry, from the age of ages.

ORTHOGRAPHY.

SECTION I.

THE ORIGIN AND PROGRESS OF LETTERS.

§ 1. This is the code of vocal song. But first of all we must treat of the letters.

§ 2. The British Alphabet is said to be of divine origin. God, in the beginning, announced His name, and said /ʌ, whereupon all things sprang simultaneously into life and being, and responded in a shout of extatic joy /ʌ. At the same time there appeared three rays of light, forming the divine name, and the three first letters, which were also the source of all letters and sciences. Einigan Gawr, who was favoured with this sight, took three rods of mountain ash, and inscribed upon them the name of the Deity, but the people that saw them mistook the rods, thus bearing His name, for God Himself, which caused Einigan to die of grief. (See *Coelbren y Beirdd*, pp. 6, 7. *Iolo MSS.* p. 424.)

§ 3. After his decease, Menw ap y Teirgwaedd recovered a knowledge of the primary Alphabet, and developed it, as it would seem, to the extent of ten letters, which were the following :

Λ Π Κ Δ Ε Ζ Η Θ Ι Κ Λ Ρ Ο Σ
A P C E T I L R O S

(*Coelbren y Beirdd*, p. 6. *Iolo MSS.* p. 617.)

§ 4. These letters, or as they were originally termed, awgrymmau (signs), coelbrai (omen marks), or ystorrynau (cuttings), were kept a secret by the Bards, until the time of Beli Mawr, or, as Llywelyn Sion says, even unto his own day. (*Iolo MSS.* pp. 617, 618, 623.)

§ 5. Afterwards were added

W N
M N

(*Ib.* p. 617.)

§ 6. And in the reign of Beli Mawr the Alphabet consisted of sixteen characters, the additional ones being


 B FF G D
 (Ib. pp. 617, 618. Coelbren y Beirdd, p. 20.)

§ 7. Some authors, however, assert that the sixteen existed in the time of Dyfnwal Moelmud, (Iolo MSS. p. 623,) but this is probably a mistake that arose from having confounded Beli, the son and successor of the great legislator, with Beli the son of Manogan.

§ 8. After the Incarnation the Alphabet was augmented by two more letters, which were


 U DD*

though we are told by one authority that the eighteen were known in the time of Beli Mawr. (Iolo MSS. p. 623.)

§ 9. Under the Roman domination the ancient Alphabet of the Cymry had well nigh become extinct ; but it was greatly recovered by Talhaiarn, and after him by Taliesin, who is said to have arranged the ten letters, with their proper inflections. (Ib. p. 619.)

§ 10. It was then increased to twenty, and so continued until the time of Geraint Fardd Glâs in the 10th century, when two or three more letters were added. (Ib. p. 622.) By this time, in addition to those which have already appeared, we have the following characters :—


 W F CH LL H

§ 11. Its progress continued until it reached "thirty-eight," (Ib. p. 622,) which number was considered by Llywelyn Sion and his contemporaries as the completion of the Alphabet. We find it, however, still advancing until it finally counted forty four letters, though it does not seem that all, if any, of these supplementary characters ever received the sanction of a Gorsedd.

SECTION II.

THE BARDIC ALPHABET.

(COELBREN Y BEIRDD.)

§ 12. The Alphabet in its complete form is here presented. The sixteen primitives are distinguished by the Arabic numerals.

* In the document inserted in the Iolo MSS. p. 617, this letter is described as *d*, which is evidently an error, since the letter *d* occurs in every classification of the Alphabet as one of the sixteen.

ALPHABET.		POWERS.	
BAEDIC.	MODERN.		
1	Λ	A à	Short, as in the English words <i>bad</i> , <i>sad</i> , <i>man</i> .
	Λ̄	A â	Long, and something broad, in the Silurian and Venedotian dialects, as in <i>calm</i> , <i>balm</i> , English. In the Dimetian dialect it is very broad, as in <i>hall</i> , <i>call</i> .
2	∩	E è	Short, as in the English, <i>pen</i> , <i>den</i> , <i>bed</i> , <i>fed</i> .
	∩̄	E ê	Long, as <i>â</i> in <i>bane</i> , <i>cane</i> : or as <i>ai</i> in <i>rain</i> .
3	∩̄	I i	As <i>ee</i> in the English <i>queen</i> , <i>seen</i> , <i>feel</i> : and <i>i</i> in <i>thin</i> .
4	◊	O ò	Short, as in <i>God</i> , <i>nod</i> , <i>rock</i> .
	◊̄	O ô	Long, as in <i>bone</i> , <i>stone</i> , <i>hole</i> , <i>abode</i> .
	∨	W w̄	Short, as <i>oo</i> in <i>good</i> , <i>wood</i> , <i>stood</i> ; and as <i>u</i> in <i>bull</i> , <i>full</i> .
	∨̄	W w̄	Long, as <i>oo</i> in <i>fool</i> , <i>cool</i> , <i>moon</i> .
	Y	Y ÿ	Short; Greek γ, ν, short, or French <i>u</i> ; <i>i</i> in <i>this</i> is something like it.
	Ȳ	Y ŷ	Long, as the French <i>mûr</i> .
5	Ȳ	Y ȳ	As <i>u</i> in <i>bud</i> , <i>gun</i> , <i>burr</i> , <i>sun</i> .
	∩̄	B b̄	Common.
	∩̄	F f̄	B Soft, as <i>v</i> in <i>vain</i> , <i>brave</i> . No radical.
	∩̄	M m̄	The mutate of <i>b</i> .
6	W̄	M m̄	Radical, varying in form from the foregoing for etymological reasons.
	∩̄	F f̄	The mutate of <i>m</i> , and sounded like <i>v</i> .
	∩̄	P p̄	Common.
7	∩̄	Ph ph̄	As in Phillip. The aspirate state of <i>p</i> .
	∩̄	Mh mh̄	Nasal or liquid state of <i>p</i> . No radical.
	∩̄	B b̄	Soft state of <i>p</i> .
8	∩̄	Ff ff̄	Like <i>f</i> in <i>fill</i> , <i>for</i> , <i>find</i> .
9	∩̄	C c̄	As in <i>can</i> , <i>call</i> . Never as in <i>city</i> .

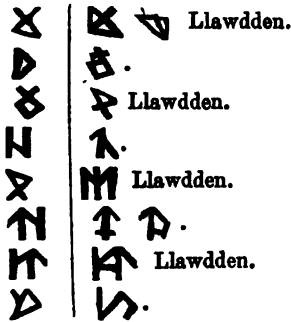
ALPHABET.		POWERS.
BARDIC.	MODERN.	
	Ch ch	X. x Greek. Guttural aspiration of c. No radical.
	Ngh ngh	Naso-guttural aspiration; or a kind of liquid or nasal state of c. No radical.
	G g	The soft state of c.
10	G g	Common, as in <i>Ged, good</i> . Never as in <i>George</i> .
	Ng ng	Liquid or nasal state of g. No radical.
	—	The shadow of the soft mutata of g.
11	T t	Common.
	Th th	The aspirate state of t; hard as in <i>faith</i> . No radical.
	Nh nh	Liquid, or nasal state of t. No radical.
	D d	Soft mutata of t.
12	D d	Common.
	Dd dd	Soft state of d, as the English <i>th</i> in <i>father, bathe</i> .
	N n	Common; but in this form, for etymological reasons, as the liquid or nasal mutata of d.
13	N n	Radical; common.
	Ll ll	Aspirate, as in the Spanish, or nearly so.
14	L l	Common; soft state. No radical.
15	Rh rh	R in its usually aspirated state, as it is perhaps in all languages when radical.
	R r	Soft, as the last r in <i>rare</i> . No radical.
16	S s	Common.
	H h	Common; aspiration of vowels.
	Wh or chw	Pronounced in the Silurian dialect as <i>wh</i> in the English words, <i>what, where, why</i> ; but in the Venetian dialect it is always guttural, and pronounced as if to these English we should add the Greek X and pronounce X <i>why, Xwhat, Xwhere</i> . There is no word in the Silurian radically guttural.

§ 13. It is to be remarked that the simpler the form of any particular character in the Alphabet, the older and more primitive it is. The fact will suggest the probability that those who decyphered the ancient Coelbren committed an error in reference to the letters *U* and *rh*. The symbols **Λ** and **Μ** are obviously of anterior date to **N** and **V** respectively; either, then, they ought to have been considered as the equivalents of *U* and *rh*, or we must suppose that these were not originally of a radical character.

§ 14. On the same principle might be inferred that **◊** *o* is a compound of **Λ** *a* and **V** *w*; even as we find that *aw* is very frequently contracted into *o*. This, however, it must be admitted, is quite opposed to tradition.

§ 15. Another observation we must make, namely, that some of the foregoing letters have at different times exhibited various modifications of form. The following is a list of some of the variations:—

Λ	◊ X	Meurig Dafydd.
∨	◄	Meurig Dafydd and Llawdden. ≡ Meurig Dafydd.
◊	✱	Do.
V	U U	Do. U Llawdden.
W	W U	Meurig Dafydd and Llawdden. W V .
Y	Y	Meurig Dafydd. V .
∨	Δ B	Do.
<	◄ K	Do. K .
>	▷ D	Meurig Dafydd. ◊ .
F	∨	Do. F , Do. and Llawdden. K F N .
C	C	Meurig Dafydd.
∩	+ H	Do. H Llawdden. H
W	∩ H	Meurig Dafydd. W Llawdden. ∩ .
∩	∩	Meurig Dafydd. N Llawdden. ∩
∩	∩	Meurig Dafydd.
∩	F	Do. and Llawdden. R Meurig Dafydd. ∩ F .
Y	∩ W	Meurig Dafydd. S Llawdden.
↑	T	Meurig Dafydd. T .
K	◄	Llawdden. K .



§ 16. Many of these modifications are obviously identical with the Monkish letters, as we shall presently see. To the same effect is the testimony of Llywelyn Sion, who affirms, moreover, that the old authors were in the habit of using them indiscriminately.

§ 17. Throughout the primitive Alphabet one feature is remarkable, the absence of curved or horizontal strokes.

§ 18. Their angular peculiarity shows them to be especially adapted for being engraved on wood, which was the practice anciently adopted by the Cymry. For this purpose they used staves, mostly of mountain ash, which being rendered three or four sided, as the nature of the inscription required, were put together in a frame, in such a way as that the inscribed bars could be turned round, so as to present in succession all the writings which they contained. This wooden book was called Peithynen, or Elucidator. (Coelbren y Beirdd, pp. 15, &c., and Iolo MSS. pp. 619, 620.) It continued in use among the Bards to a comparatively late period, and was resorted to, more or less, by the people in general during intervals of oppression on the part of the Saxons, and more particularly during the wars of Owain Glyndwr, when the English government debarred them the use of paper and other writing materials. (Iolo MSS. pp. 618, 622. Coelbren y Beirdd, p. 14.)

§ 19. But though wood was the primary material, on which the Cymry inscribed their letters, they occasionally, at an early period, wrote with an iron nail on stones also, to which they gave the name of Coelfain, or stones of omen. (Coelbren y Beirdd, p. 38.)

SECTION III.

THE MONKISH ALPHABET.

(COELBREN Y MENEICH.)

§ 20. The Monkish Alphabet seems to have been a medium between the Bardic and the Roman, the latter, it may be, adapted to the Peithynnen, as its angular character would indicate. Llywelyn Sion, indeed, asserts that it was taken from the Latin. (Coelbren y Beirdd, p. 20.) In the following list the first column contains the letters which he has preserved and exhibited in his treatise; the additional letters appear in Iolo Morganwg's "History of the Bards." (Ib. pp. 21, 30.)

LLYWELYN SION.	IOLO MORGANWG.
A	A
B	B
C	C
D	D
E	E
F	F
G	G
H	H
I	I
K	K
L	L
M	M
N	N
O	O
P	P
Q	Q
R	R
S	S
T	T
U	U
V	V
W	W
X	X
Y	Y
Z	Z

§ 21. By some **V** is omitted, which reduces the number of the Monkish letters into twenty, being the highest number that the Bardic Alphabet had also reached previously to the time of Geraint Fardd Glas. (See p. 4.)

SECTION IV.

MONUMENTAL ALPHABET.

§ 22. This has been compiled from inscriptions on crosses and tombstones, which were erected in the sixth century at Llanilltyd Fawr, Llangrallo, Y Merthyr Mawr, Llandochoau, Pen Arth, Towyn, and other places. The inscriptions themselves are in Latin, with the

exception of that on the Cadfan Stone at Towyn, which is in Cymraeg, and is the only one of that date which has yet been read in the language of the country. (Arch. Camb. new series, v. i. p. 90.) The letters are obviously a rude imitation of the Roman, exhibiting also here and there an approximation to the Coelbri.

A A A α
 B β β β
 C C
 D D D
 E E E
 F
 G 3 C J
 H h
 I
 L L L L

M H M M M
 N N N N N
 O
 P P P
 R R R R R R R R R
 S
 T T T
 U U U
 V
 X

SECTION V.

THE ALPHABET OF NEMNIVUS.

§ 23. This occurs in a MS. at the Bodleian library, Oxford, marked Auct. F. 4—32 and dated A. D. 812. The letters bear Cymric names as follows :—

CHARACTERS.		Ancient.	NAMES Modern.	English.
K	A	alar	alar	loathing
A	B	braut	brawd	brother
R	C	cusil	cussil	counsel
#	D	dexu	dechu (techu)	to skulk
*	E	egin	egin	vegetation
F	F	fich	fuch (buch)	kine
F	G	guichir	gwychyr	valiant
H	H	huil	hwyl	a sail
I	I	iechuit	iechyd	health

CHARACTERS.

NAMES.

		Ancient.	Modern.	English.
†	K	kam	cam	crooked
∩	L	louber	lleufer	light
⊗	M	muin	mwyn	kind
†	N	nulin	nillyn	poppy
×	O	or	or	a boundary
⊗	P	parth	parth	a part
∩	Q	quith	gwyth	anger
†	R	rat	rhad	grace
∩	S	surg	syrch	affection
∩	T	traus	traws	transverse
∩	U	uir	wyr	grandson
×	X	ieil	ieil	open regions
∩	Y	oyr	wyr	men
∩	Z	zeirch	seirch	trappings

DIPHTHONGS AND WORDS.

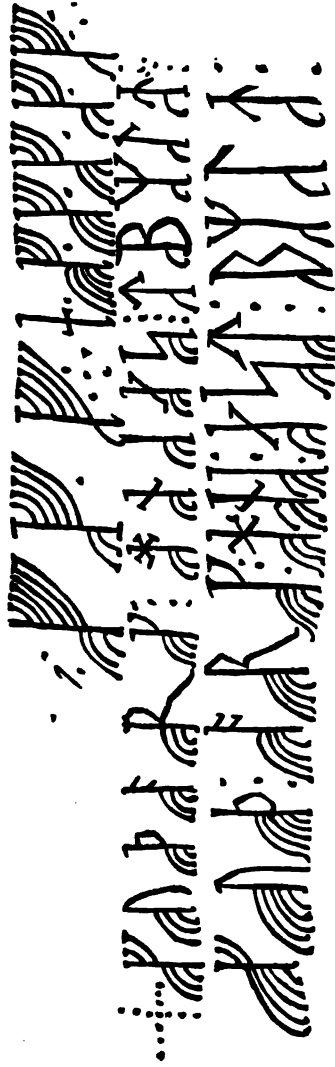
†	AE	arm	arf	weapon
×	ET	estiaul	estawl	separating
∩	EU	egui	egwy	a plague
†	AU	aur	aur	gold
∩	EI	einc	eingc	greediness
†	HINC	hinc	hinc	hence
∩	EGO	henc	henc (hwn)	this
⊗	ECCE	elau	welc	behold
∩	UULT	ud	udd	a lord
†	OE	orn	orn	a challenge

§ 24. Nemnivus is said to have written this Alphabet in answer to a certain Saxon scholar, who asserted that the Britons had no letters.

SECTION VI.

THE WINGED ALPHABET.

§ 25. This also is to be found in the Bodleian library, in a document marked MS. Bodl. 572 ; but which is not considered to be quite as old as the preceding. These are the characters :—



That this Alphabet is British or Cymric appears from the following sentence of the scribe ;—“ God grants grace and victory to the humble ; a great slaughter ensued, and many of the Saxons, but few of the Britons, were smitten ;” in which he clearly shows partiality for the latter, as being his own countrymen.

SECTION VII.

THE ROMAN ALPHABET.

§ 26. The Roll was introduced into this country by Bran the Blessed, and Books, properly so called, were imported in the time of king Lucius. (Coelbren y Beirdd, pp. 19, 25.) And no doubt the Cymry became generally acquainted with the Roman letters about the same period, the use of which gradually gained ground in the country, until it had ultimately, for ordinary purposes, superseded that of all the other forms.

§ 27. These letters varied at different times in point of number, as well as in regard to the double letters, which were employed to represent some of the mutates.

§ 28. Edeyrn Dafod Aur, in reference to his own epoch, observes:—

There are twenty-four letters, which are a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, w, x, y, z. And of these some are vowels, and the others are consonants.

§ 29. In the Grammar of Dafydd Ddu Athraw,* about a century later, they were much the same, the only difference consisting in the admission of the letters ll, v, and the absence of u, z.

§ 30. Dr. John Dafydd Rhys, A. D. 1592, enumerates thirty-one letters, as follows, a, b, bh, c, ch, d, dh, e, g, gh, ghh, h, i, lh, l, m, mh, n, nh, o, p, ph, rh, r, s, t, th, u, v, y, z. It will be observed that he employs h as an element in all his digraphs.

§ 31. Dr. Davies of Mallwyd, however, has only twenty-seven, which is the number still in use. These are a, b, c, ch, d, dd, e, f, ff, g, ng, h, i, l, ll, m, n, o, p, ph, r, s, t, th, u, w, y.

§ 32. Attempts have been individually made since to introduce what were considered as more appropriate representatives of some of the Bardic derivatives, but hitherto without success, except partially in the case of v as a substitute for f.

SECTION VIII.

NAMES AND NATURAL EXPRESSIONS OF THE
PRIMITIVE LETTERS.

§ 33. It would appear that the Celtic tongue has retained, in an uncommon degree, traces of that natural mode in which language was

* We must beg of our readers to observe, that whenever we profess to quote this Grammar, our actual reference is made to the MS. entitled "Y Pum Llyfr Kerddwriaeth," which begins after this manner, "Llyma ddyso i adnabod Kerddwriaeth kerdd dafod, herwydd llyfr Dafydd Ddu Athraw." This MS. is alleged to have been transcribed by John Jones of Gelli Lyvdy from the book of Rissart ap Sion of Llangynhafal, Denbighshire, who also is said to have copied his from the book of Simwnt Vychan, the bard, who flourished about 1570.

first formed;—when objects were presented to the eyes of our first parent “to see what he would call them.” (Gen. ii. 19.) This may account for the Bardic tradition that the Cymraeg was spoken by Enos, and perpetuated beyond the deluge by Japheth and his posterity, when the other languages were corrupted at Babel. (Cyfrinach y Beirdd, p. 29.)

§ 34. The various sounds of letters appear evidently to have been produced by the natural and spontaneous effort of man in his primitive state to express ideas.

§ 35. The names of the Welsh vowels fully signify the ideas intended. As the consonants, however, cannot be articulated without a vocalic sound attached to them, they were anciently called by the name which their respective powers, followed by *i*, uttered, though the sound really emitted in the effort to express any idea seems to have been somewhat like the short obscure *e* before *r* in final syllables of English words.

A

§ 36. This power is uttered by opening the lips, and the interior part of the mouth, moderately, and evenly, and breathing firmly, freely, and steadily, from the larynx, whilst the tongue rests in its natural situation, at the bottom of the mouth.

§ 37. By this oral gesture, and this open, uninterrupted sound, men may be conceived naturally and spontaneously, to have expressed the ideas of a *tendency forwards*—*positive continuance*, in a uniform state, whether of motion, of action, or of rest.

§ 38. Accordingly A, the sound produced, which is also the name of the letter, constitutes, moreover, a complete term, conveying the general idea of *proceeding, going forth, tending forwards*,—a *positive agency, or state*; e.g. “Ev a A Edwart, ev a’i adar.” (L. Glyn Cothi.) Edward will go, or proceed forth, &c.

E

§ 39. Let this power be uttered immediately after, or alternately with, an open A, and it will be found that all the organs of speech retain the same position, except that your tongue is now bent forcibly towards the root of the palate, as if it were intended by nature to arrest or check the egress, and free passage of breath.

§ 40. It is, therefore, diametrically opposite to A. Instead of representing uniform and free continuance of motion, or agency, a direct and positive state or tendency, it seems naturally to express a *sudden check, motion, or act interrupted, or broken, an indirect, perverted or negative state or tendency*.

§ 41. Its name is its own sound E, which is also found to express ideas contrary to those conveyed by A, e. g. *Ang*, strait, narrow, confined, *E-ang*, wide, spacious, ample. *Ofn*, fear, *E-ofn*, bold, intrepid.

I

§ 42. In uttering this tone, or sound, the tongue is thrust forwards,

till it rests against the lower teeth, at the same time it closes the whole interior of the mouth, except a confined and a direct passage for breath along the middle of the palate.

§ 43. By this oral gesture, and the sound it produces, might be naturally described the *application* or *direction* of a thing to its *proper object*, or *place*. A being or becoming *appropriate* or *internal*, what *approaches*, is *applicable*, *subservient*, or *inherent*.

§ 44. The Bards named this letter by the mere repetition of its power, which implies *to, into, for, towards, pertaining to*; as *i ffordd*, into a road, away; *i ddyn*, to or for a man; *i lawr*, towards the flat surface, downwards. *Mae i mi*, there is pertaining to me.

§ 45. When used without an external object of direction, it refers to *self*, as, "Gwleis i," I saw, as to myself. (Mab. 1. 30.)

O

§ 46. In uttering this power, alternately with the preceding, the organs of speech entirely reverse their position. The tongue which, in pronouncing *i*, advanced to the teeth, almost closed up the mouth, and confined the breath to a direct and narrow passage, is now *retracted*; retires from the palate, and leaves the way open. The lips, at the same time, are forcibly projected outwards, with a large and circular opening.

§ 47. The whole mouth is thus adjusted, as nature itself would dispose it, for the act of vomiting, or casting forth.

§ 48. By this gesture, and its correspondent sound, an idea diametrically opposed to that of *I* would be spontaneously expressed—a *casting, yielding, or putting forth*—an *emanation, or projection*, from a certain thing; instead of application, direction, or relation, to a peculiar object.

§ 49. The power of this letter, which constitutes its Bardic name, has accordingly in the Cymraeg appropriations, exactly contrasted to those of *I*; as *I, to, for, towards, into, pertaining to*; *O, of, from, out of, resulting from*.

§ 50. The inflections of vowels do not come under this rule; they are evidently a corruption of the language, such as would have answered the design of confusion at Babel, though they are now recognised as a system.

B

§ 51. This articulation is formed by an easy and a natural opening of the mouth, without any forcible impulse of breath, or protrusion of the lips, or of any other vocal organ.

§ 52. It may, therefore, be naturally applied to express the idea of simple *perception*—the *being* of any thing in a quiescent state or condition, and hence receive the following appropriations—*being, to be, thing, or what is, condition or state of being*.

§ 53. Its name, in the Bardic Alphabet, is *Bi*, a term which signifies *will be*.

C

§ 54. This letter is pronounced by fixing the root of the tongue firmly against the root of the palate, so as entirely to fill and close up the interior part of the mouth, till breath forces its way with strong impulse.

§ 55. Such an oral gesture, and its correspondent sound, naturally attend every effort to *hold* or *contain* a large mass with both arms, and also to *catch*, *reach*, or *touch* a distant object.

§ 56. This term, therefore, is not limited to the expression of one simple idea; but naturally describes a *holding*, *containing*, or *comprehending*—a *reaching*, *touching*, or *catching*—*attaining to*, or *apprehending*.

§ 57. Its Bardic name is Ci, a term by which we distinguish a dog, on account of its aptitude to *catch* and *hold*. “*Nerth ci yn ei ddant.*” (Myv. Arch. iii. 12.)

D

§ 58. The articulation of this letter is formed and uttered by closing the edges of the tongue to the upper gums, throughout their whole extent, and suddenly laying it open.

§ 59. We may, therefore, consider this power as descriptive naturally of *expanding*, *spreading*, *unfolding*, *laying open*, *distribution*, or *division*.

§ 60. Its Bardic name is Di, a term used of old for the Deity, also for *day*—*what unfolds*, *lays open*. It is evidently a modification of *Dy* the augmentative prefix, rather than the privative *di*.

G

§ 61. In hugging a substance within the arms, and as it were forcibly adhering to it, we acquire additional power by placing the tongue in the same position as that in which the letter C is pronounced, but as this action is of a less protrusive nature than that of *catching* or *holding*, breath is not propelled with new force, and the sound of G is produced.

§ 62. It may then be considered to have a natural aptitude to describe the ideas of *appetite*, a *grasp*, *adhesion*, *mutual attachment*, *compensation*.

§ 63. Its Bardic name is Gi, which implies a sinew or tendon—the cause of *connection* and *cohesion* in the joints.

L

§ 64. This power, whether expressed as in English words, or aspirated, as the ll, is formed by fixing the tip of the tongue against the upper gums, whilst both sides of it hang open, suffering the air to be *poured out*, and equally dispersed, through all the extremities of the mouth. Such an act of the vocal organs naturally accompanies the act of throwing open the hand and the arms, to describe *solution*, *effusion*, *evanescence*, *open space*, *gliding*, *softness*, *smoothness*, *levity*.

§ 65. The Bardic name of the letter is Li, which conveys the ideas above specified; as *Lli*, *flux* or *flood*, *stream*, *effusion of that which is*

fluid, gliding element. Llif, (lli-af) a flood, deluge, Llifto to flow, overflow.

M

§ 66. If it were attempted to describe naturally, by means of the organs of speech, that one substance was entirely shut up, inclosed, and comprehended another, the lips would close together, the cheeks would swell moderately, into the imitation of *capacity*, and breath would endeavour to attract notice by sounding the power of M through the nostrils.

§ 67. M is, therefore, a natural expression of *comprehending, embracing, or surrounding.*

§ 68. Its Bardic name is Mi, *that which is in, or identical, myself.* This is the root of mid, an *inclosure, a vessel of capacity*; midd, an *inclosed place.*

N

§ 69. When we put forth the hand, or extend the finger, to discriminate a simple or minute object, the eye is naturally directed the same way; we look steadfastly at that which we wish another to observe. The tongue at the same instant, spontaneously mimics the action of the hand and the eye, by thrusting forward its point in the same direction, till it rests against the upper gums. The breath, being denied a passage through the mouth, tends towards the same spot, through the nostrils, with the sound of N.

§ 70. This sound is, then, a natural interjection for *look! lo there!* and it is naturally answered by M, *I observe, or comprehend.*

§ 71. We may thus regard the power N as a natural expression of an *object, subject, thing produced, or new, discriminated or simplified—the self-same, simple, small.* Hence its prominent position in the article of the Erse dialect.

§ 72. Its Bardic name is Ni, which primarily means a *particular thing.* Its negative signification, *not,* occurs by the same kind of figure which produced ελαχιστα from ελαχιστος, and *minime* from *minimus.*

P

§ 73. A person desirous of communicating the idea of pushing, would place his body in an inclining posture, his hands would be protruded, his lips pressed together, and forced outwards, as in the very act of the impulse described, and the puffing sound of P would be uttered.

§ 74. The most obvious gesture also to convey the idea of *plumpness, protuberance, or convexity,* is to swell and puff out the cheeks, till the articulation is produced.

§ 75. P may, therefore, be regarded as naturally descriptive of *springing, putting forth, pushing, penetrating, prominence, convexity.*

§ 76. Its name in the Bardic Alphabet is Pi, which signifies the *maggie, q. d. the pricker.* It is the root of pic, a *dart, pig, a beak,* and pid, a *point.*

C

PH

§ 77. In uttering this sound the organs of speech are not put into complete contact, at the point of articulation, as in the case of P. Some portion of breath escapes, and vibrates in the interstice.

§ 78. It accordingly expresses ideas of like nature with, but less powerful than those of the preceding.

§ 79. Its Bardic name is Phi, which signifies the act of *casting off, putting forth*. *Phy, aptness to move, to impel*; it is used as a prefix in the composition of words denoting *agency or cause*.

R

§ 80. This sound is produced by fixing the sides of the tongue firmly, against those of the palate, and forcing out the breath in front, so as to cause a rough and strong vibration, between the tip of the tongue, and the upper gums. Its mechanical production is a direct contrast to that of L.

§ 81. By this energetic power the first linguists would naturally describe *force, prevalence, or superiority*; a *motion, or action performed by main strength—rubbing, tearing, pervading, breaking*.

§ 82. Its Bardic name is Rhi or Ri, which implies a king, a chief, a ruler, *Rhy is too much, excessive—prevalent, over*. “*Nid da rhy o ddim.*” *Myv. Arch. iii. 169.*

S

§ 83. When a man designs naturally to point out some particular object, so as not to attract general observation, the point of his tongue drops downwards, and rests against the lower teeth. The upper teeth close over it, as it were, to conceal the unavowed design, and the low, insinuating, hissing sound of S is produced.

§ 84. This power is, therefore, naturally descriptive of *secret discrimination, insinuation, a private marking, and distinguishing*.

§ 85. Its Bardic name is Si, which implies a *hissing expression of contempt*. *Si-arad, or Si-arawd, prating, backbiting, from Si and arawd, speech, eloquence,—Si-brwd, a low murmur, or whisper, from Si and brud, an account or chronicle.*

T

§ 86. In tugging or drawing a line forcibly, the tongue is applied firmly and spontaneously to the fore part of the palate, or upper gums, and forces out a vehement articulation of T.

§ 87. This power, therefore, naturally describes *tension, drawing, or straining, in whatever manner; extension, stretching, or drawing out. Intension, or drawing tight or close. Drawing a line or bound round anything—confining, straitening, limiting, circumscribing.*

§ 88. Its Bardic name is Ti, the meaning of which may be perceived in *Tid (ti-ad) a chain; tid-aw to tether, tie, or confine, with a line, chain, &c.*

§ 89. It is not meant to claim this aboriginal feature for the Cymraeg and its sister dialects alone. It may be traced more or less clearly

in other ancient languages. Let us, for example, take the case of B, (bi) which in Cymraeg means *will be*, in Erse *hath been*; we shall find also that it had the same signification in the formation of the Greek and Latin tongues by an examination of such words as Gr. *βι-ow* to live or *exist*; *βι-os*, *life, existence*; Lat. *vivo*, to live, *vita, life*; for that *v* here is a mutate of *b*, seems clear from the fact that *Bixit* and *Bitā* are still found in Roman inscriptions, and in some manuscripts for *visit* and *vita*. The Hebrew *ב* Beth, a house or abode=(Cym. *Bod*) denotes likewise the idea of existence. We have it, moreover, in the Persian *Buden*, to be, *bud*, he was, *bu*, be thou; in the Teutonic *beon*, to be, Slavonic *buif*, to be, and Sanskrit *bhu* a verbal root from which comes the verb *bhavami*, I am.

§ 90. Much of this characteristic has of course disappeared in consequence of the formation of new dialects, based upon the mutation of letters; and in order to recover it, it would be necessary to restore the radicals, as in the case of *vita*, or to change the letters into others of a cognate order. A true apprehension of this principle of natural expression might prove an excellent criterion whereby to test the comparative antiquity of languages.

§ 91. As a partial confirmation of the theory which we have adopted on the authority of Celtic Davies, relative to the ancient mode of pronouncing the Cimbric letters, we may mention that Dafydd Ddu gives us expressly to understand that *c, g, k*, were in his days pronounced as *ci, gi, ki*, and even now the inhabitants of Powys exhibit vestiges of the usage in their pronunciation of such words as *canys*, which they sound as if it were written *cianys*. Dr. J. D. Rhys, likewise, apparently quoting an old Grammar, says, that letters are called *be, ce, bhe, che, &c.* (p. 130.)

§ 92. The Irish letters are named after certain trees or plants, which from some peculiarity they respectively possess, are regarded as descriptive of their powers.

§ 93. It is supposed that there is an allusion to such a vegetarian alphabet in the Cad Goddeu of Taliesin, but from the introduction of the names of Math and Gwydion, as well as from the mystical character of the poem in general, we may naturally infer that the Bard had the Irish letters primarily in view.

§ 94. Such a conclusion would be further enhanced by the following account of Cad Goddeu, or the Battle of the Trees, which is inserted in Myv. Arch. v. i. p. 167.

§ 95. "The history of the Battle of the Trees.

"These are the vesicles which were sung at the battle of the trees, or as others call it the battle of Achren, [Irish, *crann*, a tree.] It happened on account of a white roebuck and a whelp, which came from the lower region, and were taken by *Amathaon* the son of *Don*. For this reason *Amathaon* the son of *Don*, engaged with *Arawn*, king of the lower region. And there was a man in the battle, who could not be conquered till his name was known, and on the other side, there was a woman, called Achren [Irish, a tree,] whose party could not be

overcome till her name was discovered. And *Gwydion*, the son of *Don*, devised the name of the man, and sung these two versicles.

"Surefooted is my steed, before the spur,
Thou with the head of Olgen, save thyself by speedy flight,
BRAN is thy name, thou with the fair locks.

"Surefooted is thy steed in the day of battle,
Conspicuous is the alder-top in thy hand,
O Bran, its cracked bud and sprig are found on thee.

"And the good Amathaon conquered."

§ 96. Taliesin was not unacquainted with Irish lore, having for some time resided in "the territory of Gwyddnyw the son Gwydion, in Arllechwedd, Arvon, where he had lands conferred on him." (Iolo MSS. p. 467.)

§ 97. The following is the Alphabet of Irish radicals, in their order, together with its names and symbols.

VOWELS.

Powers.	Names.	Symbols.
A	Ailm	The Fir
O	Onn	Furze
U	Ur	Heath
E	Eadha	The Asp
I	Idho	The Yew tree

CONSONANTS.

B	Beith	The Birch
L	Luis	The Quicken tree
N	Nion	The Ash
F	Fearn	The Alder
S	Sail	The Willow
H	Uath	The Hawthorn
D	Duir	The Oak
T	Tinne	
C	Coll	The Hazel
M	Muin	The Vine
G	Gort	The Ivy
P	Pethboc	
R	Ruis	The Elder tree

§ 98. We have seen that the Cymry also connected their letters and sciences in some sense with trees; indeed their Alphabet was emphatically called "Coelbren y Beirdd," the Bardic token stick. Their sages were termed *Gwyddoniaid*, and afterwards *Derwyddon*, both words being derived from *gwydd*, trees. All this would seem to have a vague reference to the Tree of Knowledge of which the following explanation is given by a Chaldean Rabbi;—

"The great tree in the midst of Paradise, the sprigs and leaves of which were *letters*, and the branches *words*." (Celtic Researches, p. 306.)

§ 99. Nemnivus, indeed, assigns other names to his characters, but whether he had any authority for so doing, it would be difficult to determine.

SECTION IX.

CLASSIFICATION OF LETTERS.

§ 100. Letters are divided into two general classes, of *vowels* and *consonants*.

Vowels (Bogelliaid, Llefariaid, Llafaryddion.)

§ 101. There are seven vowels, namely, a, e, i, o, u, w, y.

§ 102. They are called vowels, because they are fully vocal in themselves, and depend not for any portion of their sound upon other letters.

§ 103. The primitive vowels are a, e, i, o; all of which, except i, have sounds of different lengths, short and long, represented in the Bardic Alphabet by distinctive characters. U, w, y, are but modifications of the letter o. Y has two different sounds; its own proper sound, and that of u; both of them, likewise, distinguished in the ancient Alphabet by separate characters.

§ 104. Even after the adoption of the Roman letters, and as late as Dr. Davies's time, this letter had two forms to represent its different powers respectively. According to Dr. Rhys and Dr. Davies, they were *z* and *y*, but E. Lhuyd substituted *y* for the former.

§ 105. W under certain circumstances, which shall be mentioned hereafter, loses its vocalic power.

§ 106. The vowels w and y are liquescent (toddedig), i. e. they are not pronounced in certain words, when those words are used in poetry. The kind of words shall be described when we come to speak of the consonants.

§ 107. The other vowels are illiquescent (annhoddedig.)

§ 108. All the vowels are, under certain circumstances, mutable.

§ 109. A is inflected into e, both as part of a diphthong, and singly. In the former case the mutation occurs by reason, 1, of dialect, as *gair*, *geir*; 2, of composition, as *gair*, *geirwir*; 3, of derivation, as *saith*, *seithfed*; 4, of number, as *gair*, *geiriau*; 5, of person, as *aeth*, *euthym*. When it stands alone, it changes by a mutation, 1, of number, both diphthongally, as *bardd*, *beirdd*; and vocally, as *pabell*, *pebyll*; 2, of dialect, as *dani*, *deni*; 3, of tense, as *carer*, *cerir*; 4, of person, as *carwn*, *cerwch*. It changes also by an increase of syllables, 1, into a diphthong, as *arch*, *eirchad*; 2 into a vowel, as *claf*, *clefyd*.

§ 110. A is inflected into o by reason of dialect, as *haul*, *houl*.

§ 111. A is inflected into the secondary y by reason, 1, of number, as *mynach*, *menych*; 2 of person, as *attal*, *ettyl*.

§ 112. A is inflected into the primary y by usage, as *bach*, *bychan*.

§ 113. E is inflected by reason, 1, of person, into a, as *cerddaf*; into i, as *cerddi*; into o, as *cerddo*; into w, as *cerddwn*; into the secondary y, as *cerddy*; into ai, as *cerddai*; into ei, as *cerddei*; into wy, as *cerddwys*: all from the infinitive *cerdded*: 2, of dialect, into the secondary y, as *er doe, yr doe*; into i, as *er ieu, ir ieu*; into the primary y, as *gennyf, gynnyt*: 3, of number, into the secondary y, as *pabell, pebyll*; or into i, as *pebill*.

§ 114. I is inflected by reason 1 of person, into a, as *golchaf*; into e, as *golchem*; into o, as *golchodd*; into w, as *golchwn*; into the secondary y, as *golchynt*; into ai, as *golchais*; into ei, as *golchei*; into wy, as *golchwys*; from *golchi*: 2, of dialect, into the secondary y, as *iddynt, yddynt*; into u, as *uddynt*: 3, of usage, into e, as *Sais, Saeson*: 4, of gender, as *brith, braith*.

§ 115. O is inflected by reason, 1, of person, into a, as *curaf*; into e, as *curem*; into i, as *curi*; into w, as *curwn*; into the secondary y, as *curynt*; into ai, as *curai*; into ei, as *curei*; into wy, as *curwyf*; from the infinitive *curo*: 2, of number into e, as *abostol, ebestyl*; into a, as *troed, traed*; into the secondary y, as *torch, tyrch*.

§ 116. U is inflected by reason, 1, of person into a, as *caraf*; into e, as *carem*; into i, as *ceri*; into o, as *caro*; into w, as *carwn*; into the secondary y, as *cerych*; into aw, as *carawdd*; into wy, as *carwyf*; into ai, as *carai*; into ei, as *cerei*; all from *caru*: 2, of dialect, into i, as *union, inion*; into the secondary y, as *ynion*.

§ 117. W is inflected by reason, 1, of dialect, into o, as *gwer, goer*; 2, of gender, into o, as *trum, trom*; 3, of number into the secondary y, as *twrch, tyrch*; 4, of increment, into the primary y, as *mwg, mygu*.

§ 118. Y secondary is inflected by reason, 1, of dialect into a, as *eiry, eira*; into i, as *yddynt, iddynt*; into u, as *uddunt*; 2, of gender, into e, as *brych, brech*; 3, of augment, into the primary y, as *sych, sychder*.

§ 119. Y primary is inflected into a, as *py ddynt, pa ddynt*; into e, as *bychan, bechan*; into o, as *Hywel, Howel*.

§ 120. These vocalic inflections are not peculiar to our language. Traces of them are to be seen in Latin; e. g. the verbs *egeo, teneo, emo*, in their compounds regularly take i in the place of e. They are supposed to have been introduced first by a refined, and afterwards by an indolent habit of pronunciation. Thus the open a would first be delicately minced into e, and finally pronounced carelessly, in such a way as to give it an obscure sound similar to a short y, or as o in the English word *come* or *honey*. But doubtless in many instances they are the practical result of that principle, upon which, as we have assumed, language was originally formed; for instance, inasmuch as e involves an idea opposite to that of a, so *caraf*, which is in the present or future tense, becomes in the past, or reverse tense, *cerei*, in exact accordance with the theory in question. It may be observed, moreover, that mutations of vowels are now less arbitrary and unsettled than they were formerly.

SECTION X.

CONSONANTS (CYDSEINIAID.)

§ 121. The other letters are consonants, because they are sounded conjointly with the vowels.

§ 122. Some of the consonants are liquids, others are mutes.

§ 123. There are seven liquids, namely, d, f, l, m, n, r, s. And the reason why they are termed liquids, is, that in poetry they liquify or melt. And the way in which they melt is this; of two rotundison (talgronn) syllables, when y stands between two liquids, as in *mydyr*; or between a mute and a liquid, the mute being preceded by a vowel, as in *mygyr*, they form one sparsison (lleddf) syllable. If thus the vowel y be spelled between d and r, *mydyr* or *mygyr*, will be a word of two rotundison syllables. Accordingly, when a vocal song is written or spelled, the y is cast out of the syllable, and the words are spelled as if they were *mydr* and *mygr*; and thus a syllable like that in poetry, will be a single sparsison syllable.

§ 124. In like manner w and y become quiescent at the end of words when they follow a liquid; as *marw*, *cadw*, *salw*, *etry*, *hely*, which in poetry are pronounced as if they were written *mar*, *cad*, *sai*, *eir*, *hel*. This may be seen from the following couplet;

Marw vis hir? marw vu seren,
Val Enid, draw o Vlaen Tren. L. G. Cothi.

If the w in *marw* is to be accounted as a distinct syllable, the first line would consist of nine syllables, instead of seven, the number contained in the second, and required by the rules of poetry. Another way to prove the syllabic character of such words is to add to them a syllable; for instance, if ol be added to *marw*, the whole would be obviously a word of two syllables, *marwol*. Thus shewing plainly that previously it could have been but of one syllable.

Wylais achos marwolaeth. L. G. Cothi.

§ 125. It is said indeed that the sound of w (and probably y also) at the end of a rotundison word cannot be separated from that of the preceding letter—that it is not fortivocal (cadarneilwad.) E. g. *hwnnw*;

this is a word of two syllables, hwn-nw, and the sound of the final w is so intimately blended with the second n, that if this be removed, its concomitant necessarily vanishes, and *hwnw* would be pronounced as *hwn*.

§ 126. Nevertheless, as regards the y at least, there are several exceptions to this rule to be met with in the poets ; as,

Nid oedd ef drachynnefin	
A'r rhyw wely gwedy gwin.	Iolo.
Ni ddily hun-dy hen-dwyll.	Tudur Penllyn.
Oerfel uwch ben ei wely,	
A phoeth fo dy feistr o ffy.	Dafydd ap Gwilym.
Y taid fu'n cynnal y tŷ,	
Y tad, ac yntau wedy.	Simwnt Fychau.

§ 127. There are nine mutes, which are b, c, g, h, k, p, q, r, ll ; and the reason why they are called mutes, is, that their sound is but little as compared with the sound of the other letters.

§ 128. When there are two of them at the end of a syllable, as in *Brutt*, or one at the end, and a liquid going before, as in *tant*, *corc*, such a syllable is called a surd or mute syllable.

§ 129. Dafydd Ddu Athraw enumerates the following as the mutes, b, c, d, g, k, p, t, and observes that the way to distinguish the liquids and mutes respectively is to mark the position of the vocalic sound of the letter. If the vocalic sound be at the beginning, then the letter is a liquid, e. g. s ; but if at the end, then the letter is a mute, as b. It is from this criterion that we conclude that c and g, now popularly named *cc* and *eg*, were in his days called *ci* and *gi*.

§ 130. According to Dr. John Dafydd Rhys, the mutes were b, p, c, g, d, t, h ; but Dr. Owen Pughe makes them to be the following, b, c, g, h, p, ll, r, t.

§ 131. Consonants are further divided into *umbratiles*, (*gwysgodion*, *gwysgawd-lythyr*, *cysgod-lythyr*.) which are c, p, t, b, d, g, ll, m, rh. They are called *umbratiles* because they vanish like a shadow, and are succeeded by other powers, which rush into their places in the construction of sentences ; e. g.

Umbratiles	dislodged by	Sentences.
C	g, ngh, ch	Car, dy gar, fy nghar, ei char (fem.)
P	b, mh, ph	Pen, dy ben, fy mhen, ei phen (f.)
T	d, nh, th	Tad, dy dad, fy nhad, ei thad (f.)
B	f, m	Bara, dy fara, fy mara

Umbratiles	dislodged by	Sentences.
D	dd, n	Dafad, dy ddafad, fy nafad
G	— ng	Gwr, dy wr, fy ngwr
Ll	l	Llaw, dy law
M	f	Mam, dy fam
Rh	r	Rhaw, dy raw

§ 132. Dafydd Ddu Athraw adds k, though he considers it and c to be one and the same letter. Rh he omits altogether.

§ 133. Sometimes they are called *fore-cut letters*, (gwrthdrych lythyr,) because they are cut off in the beginning of words.

§ 134. *Predominants* (gorymmieid, gorddrechieid,) which are f, ph, ch, ng, ngh, dd, th, l, m, n, r, mh, nh, being so called because they prevail over the umbratiles, thrust them out of the sentence, and reign by their own power in their stead, as in the following instances ;—

Predominants.	Umbratiles.	Sentences.
F	b	Blawd, dy flawd
Ph	p	Ply, ei phly (fem.)
Ch	c	Coed, ei choed (f.)
Ng	g	Gafr, fy ngafr
Ngh	c	Carw, fy ngharw
Dd	d	Derw, dy dderw
Th	t	Tân, ei thân (f.)
L	ll	Llaw, dy law
M	b	Bwyd, fy mwyd
N	d	Dant, fy nant
R	rh	Rhaff, dy raff
Mh	p	Pen, fy mhen
Nh	t	Troed, fy nthroed

§ 135. *Ridden letters* (marchawgedigion, marchawg lythyr) or *coherents*, are l, n, r, and are so called because they frequently suffer other consonants at the beginning of words to ride them, as it were, they clinging to them without the intervention of a vowel :—thus,

Ridden.	Examples.
L	Blawd, cloch, glas, plaid
N	Cnau, gnawd
R	Bran, cri, drain, ffroen, pridd

§ 136. *Riders* (marchogion, marchogyddion, marchogeid) bestride the above without a vocalic saddle, and are the following : c, ngh, ch ; p, mh, ph ; t, nh, th ; b, f, m ; d, dd ; g.

Riders.	Examples.
C, ngh, ch	Cnau, fy nglod, ei chrys (fem.)
P, mh, ph	Pryd, fy mhryd, ei phlaid (f.)

D

Riders.	Examples.
T, nh, th	Tlws, fy nhlws, ei throed (f.)
B, f, m	Blawd, dwy flwydd, fy mrawd
D, dd	Drws, dau ddrws
G	Glew, gras

§ 137. Dr. John Dafydd Rhys adds s, and instances *snoden*, *stad*, *swoch*; but, properly speaking, s followed by a consonant never begins a word in the Welsh language; y is supposed to precede. Therefore *snoden* ought to be written *ynoden*; *stad*, *ystad*. In Dafydd Ddu's Grammar the letter s is not classed with the riders.

§ 138. These mutations must have been at work from the remotest period, certainly before the invention of those characters which represent them. Similar mutations occur also in the Sanscrit language, with this main difference, that it is the terminating consonants which in the latter generally undergo the change; though we are not without instances of such changes in the Cymric language, as *deng mlwydd*, *ten years*, *ying nghanol*, *in the middle*. The substitution of *οἶνω* for *φοίνω*, *Ἑσπερος* for *Φέσπερος*, *ἐπτά* for *σепτά*, *ἔξ* for *σέξ*, *ὕς* and *ἔρω* for *ὄς* and *σέρω*, might lead us to suppose that the Greek language likewise had originally a regular mutation of initial consonants, similar to that of the Celtic.

§ 139. To trace the rise and progress of these mutations in the language of the Cymry is not easy, for we are not sure whether the people pronounced the words exactly as they were written in old MSS., or whether they did not utter the proper modifications, where necessary, though they might not have been in all cases expressed; just as we know now when to give its different sounds to the letter y. The probability is that the mutations somewhat preceded the invention of the secondary characters of the Bards respectively, as described in the section on "the origin and progress of letters," though representatives of mutates might not for a long time afterwards have been devised or selected from among the Roman letters.

§ 140. *Liquesparsion pales* (cledyr tawddleddf) are d, dd, l, n, r, s. They are so designated because vowels are enwrapped about them, as pales are interwoven with twigs, as in the following words:—

D	Cadw
Dd	Gweddw
L	Elw
N	Enw
R	Erw
S	Asw

§ 141. Consonants are moreover divided, according to the organs used in producing them, into gutturals, palatals, dentals and labials.

§ 142. The gutturals, or those formed in the throat, are c, ch, g, ng.

§ 143. The palatals, or those formed near the roof of the mouth, are l, ll, r.

§ 144. The dentals, or those in forming which the tongue approaches the teeth, are d, dd, n, s, t, th.

§ 145. The labials, or those which are pronounced with the lips, are b, f, ff, m, p, ph.

§ 146. Ll possesses the power of two l's; x the power of cs. Z is a Greek letter, and has no place in the Cymric language. H, in respect of poetry, is nothing but the symbol of deep breathing; nevertheless, it is requisite in the Cymraeg when the same is being read.

§ 147. In the Erse dialect, the H is never the first or proper initial of any word; the corresponding letter being F or S, which change in a secondary form, or in regimine, into H. Hence it has been inferred that in the primitive form of these words they began with F or S, and that cognate words which began with H, in other dialects, the Cymraeg among them, have lost their proper initial. It is not, however, improbable that the Cymric prefix *ys*, which has an affirmative or emphatic force, is identical with the initial S of the Irish, and that it was formerly used in words of this description; e. g. Erse, *salam*, q. d. Cymraeg, *ys-halen*, *salt*.

§ 148. Not only does the h aspirate some of the consonants, as has been seen especially in the case of the predominants, but under certain circumstances it has the same effect also upon all the vowels.

§ 149. It is maintained, indeed, by some philologists, that the aspiration was originally the constant attendant of, at least, the textual vowels, intended for description, and that they were pronounced as ha, he, hi, ho. And we see something like a relic of such a custom in the Annotations inserted in the Book of St. Chad, which were written about the commencement of the 9th century; thus,

“ Douceint torth hamaharuin in irham, haduceint torth in irgaem, ha huch, ha douceint mannudenn.” (Lib. Land. p. 272.)

In modern orthography, “ Deugain torth a maharen yn yr haf, a deugain torth yn y gauaf, a hwch, a deugain manwdden.”

§ 150. Grammarians remark of the letter F, that it is placed at the end of words in three cases only; viz. at the end of the first person singular of a verb, as *af*, *caraf*; *wyf*, *carwyf*; at the end of a noun which tends to its plural, as *tref*, *trefydd*; *cryf*, *cryfion*, or to its extension, as *haf*, *hafydd*; and at the end of an adjective in the superlative degree, as *teccaf*, *haelaf*, *glanaf*—*gorau* being an exception. (See “ Y Pum Llyfr Kerddwriaeth.”)

§ 151. Q is a Latin letter, and though admitted into Edeyrn's Alphabet, it is never used in Cymraeg, its power being expressed by cw, as in *cwestiwn*. Instead of k also we now invariably use c, as in *Habaccuc*. E. Lhuysd remarks that the letter k never occurs in our oldest

MSS. but that it was introduced in course of time by the Normans. About the year 1200, it was constantly used as an initial, and c as the termination of certain words, and thus it continued until about 1500, when it was altogether omitted.

§ 152. We will conclude this part of the Grammar on the subject of letters with specimens of the different styles of orthographies which were employed by the Cymry at various times subsequently to the departure of the Romans—as gathered from existing monuments and MSS.

§ 153. The Stone of St. Cadfan, 6th century,
Cincencelen areruncdubutmarciau,
Tengrucimalted guadgan marth molt clode tuar
triset nitanam.

In modern orthography,

Cyngen celain ar tu rhwng dybydd marciau,
Tan grug cyfal tedd Gadfan marth moled clod y ddaear,
Triged nid anaf.

§ 154. A MS. at Cambridge, under the title of *Juvenus*; written in the 7th century according to E. Lhuyd. “*Archæologia*,” p. 224.

Nignorcosam nemheunaur henoio mitelu nit gurmaur mi
amfranc dam ancalaur.

In modern orthography,

Ni worchysaf ni'm hunawr—heno
Fy nheulu nid gorfawr,
Mi a'm Ffranc, daw, a'm callawr.

§ 155. Oxford glosses written in the 8th or beginning of 9th century,
Dir arpeteticion ceintiru. Ni ceinguodeimissuch. Hin map
diiob. ætinet bronnbreithet.

In modern orthography,

Dir arbededigion cefndyrw. Ni gain oddefasoch.
Yn fab i Iou. Ednod bronnbreithedd.

§ 156. Annotations in the Book of St. Chad; 9th century,

Surrexit tutbulc filius liuit hagenar tutri dierchim tir telch
haioid ilan elcu filius gelhig haluidt iuguaert amgucant wel can-
tamidi hodiv dipro tant gener tutri o guir imgudant irdegion
guragun tage rotetit elcu guetig equus tres uache tres uache
nouidligi namir nibe cas igridu dimedichat guetig did braut
grefiat guetig nis min i tutbulc hai cenetl in ois oisouth.

That is,

Surrexit Tudfwlch filius Lliwydd a Gener tuddri i erchi tir
Teilo a oedd yn llaw Elcu filius Gallig a'i lwyth; i'w wared
am geucant pell gan dammeidiau a ddifrodant Gener tuddri a'i
wyr. Ymgodant y degion wr ag hwynt, ac y rhoddod i Elcu
weddig equus tres fuwch, tres fuwch newyddloi, naw mil efo
caseg rudd i'w dyfedigaeth. Gweddig hyd ddydd brawd creffiad;
gweddig nis myn i Tudfwlch a'i genedl yn oes oesoedd.

§ 157. The Black Book of Chirk, a MS. of the early part of the
12th century,

Puybennac aguenel kam emeun ecluys arall talet seyth punt
e neyll hanner yr efeyryat ar llall yr person.

That is, in the orthography of the present day,

Pwy bynnag a wnel gam y mew'n eglwys arall taled saith
punt ; y naill hanner i'r offeiriad, a'r llall i'r person.

§ 158. The Black Book of Carmarthen, a MS. of the end of the 12th
or beginning of the 13th century,

Dricun i mynit avonit igniw
Gulichid lliw llaur trewit
Neut gueilgi gvelid i'r elvit.

That is,

Drychin y mynydd afonydd—yng nghanif
Gwlychid llif llawr trefydd,
Neud gweilgi gweled yr elfydd.

—Arduireane Dev

Yssi vn a deu. yssi tri heb
ev. heb hant y amhev. aw
naith fruih afreu afop
aurifreu.

that is

Arddwyreaf fi Dduw

Y sy un a dau,

Y sy dri heb au,

Heb hawdd ei ammhau,

A wnaeth firwyth a ffrau,

A phob amryffrau.

§ 159. From a specimen of ancient orthography, at the end of a
copy of the Welsh Laws, a MS. of the 13th century,

Mae elle tal estraun o alanas kemint abraut enelle cenicier ar
alanas maab ad duco iuam ikenedel arall o kan i eneb aueicus
drostau.

In modern orthography,

Mae y lle y tal estrawn o alanas cymmaint a brawd yn y lle
cynhygier ar alanas mab a ddycco ei fam i genedl arall y gan
y neb a feichws drosto.

§ 160. From the general text of the same MS. of Laws,

Gwedŷ daruo eisted yn gyfreithŷaul mal y dywedassam nŷ
uchot ŷna y mae ŷaun dywednyŷt urth ŷ duŷbleit ymduweduch.

That is,

Gwedi darfo eistedd yn gyfreithiawl, mal y dywedassom ni
uchod, ŷna y mae iawn dywedyd wrth y ddwyblaid, ymddy-
wedwch.

§ 161. A MS. copy of the Welsh Laws of about the middle of the
13th century,

Enep a holo ypenkynydd keisied yodiwes arywely bore diw
kalanmei.

That is,

Y neb a holo y pencynydd ceisied ei oddiwes ar ei wely bore
dydd calanmai.

§ 162. The Meddygon Myddfai ; a MS. of the 13th century,

Rhiwallavn ay veibon, nyt amgen Cadvgon a Gruffut ac
Eynon—aoedynt oreu a phennaf or medygon.

That is,

Rhiwallawn a'i feibion, nid amgen, Cadwgan, a Gruffydd, ac
Einion—aoeddynt oreu a phennaf o'r meddygon.

§ 163. A MS. copy of the History of the Kings of Britain, apparently of the beginning of the 14th century,

Ediuar yʋ gennyu dala yth erbyn ti pan vu yr ymlad rot a Chaswallawn an brenin ni.

That is,

Edifar yw gennyf ddala i'th erbyn di, pan fu yr ymladd rhyngddot & Chaswallawn ein brenhin ni.

§ 164. The Book of the Anchorite of Llan Ddewi Brefi, written in the year 1346,

Lyma synhvyr euegyl Ieuan ebostol, hervyd ydyall ar synhvyr arodes duv yr neb ae troes o ladin ygkymraec.

In our present orthography thus,

Llyma synwyr Efengyl Ieuan Apostol, herwydd y deall a'r synwyr a roddes Duw i'r neb a'i troes o Ladin yn Gymraeg.

SECTION XI.

OF SYLLABLES.

§ 165. Since syllables are formed from letters, it is necessary to know what a syllable is, and how syllables are distinguished.

§ 166. A syllable is an assemblage of several letters put together. Nevertheless a syllable, or even a word sometimes, may consist of only one letter, such as *a* and *o* and *i* and *y*; some are of two, as *af*, or *ef*, or *da*, or *mi*, and several others; some are of three, as *aur*, and *mab*, and many others; some are of four, as *carn*, *barn*, *cerdd*, and a great many besides; some are of five, as *gwers*; and some are of six, as *gwnawn*, *gwnaed*, *braint*, and many more; some are of seven, as *gwnaeth*, or rather, *gwnaent*, (for *th*, like *dd*, or *ll*, is but one letter;) and there are never any more letters in one syllable than these.

SECTION XII.

DIVISION OF SYLLABLES.

§ 167. A syllable is considered as a *lath-fesur*, or measuring rod, in respect of words, and is of two kinds, *vocalic* and *diphthongal*. A vocalic syllable is that which is formed of one or more of the vowels. It may have a free vowel, as *ffa*, *pla*, or else a vowel bounded by a single consonant, as *llen*, *cor*, or by several consonants, as *lenn*, *corr*.

§ 168. A diphthongal syllable is that which consists of a diphthong, either free, as *llaw*, *llew*, or bounded by one or more consonants, as *llawr*, *pwynl*. They are indiscriminately enumerated by Edeyrn

§ 169. Some of the syllables are *gravison*, (trwm,) some are *levison*, (ysgafn.) A gravison syllable is that which has two consonants of the same kind at the end, as *gwenn*, *llenn*. Some syllables also are *rotundison*. A rotundison syllable is that which has but one single vowel, whatever number of consonants may either follow or precede the vowel, as *glan*, *glud*, *nant*, *perth*, and many others.

§ 170. It is called rotundison, because it is pronounced roundly and compactly. Hence it is that the vocalic rotundison has never more than one vowel, and one colligation of sound.

§ 171. Sparsison. A syllable becomes sparsison in three ways. First, when there are two vowels together in the syllable, and one inclines somewhat towards the other, as *glwys*, *moes*, or thus, *ae*, *oe*, *ai*, *wy*, as *gwy*, *gwyth*; and, as *trai*, *traith*. And these are the four *crook-headed sparsison diphthongs*, (dipton-pengam-leddf.)

§ 172. *Ai* is to be taken in the preceding diphthongal list as convertible with *ei*.

§ 173. Attention must be paid, in respect of the two foregoing diphthongs *ae* and *oe*, to the manner in which they are separated, and also to the manner in which they are joined together into one syllable. For observe, when they are in a word of several syllables, as *Cymraeg*, then they are separated into rotundison syllables; but when they are in a monosyllabic word, as *gwaeg*, *Groeg*, then they are joined together into one sparsison syllable.

§ 174. Secondly, when *y*, not written, is in the obscure sound between two of the consonants, as

mygr, *mydr* : such a syllable as one of these is called *forti-sparsison* (cadarn-leddf.) And such a syllable as *ghoys*, is called *crook-headed sparsison*, because one of the vowels bends its head towards the other.

§ 175. It must be observed, further, how the two vowels stand in the syllable, whether conjointly or separately. If they stand conjointly, as in *gwŷr*, it is a rotundison syllable, but if separately, as in *gŵyr*, then it is a sparsison syllable.

§ 176. In the second way, 'then, that a syllable becomes sparsison, it is called *forti-sparsison*, as *torf*, *mygr*, *mydr*; and this form is called *forti-sparsison* because of the liquids that are in the syllables; and *forti*, or strong, because they have in them two consonants coming together.

§ 177. The third way in which a syllable becomes sparsison is, when *y* or *w* follows a liquid, preceded by a vowel; *y*, as *eiry*, *w*, as *ceirw*. In this case, when verse is syllabized, the *y* or *w* is left out. And such syllables as these are called *liquesparsison*, (tawdd-leddf.) on account of the liquids that are in the syllables.

§ 178. The instances given to exemplify this rule are perhaps more applicable to the *liquesparsison diphthong*, which is afterwards separately described, than to the simple vocalic *liquesparsison*; *boly*, *carw*, *salw*, would have been better here.

§ 179. A diphthongal syllable is that which has two vowels together in one syllable, as in *llaw*, *llew*.

§ 180. There are two kinds of diphthongs, that is to say, a rotundison diphthong, and a sparsison diphthong.

§ 181. There are five rotundison diphthongs, namely, *aw*, *ew*, *iw*, *yw*, *uw*; *aw*, as in *llaw*; *ew*, as in *llew*; *iw*, as in *lliw*; *yw*, as in *llyw*; *uw*, as in *Duoc*. *Eu* likewise is a rotundison diphthong, as in *cleu*; it is a diphthong which is not opposed by any alternity of rhyme, (proest.) It

is hence called a *wandering diphthong*, (dipton wib,) because it has nothing to respond to in a rhythmical alternity.

§ 182. And not only eu but au, as when the word is written *clau*.

§ 183. There are but two vagirotundison diphthongs, (dipton talgron wib ;) the one free, as *clau*, or *cleu*, the other bounded by a consonant, as *aur*, or *eur*. They are called *wandering*, because they wander obliquely, not having any thing to correspond with, the former in an alternity, the latter in a unirythm.

§ 184. In such words as *phrautr* and *phreutr*, the diphthongs au and eu, are called vagisparsison, (wibledfawg.)

§ 185. There are four sparsison diphthongs, namely ae, oe, ei, wy; ae, as in *cae*; oe, as in *doe*; ei, as in *trei*; wy, as in *mwy*.

§ 186. To which ai, oi, and ey, are added in Dr. J. D. Rhys's Grammar: ai, as in *tai*; oi, as in *toi*; ey, as in *teyrn*.

§ 187. We must observe, however, in reference to those two sparsison diphthongs ae and oe, how they are separated, and how they are joined together in one syllable. Accordingly, let it be remarked; when they occur in a pollysyllabic word, that is, in a word of many syllables, they ought to be distinguished into separate syllables, and each of them will be a rotundison syllable, as *Cymraeg*. But when they are in a monosyllabic word, they must needs be pressed together, so as to form a sparsison diphthong of one syllable, as *gwaed*, *Groeg*; and yet it is not properly a diphthong, for it is by a mere accident that h is not found between them.

§ 188. We must also see how the two vowels stand in the syllable, in regard to their pronunciation, whether conjointly or separately; if the latter, then it is a sparsison syllable, as *gŵyr*, or *gŵyl*; but if they are pronounced conjointly, as *gwŷr*, or *gwŷr*, it is a rotundison syllable, for here the w loses its power and tone, being squeezed, as it were, in the bosom of g.

§ 189. A syllable that terminates with three of the vowels together, or that hath in it three [two?] vowels together, which are not diphthongs; namely,

when *i* or *y* precedes another vowel, as *Iór*, *ywrch*, and the like, is called a *strange diphthong*, (dipton ddi-eithr.)

§ 190. It is called *strange*, as having a sound different to that of the genuine diphthongs; or according to Dafydd Ddu, because a rotundison syllable can rhyme with every one.

§ 191. With respect to such syllables; when a word has two vowels in the middle, the former vowel being long, owing to the accent, that is to say, the pronunciation of the word, as in *Gwenlliant*, it is called in a metrical composition *a vowel before a vowel*, (bogail ymlaen bogail.)

§ 192. When a syllable terminates with a fortisparsison, [liquesparsison ?] and begins with a finicurvisparsison, as *ceidw*, it is called a liquesparsison diphthong, (dipton dawddleddf.)

§ 193. When a syllable terminates with a liquesparsison, and begins with a surd, as *cwllodr*, it is called a surdisparsison, (byddarleddf.)

§ 194. When *w* or *y* precedes a diphthong, whether rotundison or sparsison, they are considered as but one syllable, which is called a *tailed diphthong*, (dipton losgyrniog,) as *dioer*, *dyawl*, and such syllables.

§ 195. The *i* in the former word is to be regarded as equivalent to *y*; q.d. *dyoer*.

§ 196. When *i* proper and *w* precede a wandering diphthong, as *iaw*, *waw*, the same is called a *tailed wandering diphthong*, (dipton losgyrniog wib,) and sometimes a *strange wandering diphthong* (dipton ddieithrwib.)

§ 197. When a syllable begins with a finicurvisparsison, and ends with a fortisparsison, having two vowels together, and the one inclining somewhat towards the other, as *lleidr*, *Lloegr*, it is called a fortisparsison diphthong.

§ 198. A syllable, which concludes with an assemblage of two or three vowels; or that which contains two or three vowels, its beginning terminating in a sparsison or finicurvisparsison, and its end terminating in a rotundison diphthong, as *hoys*, *gloys*, *grays*, *gwys*, is called a rotundisparsison diphthong, (dipton dalgronleddf,) as in the following

Example :

Pwy a saif wrth y laif loyw,
Am y firwyth yn nyffryn *Maiw* !
Gwas a wânt hirwenn â *gwaww*,
Llyffant o nwyffant yn *wyw*. Dr. J. D. Rhys, p. 140.

§ 199. A syllable, which is composed of two mutes of the same kind, preceded by a vowel, as *bratt*, *brutt* ; or of a liquid and mute after a vowel, as *tant*, *corc* ; or of the letter ll after a vowel, as *pall*, *coll*, *poll*, is called a *mute or surd rotundison* syllable, (talgronnfud neu fyddar.)

§ 200. A syllable that terminates with four consonants, having the obscure pronunciation of the mutescient y between each, as *baldrs*, *colprs*, *Phlandrs*, is called *confertisparison*, (talgronnleddf or talgronn-gadr.)

§ 201. When a syllable has the letters n, s, or a mute after r, as *barn*, *cars*, *pare*, *carp*, it is a *gravisparison* (tromleddf.)

§ 202. A syllable, which has a letter of a thick crisp sound after r, as *serck*, *perth*, *serph*, *cyrck*, *carth*, is called a *crisp-headed sparsison* syllable (penngrechleddf.) When there are two vowels in the syllable, as in *seirth*, *seirph*, *ceirck*, it is designated a *crisp-headed sparsison* diphthong.

§ 203. A syllable which begins *strangely* and ends with a mute, as *lorc*, *isrerp*, is called a *strange and mute diphthong*, (dipton ddiethrfud.)

§ 204. When a syllable begins with a *finicurvisparison*, and has a mute or surd ending, as *braint*, *saint*, *deint*, it is called a *mute or surd rotundison* diphthong, (d. dalgronnfud neu fyddar.)

§ 205. Every syllable ending in ll, is called *mute or surd*.

§ 206. A syllable which begins with a *finicurvisparison*, has a surd in the centre, and terminates with a *fortisparison*, as *pwynll*, is called a *surdisparison* diphthong.

§ 207. A syllable which has its beginning strange, and ends with a *fortisparison* or *gravisparison*, as *siapr*, *siars*, is called *alienisparison*, (dieithrleddf.)

§ 208. When a syllable begins with a *finicurvisparison*, and ends with a *gravisparison*, as *beirn*, *ceirs*, *gwern*, it is called a *gravisparison* diphthong.

§ 209. That is called a *tailed rotundison* diphthong, which is furnished with a tail, and has a sound different from that of a genuine or proper diphthong ; as *gwialen*, *gwielyn*, *chwiorydd*.

§ 210. The division of syllables is more systematically arranged in the following :

TABLE I.

A syllable is twofold	Vocalic.	Curt rotundison, (Talgronn gwta.)	Levison, as <i>lén, glán, glúd, glás, cás, tán, sých, tón.</i> Gravison, as <i>lenn, carr, corr, cann, mann, honn, tonn, tann.</i>		
		Sparsison.	Confertisparsison, as <i>Phlandrs, colprs, baldrs.</i> Gravisparsison, as <i>cors, barn, cern, sarn, cyrs, baldrs, colprs, phlandrs.</i> Sparsison finicrisp, as <i>serch, arch, perth, corph, sarph.</i> Fortisparsison, as <i>mydr, mygr, hagr, gogr, talm, llyfn, torr.</i> Liquesparsison, as <i>carw, marw, garw, boly.</i> Surdisparsison, as <i>cwlltr, puntr, pantl.</i>		
		Mute rotundison ; as <i>bratt, carp, cnapp, brutt, tant, cerdd, parc, pall.</i> Vowel before a vowel ; as <i>Cymraeg, Gwennlliant.</i>			
Diphthongal	Rotundison.	Stable, (diwib.)	Curt, i. e. aw, ew, iw, yw, uw ; as <i>llaw, llew, lliw, llyw, Duw.</i>		
			Tailed, i. e. iaw, eaw, waw, iew, wow, iow, wiw, wuw, wyw, wew ; as <i>diawl, creawdwr, wawch, iewdod, wowch, iownder, chwíw, gwúw, gwyw, gwewlach.</i>		
		Wandering	Curt, or au, eu ; as <i>aur, hau, claw, phrautr, euraid, heu, cleu, phreutr.</i> It is also called vagirotundison. But in <i>phrautr</i> and <i>phreutr</i> , the au and eu are vagisparsison diphthongs.		
			Tailed, i. e. iau, ieu, wan, wew ; as <i>iau, gwau, ieu, gwuudd.</i> It goes also by the name of alienivagison. [<i>gwyn.</i>]		
		Sparsison.	Genuine, (rhywiog.)	Levison ; i. e. wa, we, wi, wy ; as <i>gwán, gwén, gwín, Gravison ; i. e. wa, we, wy ; as gwann, gwenn, gwynn, gwynnach.</i>	
				Mutually trodden, (ymsathredig.)	Curt, i. e. ae, oe, ai, oi ; as <i>cae, tai, toi.</i> Tailed ; iae, ioe, iai, ioi, wae, wai, woe, woi ; as <i>meddyginiath, ioedeb, iaith, dioer, ioider, gwaeth, gwaith.</i>
				Not mutually trodden (diym-sathredig.)	Curt ; ei, ey, wy ; as <i>lleí, trei, teyrn, pwy, mwy.</i> Tailed ; iei, iey ; as <i>ieithydd</i> and <i>ieythydd.</i>
				Rotundisparsison ; oew, aiw, wyw ; as <i>gloew, maiw, gwyw.</i> And oyw ; as <i>hoyw.</i>	
				Levisparsison, or finicurvisparsison ; wy, ai ; as <i>glwys, glam.</i>	
				Gravisparsison ; wa, we, ei, oe, &c. ; as <i>gwarp, gwers, beirn, Groeg.</i> [<i>ieírl.</i>]	
Crisp-headed sparsison ; as <i>ceirch, seirph, eirch.</i>					
Fortisparsison ; as <i>lleidr, Lloegr, brwydr, beirdd.</i>					
Degenerate and strange, (afrywiog a dieithr.)	Sparsison.	Liquesparsison ; as <i>ceirw, ceidw, eiry, meirw.</i>			
		Alienisparsison ; as <i>siapr, siars.</i>			
		Surdisparsison ; as <i>puynl, puyntr.</i> [<i>iyrchod.</i>]			
		Curt rotundison ; as <i>iar, ieched, ior, iudas, iwrch.</i> Tailed rotundison ; <i>gwialen, gwielyn, chworiydd.</i>			

§ 211. Another division of syllables, very much used by the poets, is as follows :

TABLE II.

A syllable is three-fold, viz.	Wholly a	Rotundison	{	Diphthong Sparsison Curt	
		Sparsison	{	Finicurvisparsison Fortisparsison Liquesparsison	
		Diphthong	{	Rotundison Sparsison Wandering	
		A Mixed diphthong, (dipton gymmysg.)	{	Rotundisparsison Liquesparsison Finicurvisparsison	
		A Wonderful diphthong, (dipton ryfedd.)	{	Strange Tailed Wandering	
		A Singularicine, (oditganiad, odidog-gan- iad.)	{	Rotundisparsison Tailed	} dipthong
		A Forticine, (cadarn-ganiad.)	{	Surdisparsison syllable Gravisparsison Fortisparsison Surdisparsison	
		A Levicine, (ysgafn-ganiad.)	{	Rotundison Finicurvisparsison Mute	
		An Unrhythmic diphthong, (dipton ni cheir proest a'i hattebo.)	{	Liquesparsison Rotundisparsison Wandering	
		An Alienated, (dieithredig.)	{	Strange Wandering	} dipthong
	A Parordic diphthong, (dipton gymmeriad.)	{	Vowel before a vowel Rotundisparsison Finicurvisparsison Liquesparsison		

SECTION XIII.

ACCIDENTS OF SYLLABLES.

§ 212. Five things belong to a syllable ; viz. quantity, (hyd or cyhydedd ;) weight, (pwys ;) accent, (accen ;) breathing, (anadl ;) and quality, (anian.)

§ 213. Some of the syllables are long, and some are short. A long syllable has two times, and a short syllable one time ; because it takes a longer time to pronounce a long syllable, than it would to pronounce a short syllable.

§ 214. When *n* follows *r*, as in *barn*, or *s* follows *r*, as in *cors*, *gwors*; or when a mute follows *r*, as in *cwrt*, *swrth*, it is called a *gravisparsison*, and is long, and has two times. Every rotundison syllable is short, and has but one time, whether it be a rotundison diphthong, or any other rotundison syllable, so that it be a rotundison diphthong or any other rotundison syllable. In like manner some of the sparsison syllables are longer than others in respect of the measure of letters and times which belong to them. The utterance of syllables is thereby understood.

§ 215. Where it is said that every rotundison syllable is short, it ought to have been added that every sparsison syllable is long.

§ 216. Some maintain that a diphthongal rotundison is longer than a simple vocalic rotundison. It is, moreover, quite evident that some sparsison syllables have more than two times; thus e. g. *Phlandre* has three.

§ 217. The number of letters in a syllable is from one to seven.

§ 218. Weight. Some syllables are grave, as *Gwenn*; and some are light, as *gwên*.

§ 219. Accent. The accents are three in number; ascending, as *Gwennlliant*; descending, as *gofwy*; and a circumflex, as *glwys*, *pwys*.

§ 220. Breathing is of two kinds; rough, (crych,) as *serch*, *sarph*, *serth*; and smooth, (llyfn,) as *têg*, *tâl*.

§ 221. The quality of a syllable is likewise twofold; sparsison, as *géyr*, *lláyr*, which is soft by nature; and rotundison, as *gwŷr*, *gwêr*, which is naturally rough.

SECTION XIV.

LOSS OF PROPER ACCENT.

§ 222. A syllable loses its proper accent under six circumstances.

1. When it is compounded with another syllable, for in that case it changes its nomenclature, and instead of *ascending* becomes *descending*, and thus it loses its proper accent; for the proper accent of every syllable is an ascending accent. Thus in *Gwennlloer*, (llo-er,) the *o* was originally ascending, whereas in composition, *oe*, it is totally different.

2. When three syllables are constructed together, as *careidig* (caru-aidig,) from *caru*. This word is called circumflexed.

3. When four syllables are constructed together into one word. In that case the first is deprived altogether of its accent; as *yspad-ydden*.

4. When the symbol of breathing, viz. h, occurs, which causes a polysyllabic word to have the ascending accent ; as when it is put between the two last syllables ; e. g. *cadarnhau*, from the word *cadarn*.

5. When a syllable is divided ; that is, for instance, when a syllable, usually written as one syllable, is divided at the accent ; as in these words, *galaath*, *yspaas*, *ystoor*, *ystaad*, for *galáth*, *yspás*, *ystór*, *ystádd*.

6. When syllables are so compounded together, as to lose their weight. This causes a gravitone syllable, as *Gwenn*, *llenn*, *carr*, *corr*, to lay aside its weight. For when it is compounded with one or more syllables, as *meiwenn*, *purleision*, *caedigion*, it then loses its proper weight or gravity, and it may rhyme either with a gravison or with a levison syllable.

SECTION XV.

WORDS.

§ 223. Of the syllables are formed complete words ; wherefore it is necessary that we should know what words are.

§ 224. A syllable is called the measuring rod (*llath-fesur*) of a word. According to ancient grammars, words varied from one to seven syllables ; e. g.

- | | |
|----------------|------------------------|
| 1, Aur, | 5, Ysgyfarnogod, |
| 2, Ariant, | 6, Ysgrifenedigaeth, |
| 3, Gwinwydden, | 7, Ysgrifenedigaethau. |
| 4, Yspadydden, | |

§ 225. This number was considered as the maximum ; but in reality we find words composed of as many as eight, and even nine syllables ; as

- 8, Anghyfnewidioledigaeth. 9, Anghyfnewidioledigaethau.

SECTION XVI.

CLASSIFICATION OF WORDS.

§ 226. Words may be divided into *elementaries*, *primitives*, *derivatives*, and *compounds*.

§ 227. Elementary words are subdivided into three classes :

- 1, consisting of vowels only.
- 2, ————— of a vowel and a consonant.
- 3, ————— of a consonant and a vowel.

§ 228. They are all included in the following table :

CLASS 1.

a, e, i, o, w, y,

ae ai an aw—ei eu ew—ia ie io iw—oe oi ow—wi wy—yw=23.

CLASS 2.

Ab ac ach ad add af aff ag ang al all am an ar as at ath—
eb ec ed edd ef eff eg eng el ell em en er es eth—ib ic ich
id idd if iff ig ing il ill im in ir is it ith—ob oc och od odd of og ong ol
oll om on or os ot oth—ub uch ud udd uf uff ul ull um un ur us ut
uth—wb wch wd wdd wf wff wg wng wl will wm wn wr ws wt wth—
yb ych yd ydd yf yff yg yl yll ym yn yr ys yth=109.

CLASS 3.

Ba be bi bo bu bw by—ca ce ci co cu cw cy—da de di do du dw dy
—ffa ffe ffi ffo ffu ffw ffy—ga ge gi go gu gw gy—ha he hi ho hu hw
hy—lla lle lli llo llu llw lly—ma me mi mo mu mw my—na ne ni no
nu nw ny—pa pe pi po pu pw py—rha rhe rhi rho rhu rhw rhy—sa
se si so su sw sy—ta te ti to tu tw ty=91.

Total 23, 109, 91=223.

§ 229. The number of elements in the foregoing table amounts to two hundred and twenty three. Out of these seventy-eight are words of defined and common acceptation ; that is to say, they are used as names for some actions, qualities, or things.

§ 230. The remaining one hundred and forty-five do not in their unconnected state appear so evidently as absolute names ; but in their combined forms we discover them as signs of abstract ideas, from which we may infer in what manner they originally stood absolutely for the names of things, like the others.

§ 231. Primitives are generally formed of two elementary roots, as pen, (py-hen ;) hâd, (hy-ad ;) llaw, (lly-aw.) In the formation of primitive words, the vowel of the least emphatic element, is absorbed in that of the predominant one ; and thus both become a word of one syllable ; as hy-al, hal ; car, cy-ar.

§ 232. Derivatives are such as enter into combination either with prefixes, or with suffixes, or with both.

§ 233. As a general rule, when a prefix is followed by a mutable consonant, that consonant is dislodged by a soft predominant ; as *di-fedydd*, from *dî* and *bedydd*. Many exceptions occur, as the change of *d* into *t*, in *cyttir*, from *cyd* and *tîr* ; and the assumption of the aspirate predominant after *tra*, *a*, and *gor* ; and of the nasal predominant after *an* and *cy* ; but the general power of the prefixes will be pointed out in the list which follows. The initials *ll* and *rh* are particularly liable to irregularity.

§ 234. The letters *r*, *s*, *n*, *a*, are intended to represent the words *radical*, *soft*, *nasal*, *aspirate* ; *e* denotes the *extraordinary* or unusual mutation of a soft consonant into its relative aspirate.

SECTION XVII.

PREFIX DERIVATIVES.

§ 235. A, augmentative, or emphatic ; a. as achadw, *to preserve*, from a and cadw, *to keep* ; athrwm, *very heavy*, from a and trwm, *heavy* ; s. as aball, *a failing*, from a and pall, *defect* ; r. as aban, *uproar*, from a and ban, *loud*.

§ 236. Ab, aptly ; s. as abrwyg, *unwieldy*, from a and rhwyg, *sway*.

§ 237. Ach, being close upon, enhansive ; s. as achles, *succour*, from ach and lles, *benefit*.

§ 238. Ad, (Erse, ad-aith) repetition, iteration ; equivalent to the Latin re ; s. as adbrynu, *to redeem*, from ad and brynu, *to buy* ; adwerthu, *to retail*, from ad and gwerthu, *to sell*. In some words it implies negation or contrariety, as adfudd, *loss*, from ad and budd, *advantage*. In this case it would seem to be the mutate of ed ; which see.

§ 239. Add, enhansive, in continuity ; s. as added, *ripe*, from add and med, *mature* ; addwyr, *inclining*, from add and gwyr, *crooked*.

§ 240. Af, (an, am, a mutate of em=Lat. in ; Eng. un,) void, destitute, negative ; s. as aflan, *unclean*, from af and glan, *clean*.

§ 241. Al, enhansive ; r. as albrys, *great haste*, from al and brys, *haste*.

§ 242. All, (Lat. alius, Gr. ἄλλος ; a mutate of ell,) being outward or other ; s. as allwladu, *to banish*, from all and gwlad, *a country* ; and r. as alltud, a foreigner, from all and tud, *a region*.

§ 243. Am, (Gr. ἀμφι ; Lat. am. "Am præpositio loquelaris significat circum." Festus.) encompassing ; s. as amgaeru, *to immure on every side*, from am and caer, *a wall*. It is also a mutation of an (=em,) as ammharch, *disrespect*, from am=an and parch, *respect*.

§ 244. An, (=am, em,) destitute, negative ; n. as annyledus, *undue*, from an and dyledus, *due* ; annhebyg, *unlike*, from an and tebyg, *like* ; anghall, *unwise*, from an and call, *wise* ; ammrwd, *unboiled*, from an and brwd, *hot*. It retains its original form and import in an-rhydedd.

§ 245. Ang, narrow, confined ; s. as angladd, *a funeral*, from ang and lladd, *to kill*.

§ 246. Ar, being upon, enhansive ; s. as arbrin, *very scarce*, from ar and prin, *scarce* ; arwydd, *a sign*, from ar, and gwydd, *wood*, a wood engraving.

§ 247. As, divergent, separating ; a mutate of es ; s. as asgwn, *humble*, from as and cwn, *a summit*.

§ 248. At, a mutation of ad ; e. as attal, *to withhold*, from at and dal, *to hold*.

§ 249. Cy, cyd, or cyt, cyf, cym, cyn, cys, conjunctive, mutual ; and are of the same force as the English prefixes con, com, cor, col,

and like them their use in composition is governed by euphony ; as n. cymmhlethu, *to interweave*, from cym and plethu, *to wreath* ; cyn-nghlwyf, *contagion*, from cyn, and clwyf, *a wound* ; cynhebyg, *similar*, from cyn and tebyg, *like* ; s. as cyfaeth, *consuetudine*, from cy and maeth, *nurture* ; cyd-ddwyn, *to bear with*, from cyd and dwyn, *to bear* ; r. as cyssur, *consolation*, from cys and sir, *solace* ; cysbod, *a coexistence*, from cys and bod, *to be*. Ca, ce, cam, caf, ced, cem, cim, com, co, and con, were likewise used in the same sense by the ancients ; as s. kauersit, *a price*, (Laws, ii. 6, 16,) from ca and gwerth, *value* : kehedet, *equality*, (Laws, ii. 11, 28,) from ce and hyd, *length* ; r. kammeint, *so much*, (Laws ii. 6, 9,) from cam and maint, *magnitude* ; kauacoe, *near*, (Laws, i. 32, 6,) from caf and agos, *near* ; kedymdeith, *companion*, (Mab. ii. 28, 389,) from ced, and ymdaith, *to journey* ; r. cemmeint, *so much*, (Laws) from cem and maint, *magnitude* ; r. cimeiliauc, Cyfeiliog, (Lib. Land. 252 ;) r. comtoou, *stemicamina*, (Lux. Gloss.) from com and to ; r. cobrouol, *wordy*, (Oxford Gloss.) from co and breu, *to low or bleat* ; s. congrogu, *to congeal*, (Luxemburg Gloss.) from con and rogu=rhewi, *to freeze* ; r. Concar, Cyngar, (Lib. Land. 180.)

§ 250. Cyn also signifies *before*, and is equivalent to pre and ante, in Latin or English words ; s. as cynddydd, *day-break*, from cyn and dydd, *day* ; r. cyncad, *the front of battle*, from cyn and cad, *a battle*.

§ 251. Cynt, first, former, foremost ; s. as cyntair, *a prognostic*, from cynt and gair, *a word*.

§ 252. Dad, (dy-ad,) expansive of reaction ; s. as dadwnenthur, *to undo*, from dad and gwnenthur, *to do*. Anciently sometimes r. as datkanu, *to recite*, (Mab. i. 35,) from dad or dat and canu, *to sing*.

§ 253. Dam, (dy-am,) expansively involving ; s. as damgylchu, *to surround*, from dam and cylchu, *to compass*.

§ 254. Dar, (dy-ar,) expansive and over ; s. as darbyyll, *persuasion*, from dar and pwyll, *reason* ; r. as darllen, *to read*, from dar and llen, *literature*.

§ 255. De, (Latin de,) separation, distribution ; s. as deall, *a distinguishing or analyzing power, the intellect*, from de and gall, *power* ; s. as dechreu, *a beginning*, from de and creu, *to create*.

§ 256. Ded, (dy-ed,) a mutation of dad, expansive of reaction ; s. as dedwydd, *happy*, from ded=dad and gwydd, *knowledge*. According to the Bardic theology the recovery of knowledge constituted a part of the bliss of heaven. The ancients used the form det ; as detwyd, (Mab. iii. 299.)

§ 257. Der, (dy-er,) a mutata of dar ; s. as Derwydd, *a Druid*, from dar and gwydd, *knowledge* ; r. as derllyddu, *to pour*, from dar and llydd, *what is spread*.

§ 258. Di, privative, negative ; s. as diallu, *powerless*, from di and gallu, *power*. Sometimes r. in ancient authors, as dipetrus, *doubtless*, (Mab. 2. 64,) from di and petrus, *dubious*.

§ 259. Dir, (ir,) intensive, powerful ; s. as dirfawr, *very great*, from dir and mawr, *great*.

§ 260. Dis, (di-ys,) negative and precise, s. as disgloff, *not lame*, from diis and cloff, *lame*; r. as disprawf, *disproof*, from dis and prawf, *a proof*.

§ 261. Dos, (dy-os,) augmentative of extenuation; s. as dosparthu, *to distribute*, from dos and parthu, *to divide*.

§ 262. Dy, expansive, frequentative; s. as dygas, *execrable*, from dy and cas, *hateful*; a. as dychrynu, *to tremble*, from dy and crynu, *to quake*.

§ 263. Dym, (dy-ym,) expansive of mutual or reflective action; s. as dymgalu, *to conceal one's self*, from dym and celu, *to conceal*.

§ 264. Dys, (dy-ys,) augmentative of precision, intensive; s. as dysbennu, *to conclude*, from dys and pennu, *to appoint*.

§ 265. E. (Heb. *ר*, Erse *e*, Gall. *ex*,) negative, adversative; but is generally used as a mutate of a; s. as efyrd, *study*, from e and bryd, *mind*.

§ 266. Ech, (Gr. *εκ*, Lat. *ex*, Erse, *ec*,) adversative, reflective; r. as echdoe, *the day before yesterday*, from ech and doe, *yesterday*; s. as echrya, *horrid*, from ech and rhya, *difficulty*.

§ 267. Ed, denoting reaction, equivalent to re, also intensive; s. as edfyn, *to refrain from*, from ed and myn, *will*; r. as edmyg, *honour*, from myg, *grand*.

§ 268. En, (Corn. Armor. En, Erse, in, Gr. *εν*,) negatively present, inward; s. as enfil, *an animal*, from en and mil, *an animal*; r. as encudd, *a concealment*, frn en and cudd, *darkness*.

§ 269. Eng, negatively confined; s. as engfod, *a loose existence*, from eng and bod, *existence*.

§ 270. Er, mutate of ar, impulsive, productive of; s. as ergyrf, *productive of strength*, from er and cryf, *strong*; r. as ermyg, *honour*, from er and myg, *grand*; a. as erchynu, *to elevate*, from er and cynu, *to rise*.

§ 271. Erdd, mutate of ardd, impulsive, enhansive; s. as erddrym, *power*, from erdd and grym, *strength*.

§ 272. Es, (Lat. *ex*,) parting; s. as esgar, *separation*, from es and car, *a friend*.

§ 273. Go, extenuating, inchoative; s. as goblygu, *to bend a little*, from go and plygu, *to bend*; a. as gochrynu *to quake a little*, from go and crynu, *to quake*.

§ 274. Gor, (or,) being extreme or over; s. as gorallu, *superior power*; from gor and gallu, *power*; r. gorllawn, *overflow*, from gor and llawn, *full*; gorlawn is also used; a. gorphen, *to end*, from gor and pen, *a head, an end*.

§ 275. Gos, (go-ys,) extenuating; s. as gosbwyllaw, *to decide partly*, from gos and pwyllaw, *to reason*.

§ 276. Gwr, (gw-wr,) being superior; s. as gwrfan, *extremely loud*, from gwr and ban, *loud*.

§ 277. Gwrth, (gwr,) repulsive, contrary, equivalent to anti, contra, and retro; s. as gwrthddywedyd, *to contradict*, from gwrth and dywedyd,

to say : occasionally by the ancients, r. as gvrthvng, a *controverting oath*, (Laws, 2, 6, 2.) from gwrth and twng, an *oath*.

§ 278. Han, (hy-an,) expressive of origination ; s. as hanfod, *existence*, from han and bod, *to be*.

§ 279. Hu, pervasive, apt ; huan, *the sun*, from hu and an, *element*.

§ 280. Hy, apt to, resembling the affix *ble* ; s. as hybarch, *venerable*, from hy and parch, *respect*. Anciently r. as Hiugel, (Lib. Landav. 226, 246,) now Hywel.

§ 281. Lled, (lly-ed,) partly, almost ; s. as lledgloff, *somewhat lame*, from lled and cloff, *lame*.

§ 282. Lly, gliding, diffusive, overwhelming ; s. as llyferth, *weariness*, from lly and merth, *exhaustion*.

§ 283. Rhag, (rha-ag,) being before, equivalent to pre in English words ; s. as rhagddango, *to foreshow*, from rhag and dangos, *to show* ; r. rhagllaw, *henceforth*, from rhag and llaw, *a hand*. Anciently also r. as racial, *frontlet*, (Mab. i. 239,) from rac and tal, *the forehead*.

§ 284. Rhy, excessive, over ; s. as rhygas, *very hateful*, from rhy and cas, *hateful*. When prefixed to verbs it generally denotes a preterite, as caraf, *I love* ; rhygerais, *I have loved*.

§ 285. Tra, (Lat. trans,) beyond, over ; r. as tramor, *foreign*, from tra and mor, *the sea* ; s. as trafod, *labour*, from tra and bod, *to be* ; s. as traphlith, *confused*, from tra and plith, *mixed*.

§ 286. Try, through, thoroughly ; s. as tryfesur, *diameter*, from try and mesur, *a measure*. Anciently tre, as treorgtim, *I perforate*, (Lux. Gloss.)

§ 287. Ym, (pron. mi,) mutual, reflective ; s. as ymladd, *to fight*, from ym and lladd, *to kill*.

§ 288. Yn, in ; s. as ynfer, *an influx*, from yn and mer, *a drop*.

§ 289. Ya, denotes precision or certitude. It often interchanges also with es. S. as ysgri, *a shriek*, from ys and cri, *a cry* ; r. as yspaid, *a space*, *a ceasing*, from ys and paid, *a ceasing*.

§ 290. It will have been seen from the specimens already given, that there was a tendency on the part of ancient authors to write their compounds without any modification of the connecting links.

§ 291. The foregoing prefixes are capable of being compounded in various ways, and in that state joined to other words ; as

Ad-ddy	Anhy	Anghyf	Diadd
Ador	Annar	Anghyn	Diaf
Ados	Anned	Anghys	Diam
Adym	Anni	Arddis	Dian
Adys	Annir	Cyfym	Diddos
Adynddir	Annis	Dadym	Diddy
Adymgys	Annos	Darym	Diled
Anadd	Anys	Dia	Dirag
Anes	Anghyd	Diad	Diwrth

Diy m	Lledaf	Ymdry	Ymgyd
Diys	Lledym	Ymddad	Ymgyf
Dym	Lledys	Ymddar	Ymgyn
Dyddym	Rhyddi	Ymddi	Ymgys
Goled	Rhyddar	Ymddir	Ymos
Gorym	Rhyor	Ymddis	Ymry
Goy m	Traym	Ymddy	Ymwrth
Gwrthym	Ymad	Ymgy	

Examples.

Anhyderus pob ovnawg. Myv. Arch. iii. 148.

Na chais *gyvmbwyll* ond â doethion. Cattwg Ddoeth.

Ef a fedd—

Llys y daw deon yw *ddarymred*. Cynddelw.

Morini Brython

Rhyddarogany n. Taliesin.

Goren pob dirwest *ymddirwest* rhag trachwant. Cattwg Ddoeth.

SECTION XVIII.

SUFFIX DERIVATIVES.

§ 292. A, positive ; as *bala*, a *shooting out*, from *bal*, a *prominence*.

§ 293. Ach, tending to hold, comprehension ; the termination of a few substantives, as *cyfrinach*, a *secret*, from *cyfrin*, *privy to*. It frequently signifies *littleness*, (=bach, *little*), as *wyniach*, *little lambs*, from *wyn*, *lambs*; and by consequence *worthlessness*, as *poblach*, *low people*, from *pobl*, *people*. It also denotes the comparative degree of adjectives, (=Arm. och,) as *melus*, *sweet*, *melusach*, *sweeter*.

§ 294. Ad, iad, (anciently at,) tending to expand ; a participial termination, as *mynediad*, *going*, from *myned*, *to go*. It also ends substantives, as *ynad*, (wn-ad,) *a judge*; and adjectives, as *gwastad*, *even*, from *gwast*, *a spread*.

§ 295. Adwy, (ad-wy, a participial form of *au*, *to go*,) denoting capability, and liability ; as *dealladwy*, *intelligible*, from *deall*, *to understand*.

§ 296. Aeg, eg, denoting language ; as *Cymraeg*, *Welsh*, from *Cymru*, *Wales*, *Gwyddeleg*, *Irish*, from *Gwyddel*, *an Irishman*. “Da ’i gwyddost *aeg* y weddi ;” the language of prayer. *Meiryg Dafydd*.

§ 297. Ael, the termination of a few verbs, as *gafael*, *to hold*.

§ 298. Aeth, iaeth, similar in power to *tion*, *ion*, and *ship*, in English, and signifies *the state of, science, or art*; as *lluniadaeth*, *the art of forming*, from *lluniad*, *a forming*; *carwriaeth*, *courtship*, from *carwr*, *a lover*.

§ 299. Ai, (anciently ei,) implies *that which causes, an agent*: nouns ending with it are generally those which stand for tools or instruments, as *carai*, *a lace*, from *car*, *near*.

§ 300. Aid, (anciently eid, eit,) a living principle ; as *enaid*, *the soul*,

from en (=ens) *a being*. This idea has made adjectives, terminating with it, to imply capacity or measure, like those ending in *ful* in English, as *dyrnaid, a handful*, from *dwrn, a fist*. The same notion is likewise contained in the plural of nouns, as *hwyaid, pl. of hwyad, a duck*.

§ 301. Aidd, (Gr. εἶδος, a form,) tending to, like; as *mabaidd, boyish, boylike*, from *mab, a son*. When suffixed to adjectives it signifies *partly, somewhat*, as *pruddaid*. It may be cognate with *eidd* in *eiddo, the property of, or belonging to*.

§ 302. Aig, what brings forth; as *haig, a shoal*, *hy-aig*; *gwraig, a woman*, from *gwr, a man*.

§ 303. Ail, continuative, alternative; as *gwial, rods*, aggr. of *gwial*, the plural of *gwialen, a rod*; *adail, a building*, primarily of a wattled construction.

§ 304. Ain, tending to spread out; as *dwyrain, the east*, from *dwyr, the dawning of light*; *ochain, to groan*, from *och, a groan*.

§ 305. Aint, (id.) as *gofaint, pl. of gof, a smith*.

§ 306. Al, tending to a gliding motion; as *meddal, soft*, from *medd, mead*.

§ 307. An, tending to produce, discriminate; or simplify, as *dynan, a little woman*, from *dyn, a man*; *cryman, a reaping hook*, from *crwm, bending*.

§ 308. Ant, iant, as *llwyddiant, prosperity*, from *llwydd, success*. It is also the termination of the third person plural, indicative mood, present or future tense, active and neuter, as *carant, they love or will love*; but here most probably *ant* is only a modification of *hwynt*.

§ 309. Ar, tending to be firm, or prevalent; as *daiar, the earth*, from *dai, what produces*; *gwanar, a leader*, from *gwan, a going through*.

§ 310. Arn, a fragment; as *llwyarn, a trowel*, from *llwy, a spoon*.

§ 311. Aa, tending to distinguish, a whole; like *as* in *societas*, or *civitas*, as *cymdeithas, society*, from *cymdaith, a companion*.

§ 312. Au, (anciently ou, eu; Corn. au,) going; hence it becomes the termination of certain verbs, as *llawenhau, to rejoice*, from *llawen, merry*; and of the plural of nouns, as *drysau, pl. of drws, a door*.

§ 313. Aw, a moving agent; as *cwynaw, to complain*, from *cwyn, a complaint*. Aw is now generally written and pronounced as o.

§ 314. Awd, od, an act, answers to the Latin *atum*, as *traethawd, a treatise*, (Lat. *tractatum*,) from *traethu, to treat*; *pechod, (peccatum,) sin*, from *pech, want of exertion*. When suffixed to the name of an instrument, it denotes a blow given with that instrument; as *ffonod, gwialennod, cleddyfod*.

§ 315. Awg, og, possessing, abounding with; as *brwynawg or brwynog, abounding with rushes*, from *brwyn, rushes*. Also diminutive; as *pwtog, a short woman*, from *pwt, a short thing*. Many nouns having this suffix, though regarded now as substantives, are properly and in reality adjectives, as *llwynog, swyddog*.

§ 316. Awl, ol, relating to; as gwrawl, or gwrol, *manly*, from gwr, *a man*.

§ 317. Awr, (an hour, from aw, *flowing*,) continuous; as geiriawr, *talkative*, from gair, *a word*. Compounded of a and wr, it takes primarily the meaning of the latter, i. e. *the state of being on, over or at*; as ysgwydawr, *a shield*, from ysgwyd, *id.* which also comes from yegw, *a safeguard*. Or it may be regarded in each case as a participial form, "Chwerddid bryd wrth a garawr." Adage.

§ 318. Dawd, dod; as dyndawd, or dyndod, *manhood*, from dyn, *a man*.

§ 319. Deb, (teb, te-eb, a type;) it has the force of *ness* in English, and is joined to nouns adjective; as gwroldeb, *manfulness*, from gwrol, *manly*, duwioldeb, *godliness*, from duwiol, *godly*.

§ 320. Der, *id.* as gwylder, *shyness*, from gŵyl, *shy*.

§ 321. Did, dyd, *id.* as gwendid, *weakness*, from gwan, *weak*.

§ 322. Dra, (tra, a thing,) as tyndra, *tightness*, q. d. *a tight thing*, from tyn, *tight*.

§ 323. Dwr, interchanged with der, as sychdwr, sychder, *dryness*, from sych, *dry*.

§ 324. Eb, signifying expression; as galareb, *the voice of mourning*, from galar, *sorrow*; gwyneb, *the face*, from gwyn, *passion*, q. d. *the index of the passions*.

§ 325. Ed, the mutate of ad, aid, or aud; hence it is found as the termination of many verbs, as cerdded, *to walk*, from cerdd, *a walk*. It is also affixed to some nouns, as lludded, *fatigue*, from lludd, *an obstacle*, perhaps here as a mutate of id or yd. It likewise expresses an equal degree in the comparison of adjectives, as llawned, *as full*, from llawn, *full*.

§ 326. Edd, a termination of nouns; as gorfoledd, *joy*, from gorfawl, *extreme praise*. It mutates also with ydd, as trydydd, *trydedd*, *third*.

§ 327. Edig, (auedig, anciently etic,) gone, endued with; as caredig, *beloved*, from caru, *to love*.

§ 328. Eg, frequently signifies art or science; as anianeg, *natural philosophy*, from anian, *nature*; ieitheg, *grammar*, from iaith, *language*.

§ 329. El, applied to utensils and instruments, chiefly of the masculine gender; as rhesel, *crib*, from rhea, *a row*.

§ 330. Ell, applied to such objects, chiefly of the feminine gender, as cylllell, *a knife*, from cwll, *what separates*, (Lat. cultellus.) It is also diminutive, as ffynnonell, *a fountain*, from ffynnon, *a well*, (Lat. fontanella.)

§ 331. En, a termination of the feminine gender; as cangen, *a branch*, from cang, *id.* This is because the abstract meaning of *en* is a living principle.

§ 332. Er, like er in English words; as piser, *a pitcher*, from pis, *a*

spout; *nifer* (nif-er,) a *number*; *tyner*, *tender*, (Lat. tener.) It is also the termination of certain tenses of the passive voice.

§ 333. *Es*, like *ess* in English, is a feminine termination; as *etifeddes*, an *heiress*, from *etifedd*, an *heir*.

§ 334. *Fa*, (man, a *place*,) generally retains its original idea as a suffix to nouns; as *trigfa*, a *dwelling place*, from *trig*, a *fixed state*. It is also used metaphorically, as *cynnulleidfa*, an *assembly*, instead of a *place of assembly*, which is its literal meaning.

§ 335. *Fed*, (med, anciently *bet*, see *Liber Landavensis*,) *to*, *unto*, as far as, *to the full*; it forms the ordinals of numbers, as *wythfed*, *eighth*, from *wyth*, *eight*.

§ 336. *Gar*, (car,) *addicted to*, as *trugar*, *merciful*, from *tru*, *misery*.

§ 337. *I*, applied to nouns formed from adjectives; as *caledi*, *hardship*, from *caled*, *hard*; it is also the termination of verbs, as *gwaeddi*, *to cry*, from *gwaedd*, a *cry*. Perhaps the noun ought to be considered primarily as a verb taken substantively.

§ 338. *Iar*, *over*; as *tonniar*, a *wave*, from *tonn*, a *wave*.

§ 339. *Id*, (anciently *it*,) as *addewid*, *promise*, from *addaw*, *to promise*. See *Ed*.

§ 340. *Ig*, (=icus, Lat.) *disposed to adhere*; *blended with*; as *gwenwynig*, *poisonous*, from *gwenwyn*, *poison*. It is also diminutive, as *ynysig*, an *islet*, from *ynys*, an *island*.

§ 341. *In*, *yn*, *ing*, *aptitude to produce*, *discriminate*, *simplify*, as *byddin*, an *army*, from *bydd*, a *tye*; *dynyn*, a *little man*, from *dyn*, a *man*; *rhudding*, *the heart of timber*, from *rhudd*, *red*.

§ 342. *Ineb*, as *doethineb*, *wisdom*, from *doeth*, *wise*. It seems to be compounded of the preceding *in* or *yn* and *eb*; *q. d.* *doeth*, *wise*, *doethyn*, a *wise one*, *doethineb*, *expressive of a wise one*.

§ 343. *Ir*, generally the termination of certain tenses of verbs passive, as *cerir fi*, *I shall be loved*, from *caru*, *to love*.

§ 344. *Llyd*, *lyd* (anciently *lit*=Lat. *olentus* or *osus*.) It gives an unfavourable sense to the word, as *oerllyd*, *chilly*, from *oer*, *cold*, *llychlyd*, *dusty*, from *llwch*, *dust*. In the Powysian dialect the feminine is *lled*, or *led*; as *poethled*, *hot*, from *poeth*, *hot*.

Barf ar farf, so *arf yn greuled*. *Cyuddelw*.

§ 345. *Ni*, *aptitude to produce*, *discriminate*, *simplify*; as *culni*, *lean-ness*, from *cul*, *lean*.

§ 346. *Od*, see *awd*.

§ 347. *Og*, see *awg*.

§ 348. *Ol*, see *awl*.

§ 349. *On*, denoting agency; as *gwyddon*, a *man of knowledge*, from *gwydd*, *knowledge*.

§ 350. *Oni*, *science or art*; as *seroni*, *astronomy*, from *ser*, *stars*.

§ 351. *Or* (=wr) as *telynor*, i. e. *telyn wr*, a *harper*.

§ 352. Os, a diminutive termination affixed to plural nouns, mostly used in tender language; as *plantos, dear little children*, from *plant, children*.

§ 353. Red, (ret,) a course; as *gweithred, a deed*, from *gwaith, work*.

§ 354. Rwydd, (rwyd,) affixed to adjectives, forms substantives; as *ffyrnigrwydd, fierceness*, from *ffyrnig, fierce*. Anciently it was sometimes written *rwyd*, as *enbeitrwyd, danger*. (Mab. ii. 24.)

§ 355. Udd, (ud,) the termination of nouns; as *muchudd, jet*, from *much, a black*; *ufudd, obedient*, from *uf, that is over*. This word, however, is occasionally written *ufydd*.

§ 356. Ur =wr, as *pennadur, a chieftain*, from *pennad, a becoming a chief*.

§ 357. Us, involved in; as *drygionnus, mischievous*, from *drwg, bad*.

§ 358. W has a negative signification; as *gweddw, a widow*, from *gwedd, connection*; *ulw, embers*, from *ul, moisture*.

§ 359. Wch, the termination of substantives formed from adjectives; as *harddwch, beauty*, from *hardd, fair*. It is sometimes written *wg*, as

Dod williaid i *dywyllwg*,
Dilea'r dreth, dal rai *drwg*. Gutto'r Glynn.

§ 360. Wm, (anciently *um, ym*,) as *degwm, tithes*, from *deg, ten*. Several words that formerly ended in *m*, now end in *f*, as *guillihim, shears*, (Oxford Gloss,) now written *gwellaif*.

§ 361. Wn, as *pegwn, a pole*.

§ 362. Wr, *iwr*, (ur, iur, ywr,) a man; as *rhyfelwr, a warrior*, from *rhyfel, war*; *heliwr, a collector*, from *hel, to gather*.

§ 363. Wy, proceeding from; as *camwy, perversion*, from *cam, crooked*.

§ 364. Yd, (yt,) it, that is; as *bywyd, life*, from *byw, alive*.

§ 365. Ydd, (id,) denotes an agent; as *darlennydd, a reader*, from *darllen, to read*. It terminates also an abstract noun, as *llawenydd, joy*, from *llawen, merry*; sometimes the preceding suffix takes this form, as

Crist a farn heb ddim *tristydd*,
Crist Iesu yn barnu y bydd. L. Glyn Cothi.

§ 366. Yll, as *gwyntyll, a winnowing fan*, from *gwynt, wind*. It is of the same character as *ell*, which see.

§ 367. Yn, see in.

§ 368. Ynt, are, they are; as *helynt, condition, plight*, from *hel to gather*.

§ 369. Yr, denotes an agent, like *ur* and *wr*; as *cysgiadur, an opiate*, from *cysgiad, a sleeping*.

§ 370. Ys, (is;) the termination of nouns; as *ynys, an island*, from *wn, that is close*; *ewyllys, a will*, from *ewyll, the determination of the mind*.

§ 371. Some of the foregoing suffixes are capable of combination,
as

Achwr	cyfeddachwr, <i>a jovial man</i>
Adur	traethadur, <i>a reciter</i>
Aduriaeth	traethaduriaeth, <i>the office of a reciter</i>
Aethwr	tystiolaethwr, <i>a testifier</i>
Awdwr	dysgawdwr, <i>an instructor</i>
Dodiad	dwyfundodiad, <i>theo-unitarian</i>
Dodiaeth	undodiaeth, <i>unitarianism</i>
Dodwr	pennodwr, <i>a determiner</i>
Dodydd	pendodydd, <i>a determiner</i>
Ediad	tyngediad, <i>destination</i>
Edigawl	caredigawl, <i>affectionate</i>
Edwr	tyngedwr, <i>a destiner</i>
Edydd	tyngedydd, <i>a destiner</i>
Eiaeth	llatteiaeth, <i>the office of a procurer</i>
Eiddiawl	sancteiddiawl, <i>sanctified</i>
Elliad	cyllleliad, <i>a cutting with a knife</i>
Ellwr	cylllellwr, <i>a knife-man</i>
Ellydd	taenellydd, <i>a sprinkler</i>
Iachwr	cyfeilliachwr, <i>a man who makes friendship</i>
Iadwr	trefniadwr, <i>an arranger</i>
Iedydd	ceiniedydd, <i>a songster</i>
Inawl	gerwinnawl, <i>severe</i>
Inebwr	godinebwr, <i>an adulterer</i>
Inebydd	godinebydd, <i>an adulterer</i>
Odiad	pennodiad, <i>appointment</i>
Odiaeth	pennodiaeth, <i>appointment</i>
Odraeth	llywodraeth, <i>governorship</i>
Odraethiad	llywodraethiad, <i>the action of governorship</i>
Odraethwr	llywodraethwr, <i>a man who acts as a governor</i>
Odraethydd	llywodraethydd, <i>one who acts as a governor</i>
Odwr	pennodwr, <i>an appointer</i>
Odydd	cyssodydd, <i>composer</i>
Oriaeth	peroriaeth, <i>minstrelsy</i>
Uriad	pechaduriad, <i>one who acts as a sinner</i>
Usaidd	trefnusaidd, <i>orderly</i>
Usawl	iachusawl, <i>salutary</i>
Wriaeth	iachawdwriaeth, <i>the office of a Saviour</i>
Ychiad	heddychiad, <i>pacification</i>

Examples.

Lluniaethid y *cyfeddachwyr* ar y byrddau. H. Car.—Mabinogion.

Nis gwnaeth *llifedigaeth* llaw. D. ab Gwilym.

Da iawn draw rhwng dwylaw dyn,

A *duwiolaidd* yw'r delyn. T. Prys.

SECTION XIX.

PREFIX AND SUFFIX DERIVATIVES.

§ 372. Such are the following :

Darymchweliad, *an overwhelming.*
 Anlywodraethiad, *non-administration.*
 Dirgelwch, *secrecy, or concealment.*
 Dadyrchwelwr, *an overwheeler.*

Examples.

Diw sadwrn bu diwrn eu *kytweithret.* Aneurin.
 Pob *diareb* gwir, pob coel celwydd. Adage.
 Nid achludd eurgudd *argelwch.* Cynddelw.

SECTION XX.

COMPOUNDS.

§ 373. Compounds are of two kinds ; primary and mixed.

§ 374. The primary compounds consist in the union of primitives ;

as

Irlwyn, *a verdant grove.*
 Tangnef, *celestial stillness.*
 Coelgrefydd, *superstition.*

Examples.

Na'm lladd cangen *seinwen* *fwyniaeth.* Rhys Goch.
Meindwf, iawndwf, hoywdwf hyfyd. Id.
Deuparth addyg ym *mhenglog.* Iolo MSS p. 252.

§ 375. Mixed compounds are combinations of primitives with the addition of prefixes and suffixes ; as

Didangnefedd, *want of tranquility.*
 Gogoelgrefydduswedd, *some degree of superstition.*

Examples.

Aelau ffiam lydan
Cyfwyrain nawr-dan. Taliesin.
 Ac y lloer dan *ddamguddiedigaeth* y ddaear. Meddygon Myddfai.
 Gwr dwr diarchar *diarbedawg.* Meugant.

PARTS OF SPEECH.

§ 376. Words are perfect parts of speech ; wherefore it is necessary that we should know how many parts of speech there are, and what is each of them, and what are their essentials, connections, and accidentals. We shall now speak of the parts of speech.

§ 377. There are two parts of speech, that is to say, a *name* and a *causative* or a *verb*.

§ 378. Some of our grammarians regard the *name* as the body, and the *causative* or verb as the soul of a sentence,—“Enaid yr ymadrodd yw'r ferf.” The intervening or connecting words they include under the expression *gorair*, (particle,) or *Uef ymglyffred*, (comprehending voice.) In this respect they resemble the Hebrews.

§ 379. In some of our older poems we meet with whole sentences singularly destitute of secondary agents, e. g.

Torf aergawdd aergwl gadarnwch
Torf eurgorf eurgwyn gyfeddwch
Cyfeddach forach fireinwch
Cyfeddwalech cyfeddweifch elwch
Elyf dreig dragon digrifwch
Alaf lyw luoedd amgelwch
Amgeledd brython brythwch
Teyrnon teyrnas ynialwch
Teulu rys teilwng gwrys gwrysiwch
Gwrys arloes eirioes eiriolwch. Cyuddelw.

§ 380. The ancients in general considered *verbs* as the roots or primitives of language, but most of our modern philologists declare themselves in favour of *nouns* as the basis of human language. In support of which view, it may be remarked that in the Mosaic account, we have no hints of any human words that were prior to the *names* of animals.

§ 381. All the comprehending voices, or secondary parts of speech, are derived from the *name* and *causative*.

§ 382. The offspring of the *name*, are the *pronoun*, the *weak name* or *adjective*, and the *article*.

§ 383. The *causative* is the parent of the *preposition*, the *adverb*, and the *conjunction*.

SECTION XXI.

NAME.

§ 384. A name is every word that denotes *strength* or *substance*, or any thing which has the idea of existence, without the sign of addition, or of being irrelevant to the peculiarity of its kind and nature; or an accidental quality in respect of strength, and not in respect of the mode in which it exists.

§ 385. Strength signifies every thing that may be seen, or heard, or touched, or understood, and comprehended. Seen, such as *dyn*, *prenn*, *maen*, *goleuni*, *lliw-glas*, *lliw-coch*, and all other colours.

§ 386. Form, such as *crwnn*, *tryfal*, *pedryfal*, is diverse from such personal and substantial things, whether they be simple or compound.

§ 387. Heard, as *llef*, *iaith*, *cerdd*, *gwynt*, *trwst*, and such like personal things as are not compounded.

§ 388. Touched, or felt, as *awyr*, or *lliw*, or *oerfel*, or *tristoch*, or *llawenydd*, and every thing that is affected, as *serch*, *glwder*, *dysgeidiaeth*, *gwybodaeth*, and *anwybodaeth*.

§ 389. And these fall in with such things as are understood, as *celfyddyd*, *crefydd*, *gwirionedd*, *twyll*; and such as have an idea of personality, as existing by themselves, apart from every degree of quantity and inherent quality.

§ 390. Strength also denotes spiritual things, which subsist in themselves, though they can neither be seen, nor heard, nor touched, nor felt, nor understood, otherwise than that they exist of necessity, and by the perception of faith, since we know not their kind, or

distinction, or what things in life and existence they are ; as *Duo, enaid, yspryd, angel, nef, meddwol, deall,* or *bywyd,* and such like spiritual things.

§ 391. The quality accidental to *strength,* means everything that cannot subsist by itself, without the support of a strong thing, as *gwynn, du, doeth, cryf, cam, cymmwys, melus, chwero, da, drwg, mawr, bach,* and such as show the strong, not in its abstract state, but in its own kind, and nature and form ; and in its distinction, whatever it may be, from another of the same essence with it in respect of strength, but diverse in respect of accidental quality ; as when we say *dyn,* it is not known whether he be male or female, or fair or ugly, or big or little, or alive or dead. But when the accidental quality is added to *dyn,* and we say *dyn da, dyn drwg, dyn doeth, dyn cadarn,* according to his nature and condition ; we thereby know what sort or kind of man he is.

SECTION XXII.

CLASSIFICATION OF NAMES.

§ 392. There are two names ; a proper name, and an appellative name.

§ 393. A proper name is that which belongs, or applies to one thing, or person, or personality, by a particular designation, as *Pyll, Nudd, Madawg, Iewan,* or *Llywelyn* ; also *Nonn, Angharad, Nest, Gwenlliant.*

· § 394. Also in regard to quality, as *Arthurawl, Caradogawl, Owenaid.*

§ 395. An appellative name is that name which is applicable to several things by vocation, as *dyn,* or *angel,* or *derwen,* or *cerdd,* or *celfyddyd,* and whatsoever things are strong.

§ 396. Likewise such weak names or adjectives as denote accidents common to many things ; as *dynawl, angylaidd.*

SECTION XXIII.

PROPER NAME.

§ 397. There are two proper names ; a baptismal name, as *Madauog* ; and a nick-name, as *Madyn*.

§ 398. The term baptismal name has been chosen on account of the prevalent practice of imposing names at baptism, which in this country commenced in the time of the Silurian prince Cyllin. For grammatical purposes, however, it includes the real names of persons that were never baptized, as Manogan, Caswallawn ; also the names of places, &c. as Bala, Aberconwy.

§ 399. Llysenw, here translated nickname, is, properly speaking a court name, and refers primarily to the titles of honour, which were added to the baptismal name ; hence the adage,

Llysenwa gadarn yn gall rhag ei ofn. Adage.

SECTION XXIV.

APPELLATIVE NAME.

§ 400. There are two kinds of appellative names ; a simple appellative name, and a compound appellative name.

§ 401. A simple appellative name is that which is not compounded, as *lliw*.

§ 402. A compound appellative name is that which is compounded of two words, as *gwynlliw*, *lliwlas*.

§ 403. Sometimes of more, as *eurgleddyfrudd*, i.e. aur-cleddyfrhudd, and *penteyrnwalch*, i.e. pen-teyrn-gwalch.

SECTION XXV.

SIMPLE NAME.

§ 404. There are two kinds of simple names ; a primitive name, and a derivative name.

§ 405. A primitive name is that which is not derived from any thing, as *llathr*.

§ 406. A derivative name is that which is derived from the primitive name, as *llathraidd* ; and in the

same way a derivative compound comes from a primitive compound, as *gwynllathraidd*, from *gwynllathr*.

§ 407. For more examples, see under "Words."

§ 408. Again there are but two kinds of names; a weak name and a strong name.

SECTION XXVI.

A WEAK NAME.

§ 409. A weak name is that which does not stand by itself in a sentence, as *gwynn*, *du*, *doeth*.

§ 410. Weak names or adjectives of the primitive form, as well as their compounds, though they are capable of being analysed, and their original meaning ascertained, are not so obviously expressive as the derivatives. The terminations which most commonly characterise the latter are, *aid*, *aidd*, *ain*, *awg* or *og*, *awl* or *ol*, *ed*, *fawr*, *gar*, *ig*, *llawn*, or *lawn*, *in*, *llyd* or *lyd*, and *us*. For the power or meaning of each, see the list of "Suffix Derivatives."

SECTION XXVII.

A STRONG NAME.

§ 411. A strong name is that which stands by itself in a sentence, as *gwr*, *gwraig*, *dyn*.

§ 412. As a general classification of strong names, or nouns substantive, in respect of their terminations, the following will suffice.

§ 413. Those which have the suffixes, *deb*, *der*, *did*, *dra*, *dod*, *edd*, *i*, *iant*, *ant*, *aint*, *id*, *ioni*, *ineb*, *ni*, *rwydd*, *wch*, *yd*, *ydd*, denote *quality* or *state*.

§ 414. These denote an *agent* or *person*; *wr* or *iwr*, *wraig*, *ur*, *ures*, *adur*, *ydd*, *yddes*, *or*, *ores*, *yr*, *r*, *on*, *es*, *ai*, *ad*, or *iad*.

§ 415. These are *diminutive* terminations; *an*, *en*, *ig*, *ag*, *yn*, *a*, *o*, *w*, *ws*, of the singular number; *ach*, *ain*, *os*, of the plural number. *Ach* makes a diminutive of reproach;

Dowoh, y pydron *ddynionach*. Gr. Owen.

A, *o*, *os*, *w*, *ws*, denote endearment.

§ 416. The following, however, owing to the variety of uses in which they are employed, cannot be conveniently classified; *had*, *od*, *ar*, *arn*, *aeg*, *eg*, *aeth*, or *iaeth*, *aid*, *ain*, *as*, *es*, *au* or *eu*, *eb*, *ed*, *el*, *ell*, *fa*, *in*, *l*, *w*, *yll*, *ol*, *red*, *wy*, *ing*, *wg*, *yf*, *iar*.

§ 417. The abstract meaning of most of these terminations may be seen under the section on "Suffix Derivatives."

SECTION XXVIII.

AGREEMENT OF NAMES.

§ 418. Weak names and strong names ought to agree in number and gender.

§ 419. As "*adar gwylltion*," (Iolo MSS. 237,) "*cyhydedd lefn*," (Cyv. y Beirdd.) But to this rule there are several exceptions. And first as regards number.

§ 420. Many adjectives have no plural form, as *teg*; wherefore we say "*geiriau teg*," (Myv. Arch. iii. 193,) as well as "*gair teg*," (Cyv. y Beirdd, 80.) Numerals, which, above *one*, are necessarily plural, are followed by substantives in the singular number, as "*teir blyned*," (Mab. i. 21, 25,) though the plural is also occasionally used by the ancients, as "*pedeir gwaged ar hugeint*," (Mab. i. 36.) *Llawer*, *saul*, and other words implying plurality; are likewise followed by singular nouns, as "*Llawer dyn a wna cynnyg drwg dros dda*," (Myv. Arch. iii. 163.) *Rhai* takes a plural noun, as "*Rhai Feirdd deallus*," (Cyv. y Beirdd, 70.) *Aml* either a plural or a singular, as "*aml boi lle ni charer*," (Myv. Arch. 111 .147.) "*Aml ddrygau a gaiff y cyfawn*," (Psalm xxxiv. 19.)

§ 421. The departure from the above rule in case of gender is much less frequent and capricious. The following is an instance,

A *daear syth fal dur sad*. Cyv. y Beirdd, p. 151.

SECTION XXIX.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

§ 422. Weak names are susceptible of comparison, whereas strong names are not. To take comparison is to enhance or to diminish the primary sense of the word.

§ 423. There are three degrees of comparison; that is to say, the *positive degree*, or the first and original degree, as *da*, *drwg*, *teg*, *doeth*, *melus*, *gwynn*, *cas*; it is in the original degree that we have the primary meaning of the word.

§ 424. The second degree is called *comparative*, or the *different degree*, (by comparison.) In it consists the second meaning of the word, enhancing or diminishing

the accidental quality; as *gwell*, *gwaeth*, *teccach*, *doethach*, *melusach*, *gwynnach*, *casach*.

§ 425. The extreme or *superlative* degree, is that which has in it the greatest or least meaning; and which cannot be exceeded, as, *y goreu*, *y gwaethaf*, *y teccaf*, *y doethaf*, *y melusaf*, *y gwynnaf*, *y casaf*, that is, the greatest or least of all in the sense of the weak name.

§ 426. Welsh Grammarians give various names to these degrees; thus in addition to the above they call the positive degree, “*enw gwan gwastad*,” or the equable adjective, and “*isael radd*,” or low degree. The comparative they describe as “*chwanegol o un radd*,” or increased by one degree; also “*y berfedd radd*,” and “*y ganol radd*,” or the middle degree. The superlative is called “*chwanegol yn y radd uchaf*,” increased to the highest degree, and “*uchel radd*,” or the high degree.

§ 427. They also add another or fourth degree, which, as it denotes equality, they call the *equal degree*, as *daed*, *drycced*, *tecced*, *doethed*, *melused*, *gwymned*, *cased*.

§ 428. The specimens here given show in what manner the comparative, superlative, and equal degrees are usually formed, that is by affixing *ach*, (*Arm. och*), *af*, and *ed*, respectively to the positive degree, or the word in the simple and absolute state.

§ 429. The oldest form of the superlative is *am*; thus among the Oxford Glosses we have *hinham*, which would now be written *hynaf*.

§ 430. Positives ending in *b*, *d*, *g*, change those letters into *pp*, *tt*, *cc*, in forming the degrees of comparison; as,

Pos.	Comp.	Super.	Equal.
Cyffelyb	cyffelyppach	cyffelyppaf	cyffelpped
Caled	calettach	calettaf	caletted
Teg	teccach	teccaf	tecced.

§ 431. But not always, as the following examples prove,

Cyfflybach y caiff leban. Apud Dr. Davies's Grammar.

Digon a ddywedai'n *degach*,

A harddai'r byd â rhodd bach. S. Tudur.

§ 432. The hard consonants seem to be but the relic of the old way of writing; for we know that the ancients wrote even the positive words with *p*, *c*, *t*, as *cyffelyp*, *calet*, *tec*.

§ 433. When *ai*, *aw*, *w*, occur in the last syllable of the positive, they are respectively changed into *ei*, *o*, *y*, (primary,) in the other degrees; *y* (secondary) is likewise changed into *y* (primary,) as

Main	meinach	meinaf	meined
Tlawd	tlottach	tlottaf	tlotted

Brwnt	bryntach	bryntaf	brynted
Ffyrf	ffyrfach	ffyrfaf	ffyrfed.

§ 434. The vowel *i* is often prefixed to the terminations for the sake of euphony ; as *peraidd*, *peraiddiach*, *peraiddiaf*, *peraiddied*.

§ 435. Some adjectives are compared irregularly.

Pos.	Comp.	Super.	Equal.
Da	gwell	goreu (goreuaf, Tal.)	daed, cystal
Buan	cynt	cyntaf	cynted
Agos	nes	nesaf	nesed
Bach or. bychan	llai	lleiaf	lleied
Drwg	gwaeth	gwaethaf	{ cynddrwg, dryc- ced, gwaethed
Hawdd	haws	hawsaf	hawsed
Hen	{ hyn, hynach	hynaf	hyned
Hir	hwy	hwyaf	cyhyd
Ieuangc	iau	ieuaf	ieuenged
Iael	is .	isaf	ised
Llawer	mwy	mwyaf	{ cymmaint, cynnifer
Llydan	llettach	llettaf	lletted, cyfled
Mawr	mwy	mwyaf	cymmaint
Uchel	uwch	uchaf, uwchaf	{ uched, uwched cyfuwch.

§ 436. Most, if not all of these, may be compared regularly, as *hawdd*, *hawddach*, *hawddaf*, *hawdded* ; but the irregular forms are usually preferred by good writers.

§ 437. Some of the comparatives and superlatives are also regarded as of the positive degree ; as in the following list,

Gwell	gwellach	gwellaf	gwelled
Goreu	gorenach	goreuaf	goreued
Gwaeth	gwaethach	gwaethaf	gwaethed
Hwy	hwyach	hwyaf	hwyed
Mwy	mwyach	mwyaf	mwyed
Llai	lleiach	lleiaf	lleied
Hyn	hynach	hynaf	hyned
Iau	ieuach	ieuaf	ieued.

Cynnwys a gaffaf
O'r parth *goreuaf*. Taliesin.

§ 438. The following are defective in their gradation,

Diwedd		diweddaf	
Blaen		blaenaf	
Ol		olaf	
Pen		pennaf	
	Trech	trechaf	treched
	Cynt	cyntaf	cynted
		eithaf	

§ 439. The comparative and the superlative degrees may be also formed by placing before the positive in the one case *mwy* or *llai*, in the other *mwyaf* or *lleiaf*; as *mwy rhyfelgar*, *llai-rhyfelgar*; *mwyaf rhyfelgar*, *lleiaf rhyfelgar*.

§ 440. More or less intensity may likewise be imparted to the quality of a noun, by the use of the words *go*, *llod*, *pur*, *rhy*, *tra*, whether as prefixes, or in a separate state; as

Dan bebyll *godywyll* dail. D. ab Gwilym.

Gwell *rhy* draws na *rhy* druan. Iolo MSS. p. 258.

§ 441. Iawn is placed after the adjective to express a superlative; as *da iawn*. (Iolo MSS. 161.)

§ 442. A kind of superlative is also formed, after the manner of the Hebrews, by means of a double positive, as "Na chwanegwch lefaru yn *uchel*, *uchel*. 1 Sam. ii. 3.

Fy nyn *bychanigyn bach*. D. ab Gwilym.

§ 443. Whilst, again, the repetition of the second degree constitutes what may be called, a progressive comparative; thus,

Gwellwell hyd varw, *gwaethwaeth* hyd varw. Myv. Arch. iii. 160.

§ 444. Can or cyn is usually put before the equal form, as

Can gynted a'r gwynt. Myv. Arch. iii. 150.

§ 445. The Dimetians, however, substitute *mor*, and say *mor gynted*; whereas the equal degree is more properly expressed by placing *mor* before the positive, as

Mor edivar ganddo a'r gwr a laddoedd ei vilgi. Myv. Arch. iii. 165.

§ 446. It must be remarked, moreover, that the termination *ed* also implies abundance of the quality; as *Hardded* yw, How fair she is! *Truaned*! How wretched!

Duw cadw *Rys deoded* ei rodd. D. Nanmor.

§ 447. Equality may be expressed by means of the preposition *gyda* and a definite superlative, as

Gyda'r goreu o honynt.

SECTION XXX.

GENDER.

§ 448. A name has three genders; masculine, feminine, and common.

§ 449. **STRONG NAMES.** The Cymric language does not recognise what is called the *neuter gender*; hence all inanimate things, which

are classed as neuter in English, are considered either as masculine or feminine in our language ; and this is done by conceiving their properties to bear some resemblance to the qualities that are characteristic of sex in animated beings.

§ 450. Thus the masculine gender is given to substantives, which are conspicuous for the attribute of energy, and of acting upon and communicating to others.

§ 451. To such substantives as seem to denote the passive attributes of bearing, containing, or bringing forth, we give the feminine gender.

§ 452. The common gender is that which may be either masculine or feminine, as *plentyn, baban, rhiaint, aderyn*. In construction, however, nouns of this description are resolved some into the masculine and some into the feminine ; as,

Nerth eryr yn ei ylvn
Nerth cath yn ei phalv. Myv. Arch. iii. 33.

§ 453. The particular gender of animate beings is distinguished,

§ 454. In the first place, by different words ; as

Mas.	Fem.
Adiad, <i>drake</i>	Hwyaden, <i>duck</i>
Bachgen, <i>boy</i>	Geneth, <i>girl</i>
Baedd, <i>boar</i>	Hwch, <i>cow</i>
Brawd, <i>brother</i>	Chwaer, <i>sister</i>
Bustach, or eidion, <i>bullock</i>	Anner, <i>heifer</i>
Carw, hydd, <i>stag</i>	Ewig, <i>hind</i>
Cefnder, <i>cousin</i>	Cyfnither, <i>cousin</i>
Ceffyl, <i>horse</i>	Caseg, <i>mare</i>
Ceillog, <i>cock</i>	Iar, <i>hen</i>
Ci, <i>dog</i>	Gast, (for cies,) <i>bitch</i>
Ewythr, <i>uncle</i>	Modryb, <i>aunt</i>
Gwas, <i>man-servant</i>	Morwyn, <i>maid-servant</i>
Gwr, <i>husband</i>	Gwraig, <i>wife</i>
Hwrdd, <i>ram</i>	Dafad, <i>sheep</i>
Mab, <i>son</i>	Merch, <i>daughter</i>
Nai, <i>nephew</i>	Nith, <i>niece</i>
Tad, <i>father</i> •	Mam, <i>mother</i>
Taid, } <i>grandfather</i>	Nain, } <i>grandmother</i>
Tad-cu, }	Mam-gu, }
Tarw, <i>bull</i>	Buwch, <i>cow</i> .

§ 455. The compounds of the above are distinguished in the same manner.

Priodfab, <i>bridegroom</i>	Priodferch, <i>bride</i>
Golchwr, <i>washer</i>	Golchwraig, <i>washer woman</i> .

§ 456. Secondly, by adding the termination *es* to the masculine gender, or by changing *yn* into *en* ; as,

Mas.	Fem.
Arglwydd, <i>lord</i>	Arglwyddes, <i>lady</i>
Mynach, <i>monk</i>	Mynaches, <i>nun</i>
Dyn, <i>man</i>	Dynes, <i>woman</i>
Brenhin, <i>king</i>	Brenhines, <i>queen</i>
Tywysog, <i>prince</i>	Tywysoges, <i>princess</i>
Asyn, <i>he ass</i>	Asen, <i>she ass</i>
Hogyn, <i>young lad</i>	Hogen, <i>young girl</i>
Coegyn, <i>saucy fellow</i>	Coegen, <i>saucy girl</i> .

§ 457. Thirdly, by placing the word *gwrryw* or *benyw* after the object spoken of. But the masculine gender is sometimes formed from the feminine by prefixing the word *ceiliog* or *broch*; as,

Eryr gwrryw, <i>a he eagle</i>	Eryr benyw, <i>a she eagle</i>
Colommen wryw, <i>a he dove</i>	Colommen fenyw, <i>a she dove</i>
Ceiliogwydd, <i>a gander</i>	from Gwydd, <i>a goose</i>
Bwch gafr, <i>a he goat</i>	” Gafr, <i>a goat</i> .

§ 458. Occasionally the sex is distinguished by adding to the usual name one of the most specific terminations, as *eryr*, *eryres*. (Iolo MSS. 188.)

§ 459. With regard to the names of inanimate objects, the following rules may be laid down; but they extend to certain classes only, and must be considered merely as general rules.

§ 460. *Primitive Substantives* have their gender often denoted by their vowels.

§ 461. Substantives having w or y as their remotest vowel are masculine; as,

Pwn	Twrch	Hyd	Pryd
Dwrn	Dwfr	Byd	Bryn
Cwr	Cwd	Clwyf	Bwyd

§ 462. Those that have o or e for their furthest vowel are of the feminine gender; as,

Tonn	Torch	Gwên	Sedd
Bronn	Fforch	Gên	Gwledd
Ffonn	Cod	Llêf	Nef.

§ 463. Those that have i before g are masculine; except *gwig*, *pig*, which are feminine.

§ 464. The remaining vowels including i under other circumstances are not susceptible of any kind of classification, being used indifferently in masculines or feminines. Indeed all that can be said with regard to the above mentioned vowels is, that w and y have a tendency to be of the masculine, and o and e a tendency to be of the feminine gender, for there are many exceptions; as *ffrwd*, *bod*, *cor*, *mor*, *cledd*, *hedd*, *medd*, &c.

§ 465. *Compound Substantives* have their gender often assigned to them, in accordance with the gender of the last of their component parts. For example, ty is masculine, and hence *budy*, *diotty*, *ysgoty*, are also masculine, though the former portions of the words, in

their separate state are feminine. But this rule does not always hold good; thus *tref* is feminine, *maerdref* is feminine, but *cantref* and *cartref* are both masculine.

§ 466. *Derivative Substantives* have their gender frequently indicated by their respective terminations.

§ 467. Those ending with the following suffixes are generally of the masculine gender; *deb, der, did, tid, dod, dra, edd, i, iant, awd, aint, id, ioni, ineb, ni, rwydd, wch, yd, wr, ur, ydd, yr, on, or, ad, had, og, yn, w, yll*.

§ 468. Such as end with these terminations are generally feminine; *aa, aeg, eb, ed, eg, en, es, ell, fa, ig, oni, oneg, oniaeth, red, wraig*.

§ 469. *Aeth* and *iaeth, ach, an*, are sometimes masculine and sometimes feminine, as *pennaeth, mas., llywodraeth, fem., gwahaniaeth, mas., iachawdwriaeth, fem., corach, mas., gwraeth, fem., llyfran, mas., trefan, fem.*

§ 470. *Ai* is frequently of common gender; as *telynai, magai, gwestai*.

§ 471. Many words, which are considered as masculine in one district, are used as feminine in another. For instance, the word *troed* is masculine in the dialect of North Wales, as *y troed hwn*; but in South Wales it is the feminine gender, as *y droed hon*. The words, *effaith, ysgrif, rhif, nifer, clust, sain, munyd, man, gohog, ystyr, graad*, and others have the same peculiarity of usage.

§ 472. The same words are often masculine or feminine in accordance with the idea they convey. For example, the word *doethineb* has the construction of a masculine substantive in ordinary discourse; but when it is, by a figure of speech, considered as a person or agent, it takes the construction of a substantive of the feminine gender.

“*Doethineb* a adeiladodd *ei thy, hi* a naddodd *ei saith* golofn. *Hi* a laddodd *ei hanifeithaid; hi* a gymmysgodd *ei gwin*, ac a huliodd *ei burdd.*” (Prov. ix. 1, 2.)

§ 473. **WEAK NAMES.** Masculine is that which appertains to man and a male, as *gwynn, swrr, bychan, tynn*. Feminine is that which appertains to woman, as *gwenn, bechan, sorr, tenn*. Common is that which belongs to both, whether male or female, as *doeth, hir, da, balch*; for we say *gwr doeth*, and *gwraig ddoeth*; therefore *doeth* is common to both. The expression *gwr gwenn, gwraig gwynn*, would be an incorrect mode of speech, for a weak name and a strong name ought to agree in gender and number.

§ 474. With respect to weak names or adjectives of the primitive

kind, the discrimination of the masculine and feminine genders is but partial, whilst the derivatives are exempt from it altogether, with the exception of two or three, such as *bychan*, *melyn*, *tywyll*, which make *bechan*, *melen*, *tywell*, in the feminine.

§ 475. As in the case of strong names, the feminine gender is formed from the masculine, by changing *w* into *o*, and *y* into *e*.

§ 476. The following is a list of words of the former description,

Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
Blwng	blong	Pwl	pol
Brwnt	bront	Rhwth	rhoth
Crwm	crom	Swrr	sorr
Crwn	cron	Swrth	sorth
Dwl	dol	Tlws	tlos
Ffiwch	ffloch	Twn	ton
Llwm	llom	Trwsgl	trosgl
Mwll	moll	Trwm	trom.

§ 477. The following change *y* into *e*,

Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
Brych	brech	Hyll	hell
Chwyrn	chwern	Llym	llem
Gwypm	gwemp	Syth	seth
Gwynn	gwenn	Sych	sech
Gwydn	gwedn	Tynn	tenn.
Gwyrdd	gwerdd		

§ 478. *Gwyllt* is an exception; as *ych gwyllt*, a wild ox; *hwyaeden wyllt*, a wild duck. This happens probably on account of the ambiguity which otherwise would be created, since *gwellt* stands also for straw.

§ 479. These adjectives lose their characteristic, when they take the plural form, or have any of the terminations, by which they become derivatives. Under those circumstances they retain the form in which they denote the masculine gender; as *cangen wydnaidd*, not *wednaidd*; *cerrig gwynnion*, not *gwennion*.

§ 480. The following numeral adjectives have distinctions to mark the gender;

Mas.	Fem.	Mas.	Fem.
Dau	dwy	Deufed	dwyfed
Tri	tair	Trydydd	trydedd
Pedwar	pedair	Pedwerydd	pedwaredd.

§ 481. The gender is distinguished in compounds of the above words; as *tri-ar-ddeg*, *tair-ar-ddeg*; *deufed-ar-hugain*, *dwyfed-ar-hugain*; but the word *second* is generally expressed in Cymraeg by *ail*. *Deuddeg* is not changed, *dau* qualifying the word *deg*, not the noun following.

SECTION XXXI.

NUMBER.

§ 482. Names have two numbers; the singular and plural. The singular denotes one thing, as *dyn*; the plural denotes many, or a number of things, as *dynion*.

§ 483. Number is the only thing which gives cases or various endings to Cymric nouns. Hence our grammarians usually say, "dychwyl; unic a lluosoc;" that is to say, *case; singular and plural*.

§ 484. There are two kinds of singular names; an individual singular name, and an aggregate singular name. An individual singular name is that which, in regard to sense, involves no multitude, as *dyn*. An aggregate singular name is that which in respect of sense, implies a multitude, as *llu, torf, pobl, cenhedl*. There is also a plural aggregate name, as *lluoedd, torfoedd, pobloedd, cenhedloedd*.

§ 485. STRONG NAMES. The plural is generally derived from the singular; and there are three ways in which it is formed; by the inflection of the vowels, by the addition of a termination, and by both inflecting the vowels and adding a termination.

§ 486. The nouns which become plural by inflection of vowels are for the most part primitives, with their compounds. The nature of the inflections will be seen in the following list:

	Sing.	Plur.
a into ai (ei)	bran	brain
a ... ei	march	meirch
a ... y (i)	bustach	bustych
e ... i	draen	drain
e ... y	cyllell	cyllyll
o ... y	ffonn	ffynn
a and e ... e and y	aber	ebyr
a and a ... e and ai	dafad	defaid
a and a ... e and y	afall	efyll
a and w ... e and y	asgrwn	esgyrn.

§ 487. The following are irregular, and occur only in these words and their compounds:

Singular.	Plural.
Ci	cwn
Gwr	gwyr

Sing.	Plur.
Ty	tai
Troed	traed
Croen	crwyn
Oen	wyn.

§ 488. Very many derivative and compound nouns are made plural by changing a of the ultimate into ai (ei ;) as

Singular.	Plural.
Offeiriad	offeiriaid
Llygad	llygaid
Ehediad	ehediaid
Canwriad	canwriaid
Gwial	gwiaid
Llyffant	llyffaint.

§ 489. The following is a list of the plural terminations of substantives. *Ach, adon, aid, ain, aint, au, awr, ed, edd, en, i, iaid, iau, ion, od, os, oedd, on, ydd, yr.*

	Sing.	Plur.
Ach	dyn	dynion, dynionach
Adon	gordderch	gordderchadon
Aid, iaid (eit, ieit)	llygad, eog	llygaid, eogiaid
Ain, (ein)	penn	pennain
Aint (eint)	gof	gofaint
Au (eu, ou)	penn	pennau
Awr (aur)	gwaew	gwaewawr
Ed (et)	merch	merched
Edd (ed)	bys	bysedd
En	ych	ychen
I	perth	perthi
Iau (iou, ieu, yeu)	esgid	esgidiau
Od (ot)	colommen	colommenod
Os	plentyn	plant, plantos
Oedd (oed)	mynydd	mynyddoedd
On, ion (yon)	llw, dyn	llwon, dynion
Wys (ois)	Mon	Monwys
Ydd (yd)	afon	afonydd
Yr	brawd	brodyr.

§ 490. Au, eu or ou, is one of the most common terminations, involving the idea of *going*, and would seem to have been affixed to the second numeral, on account of that number being, as it were, the first departure from individuality ; Cymraeg, dau (dy-au ;) Sans. dwau ; Pers. du ; Russ. dva, dvie ; Lat. duo, duæ, i. e. duai : Erse da ; Gr. δὺω ; Mæso-Gothic, twai ; Old High German, tue. Iau, iou, ieu, yeu, is but another form of the same termination. The oldest form in which it appears in Cymric documents is ou or iou.

§ 491. Eu and oed (now au and oedd) are often used indiscriminately by the mediæval writers, as *tyreu, tyroed* (Mab. i. 250, 285, iii. 297.)

§ 492. They likewise occasionally used *ed* (*edd*;) where we would now use *oedd*; thus in the *Mabinogion* we meet with *dyfred*, (iii. 299;) *breninad*, (i. 277. iii. 263;) *ynysedd*, (ii. 391, 299;) *mynydedd*, (i. 11.) Indeed a much greater laxity was observed in the use of plural suffixes, down to a comparatively late period, than is now the case.

§ 493. *Wys* makes an aggregate plural.

§ 494. The following are the examples of the formation of plural nouns, by both inflecting the vowels and adding terminations :

	Sing.	Plur.
a into e	car	ceraint
a ... ei	inab	meibion
ae ... ei	maen	meini
ai ... ei	gair	geiriau
ai ... a	gwraig	gwragedd
au (eu) ... eu	paun	peunod
aw (au) ... ew (eu)	cawr	cewri
aw (au) ... o	awr	oriau
ei ... a	deigr	dagrau
w ... y	bwrdd	byrddau
w and w ... y and y	cwmmlwl	cymmlau.

§ 495. *Chwaer* makes *chwirydd* in the plural; the word might have been originally *chwior*, (Arm. *c'hoar*. Corn. *hor*. Lat. *soror*.)

§ 496. Many substantives, made plural by inflection of vowels, may also be rendered plural by adding a suffix; as,

Sing.	Plur.
Pont	pynt or pontydd
Aber	ebyr or aberoedd
Alarch	elyrch or alarchod
Astell	estyll or astellod.

§ 497. There is in general a resemblance between those objects, the plural names of which are formed with the same termination; though the similarity is not always so defined as to admit of a very distinct classification. The analogy, however, is obvious in the following examples :

§ 498. Plurals in *od*; *bwystfilod*, *pysgod*, *llwynogod*, *ysgyfarnogod*, *cwningod*, *llygod*, *hyrddod*, *bychod*, *eryrod*, *linosod*, *colommenod*, *ceiliogod*.

§ 499. Plurals in *oedd*; *nefoedd*, *bydoedd*, *tiroedd*, *ynysoedd*, *dyfr-oedd*, *moroedd*, *gwynioedd*, *pobloedd*, *tyrfoedd*, *miloeidd*, *cannoedd*, *oes-oedd*, *amseroedd*, *blynyddoedd*, *misoedd*.

§ 500. Plurals in *ydd*; *trefydd*, *heolydd*, *meusydd*, *ffosydd*, *nentydd*, *coedydd*, *afonydd*, *pontydd*, *bronnydd*, *magwrydd*, *aelwydydd*.

§ 501. Plurals in *ion*; *meibion*, *trigolion*, *tywysogion*, *prydyddion*, *cantorion*, *anyglion*.

§ 502. Plurals in *edd*; *ewinedd*, *dannedd*, *bysedd*.

§ 503. The termination *iaid* is frequently used in nouns derived from proper names, and answers to the English terminations *ites, ians, ists, &c.* as, *Israeliaid, Aiphthiaid, Calfiniaid*. The last *i* is here the characteristic of the plural, the singular being *Israeliaid, &c.*

§ 504. The following are laid down as general rules for the formation of the plural number of derivative substantives.

§ 505. Derivatives ending in *der, did, dawd* or *dod, edd, (ed,) yd, yr, r, aeth, as*, are rendered plural by adding *au* (eu ou;) as

Sing.	Plur.
Cyfiawnder	cyfiawnderau
Gwendid	gwendidau
Awdurdod	awdurdodau
Gwaeledd	gwaeleddau
Bywyd	bywydau
Papyr	papyrau
Llyfr	llyfrau
Marwolaeth	marwolaethau
Priodas	priodasau.

§ 506. Substantives ending in *ant* or *iant* change *t* into *n*, and add *au*, as *tant, tannau, meddiant, meddiannau*.

§ 507. Those which end in *wr, iwr, (ur)* form the plural by adding *wyr, as*

Swynwr	swynwyr
Heliwr	helwyr.

§ 508. In *wraig, (wreic)* by adding *wragedd, as*
Llaethwraig llaethwragedd.

§ 509. In *ur, adur*, by adding *on, iau, (ieu,) iaid, (ieit;)* as
Awdwr awduron
Gwniadur gwniaduriau
Pechadur pechaduriaid.

§ 510. In *ydd, (yd,) awr, (aur,) or or, awg, or og, (oc,)* by adding *ion; as*

Ysgrifennydd	ysgrifennyddion
Cantor	cantorian
Marchog	marchogion.

§ 511. In *es*, by adding *au, (eu, ou;)* as
Brenhines brenhinesau.

§ 512. In *ai*, by adding *eion; as*
Gwestai gwesteion.

§ 513. In *ad, (at,) or iad, (iat,)* by adding *aïd, (eit,) and au, (eu.)* When denoting a verbal noun, it is made plural by adding *au, (eu;)* when signifying a person, *a* is changed into *ai; as*

Caniad	caniadau
Offeiriad	offeiriaid.

§ 514. Those ending in *ach* (reproach) become plural by adding *od; as*

Bwbach	bwbachod.
--------	-----------

§ 515. In *awd*, (aut,) or *od*, (ot,) by adding *au*, (eu, ou,) or *iau*, (ieu ;) as

Traethawd	traethodau
Ffonnod	ffonnodiau.

§ 516. In *an*, (person,) by adding *od*, (ot;) in *an* (instrument,) by adding *au*, (eu, ou ;) as

Lleban	llebanod
Cryman	crymanau.

§ 517. In *od*, (et,) by adding *au*, (eu, ou,) *ion* ; as

Adduned	addunedau
Colled	colledion.

§ 518. In *ell*, by adding *yll*, *au*, (eu, ou,) *i* ; as

Cyllell	cyllyll
Troell	troellau
Bothell	bothelli.

§ 519. In *fa*, by adding *oedd*, (oet,) *eydd* ; as

Cynulleidfa	cynulleidfaoedd
Llogfa	llogfeydd.

§ 520. Some few substantives are made plural from the adjective of the singular substantive ; as

Gwlaw	gwlawogydd	from gwlawog
Llif	llifogydd	... llifog
Gras	grasusau	... grasus
Cristion	Cristionogion	... Cristionog.

§ 521. A few words have a double plural ; i. e. one plural formed from the other ; as

Llo	lloi, lloiau
Ty	tai, teiau
Gen	genau, geneuau.

§ 522. In some cases the singular is formed from the plural, by adding the syllable *yn* masculine, or *en* feminine ; as

Plur.	Sing.
Adar	aderyn
Plant	plentyn
Gwenyn	gwenynen
Mes	mesen.

But these are aggregate plurals, and their singulars are formed after the manner of diminutives.

§ 523. Some substantives want the plural number. These are

§ 524. Firstly, abstract nouns ; as *tristwch*, *tyndra*, *ffyddlondeb*, *atgaswydd*.

§ 525. Secondly, nouns denoting substance, mass, &c. as *aur*, *arian*, *pra*, *efydd*, *baw*, *gwaed*, *bara*, *ymenyn*, *llaeth*, *mel*, *caus*, *pridd*.

§ 526. But such words as *yd*, *haidd*, which may be termed nouns aggregate, take a plural termination, when various collections of the same are designed to be expressed. *Yd*, corn, *yda*, various sorts of

corn. The individual singular is formed by inflecting the vowels, and adding *yn* or *en*; as *had*, *hedyn*; *yd*, *yden*; *haidd*, *heiddén*.

§ 527. A few words have no singular; as *ymysgaroedd*, *gwartheg*, *da*.

§ 528. The plural of a few words is formed by prefixing a numeral adjective. This is frequently the case with respect to the names of those parts of the animal frame of which there are pairs; as *dwylaw*, *dwyfron*, *deudroed*, *deulin*. *Llaw* has no other plural; but *bronn*, *troed*, and *glin*, make also *bronnau*, *traed*, *gliniau*, in the plural.

§ 529. Some grammarians consider such nouns as are compounded of *dau* or *dwy*, as of the dual number. And it may be remarked, as favourable to this idea of Celtic dualism, that in the Gaelic dialect a relic of it seems to have been retained in the manner of counting objects. Thus the singular number is used with *one* and *two*, the plural beginning with *three*; as *aon tigh*, *da thigh*, *tri dighean*. Such a structure, however, is unknown in the Cymraeg; and if we must call *deudroed*, *dwylaw*, dual, merely because they are compounded of *dau* and *dwy*, on the same principle we ought to call *tridieu*, *dengur*, &c. trinal, decadal, &c.

§ 530. WEAK NAMES. Some adjectives are susceptible of a plural number to agree with a plural noun or pronoun; others are used in the singular, even when the noun is plural; as *dynion duon*, *dynion da*.

§ 531. The adjectives which admit of being made plural are mostly *primitives*; but sometimes *compounds* and *derivatives*.

§ 532. There are two ways of forming the plural of adjectives; by the mutation of their vowels, and by the addition of a syllable.

§ 533. The following is a list of the vocal inflections in the former case:

	Sing.	Plur.
a into ai (ei)	bychan	bychain
a ... ei	hardd	heirdd
a and a ... e and y (i)	cadarn	cedyrn
a and e ... e and y (i)	caled	celyd
ae ... ei	llaes	lleision
ai (ei) ... ei	main	meinion
w (u) ... y (i)	trwm	trymmion
aw (au) ... o	tlawd	tlodion.

§ 534. The syllable that is added is *on* to words ending in a vowel; and *ion*, to words ending in a consonant; as

du	duon
gwynn	gwynnion.

§ 535. It is observable that in some instances the two modes are combined; thus, *llaes*, *lleision*; *tlawd*, *tlodion*.

§ 536. Some adjectives have two plural forms; as *caled*, plural *celyd* or *caledion*; *hardd*, plural, *heirdd* or *heirddion*.

§ 537. The plural number is formed from the masculine gender, never from the feminine. *Cerryg gwynion*, not *cerryg gwenion*.

§ 538. Most adjectives, however, especially the derivatives, have no plural; the singular number being put in construction with nouns and pronouns of the plural number. The following are examples:

Primitives;—*Caniadau adar gwar gwydd irion*. Rhys Goch.

Compounds;—*Delwau hoywdeg lampau hydr*. Ieuan Rhydderch.

Derivatives;—*Adeg serchogion dynion dawngar*. Rhys Goch.

§ 539. Some derivatives assume the plural form only when they are used substantively, as *serchogion* in the line just quoted.

§ 540. Numeral adjectives, of course, are not susceptible of a change of number. The same numeral cannot be used in both numbers; it must be either always singular or always plural. They, therefore, have no plural inflection. But, contrary to other adjectives, numerals of plurality have the nouns, before which they are placed, generally in the singular number, as

O'r *pedair camp ar hugain, deg gwrolgamp y sydd*. Myvyrian Archaiology, iii. 197.

SECTION XXXII.

NUMERALS.

§ 541. Numerals are partly adjectives, partly adverbs. The cardinals denoting number, *un, dau, tri*, and the ordinals, denoting the place or number in succession, *cynaf, eilfed, trydydd*, are adjectives; whilst the numerals, answering to the question, how many times? *unwaith, dwywaith, teirgwaith*; how many fold? *unplyg, deublyg, triplyg*, are adverbs. If, however, these were resolved into their component parts, they might be considered, the former an adjective, the latter a substantive; *un waith, dwy waith, tair gwaith; un plyg, dau blyg, tri phlyg*.

§ 542. *Dau, tri, pedwar*, have *dwy, tair, pedair*, for the feminine gender, which form they assume in all their combinations, when used with feminine nouns: as, “*teir llong ardec*.” Mab. iii. 90.

§ 543. The ordinals, with the exception of the first four, are formed by suffixing *ed* or *fed* to the cardinals; as *chweched, seithfed*. *Med* is a South Wales idiom equivalent to *hyd*, which is the expression used in North Wales. “*Ar hit foes ar trau dir nant ar i hit diguairt bet licat finnaun i cleuion*.” Lib. Land. 218.

Yn waed o'i thraed *fed* ei thrwyn. W. Lleyn.

§ 544. These have no distinction of gender, except *trydydd* and *pedwerydd*, which become *trydedd* and *pedwaredd* in the feminine.

§ 545. The numeration of the Cymry seems to have been originally digital. They counted by means of different words of a radical

character up to ten, which they considered as a perfect number. Hence in the Laws of Hywel Dda we are told, "there is no number beyond ten," (Welsh Laws.) And Llywelyn Sion enlarges; "ten is the division point of numbers, and by decades all numbers are arranged until language can not give them names. Ten is the perfect circle, and ten within ten, or ten about ten, will be within and without the circumference, circle within circle for ever." (Iolo MSS. p. 621.) Numbers above ten are formed either by simply uniting two or more numerals, as *deuddeg*, or by the aid of the preposition *ar*, or the conjunction *a*, as *tri-ar-ddeg*, *pump-a-deugain*. The completion of the second ten is named *ugain*, (*ugeint*;) and this word in its multiplicative form designates the fulfilment of four such revolutions respectively, the termination of the fifth being called *cant*, a word literally meaning a *circle*. Ten *cant* make a *mil*, ten *mil* make a *myrdd*, ten *myrdd* make a *mwnt*, *catyrfa* or *rhiallu*, ten *mwnt*, &c. make a *mynta*, *buna*, or *catyrfa fawr*; that is a million.

§ 546	Cardinals.	Ordinals.	Numeral Adverbs.
1	Un	Cyntaf, (centaf, cintam) unfed	Unwaith, untro, unplyg
2	Dau, (deu, dou) f. dwy (dwi)	Ail, (eil) eilfed, deufed f. dwyfed	Dwywaith, &c.
3	Tri, f. tair, (teir)	Trydydd, (tritid) f. trydedd	Teirgwaith, &c.
4	Pedwar, (petuar, petguar) f. pedair, (pedeyr)	Pedwerydd, (pedwryd, petuerid) f. pedwar-edd, (petguared)	Pedeirgwaith, &c.
5	Pump, (pimp)	Pummed, (pemhet, pemet, pymet, pimphet)	Pumwaith, &c.
6	Chwech	Chwched, chwechfed, (chueched, chuechet, chuehet)	Chwegwaith, &c.
7	Saith, (seith)	Seithfed, (seithmet, seythuet, seithuet, seihuet seythued)	Seithwaith
8	Wyth, (oith)	Wythfed, (oithmet, wythuet, uythued, huethuet, huyduet)	Wythwaith
9	Naw, (nau)	Nawfed, (naumet, nawuet)	Nawgwaith
10	Deg, (dec)	Degfed, (decued, decuet)	Dengwaith
11	Unarddeg	Unfed-ar-ddeg	Unwaith ar-ddeg
12	Deuddeg	Deuddegfed	Deuddengwaith
13	Tri (f. tair) ar ddeg	Trydydd, (f. trydedd) -ar-ddeg	Teirgwaith ar-ddeg
14	Pedwar (f. pedair) ar-ddeg	Pedwerydd (f. pedwar-edd) -ar-ddeg	Pedeirgwaith-ar-ddeg
15	Pymtheg	Pymthegfed	Pymthegwaith
16	Un-ar-bymtheg	Unfed-ar-bymtheg	Unwaith-ar-bymtheg
17	Dau (f. dwy) -ar-bymtheg	Deufed (f. dwyfed) -ar-bymtheg	Dwywaith-ar-bymtheg

18	Tri (<i>f. tair</i>)-ar-bymtheg, deunaw	Trydydd (<i>f. trydodd</i>)-ar-bymtheg deunawfed	Teirgwaith-ar-bymtheg
19	Pedwar (<i>f. pedair</i>)-ar-bymtheg	Pedwarydd (<i>f. pedwaredd</i>)-ar-bymtheg	Pedairgwaith-ar-bymtheg
20	Ugain, (<i>ugaint</i>)	Ugeinfed	Ugeinwaith
30	Deg-ar-ugain	Degfed-ar-ugain	Dengwaith-ar-ugain
40	Deugain	Deugeinfed	Deugeinwaith
50	Deg-a-deugain	Degfed-a-deugain	Dengwaith-a-deugain
60	Trigain (<i>or triugain</i>)	Trigeinfed	Trigeinwaith
70	Deg-a-thrugain	Degfed-a-thrugain	Dengwaith-a-thrugain
80	Pedwarugain	Pedwar-ugeinfed	Pedwar-ugeinwaith
90	Deg a phedwarugain	Degfed-a-phedwarugain	Dengwaith-a-phedwar-ugain
100	Cant	Canfed	Canwaith
200	Deugant	Deuganfed	Deuganwaith
300	Trichant	Trichanfed	Trichanwaith
400	Pedwarcant	Pedwarcanfed	Pedwarcanwaith
500	Pumpcant	Pumcanfed	Pumcanwaith
600	Chwechant	Chwechanfed	Chwechanwaith
700	Seithcant	Seithganfed	Seithganwaith
800	Wythcant	Wythganfed	Wythganwaith
900	Nawcant	Nawcanfed	Nawcanwaith
1,000	Mil	Milfed	Milwaith
2,000	Dwyfil	Dwyfilfed	Dwyfilwaith, deu, &c.
3,000	Teirmil	Teirmilfed	Teirmilwaith
4,000	Pedairmil	Pedeirmilfed	Pedeirmilwaith
5,000	Pummil	Pummilfed	Pummilwaith
10,000	Myrdd	Myrddfed	Myrddwaith
100,000	Canmil, mwnt,	Canmilfed	Canmilwaith
1,000,000	Myrddiwn, mynta	Myrddiwnfed	Myrddiwnwaith
100,000,000	Milcanmil	Milcanmilfed	Milcanmilwaith
1,000,000,000	Milcanmyrdd	Milcanmyrddfed	Milcanmyrddwaith
100,000,000,000	Milcanmyrddiwn	Milcanmyrddiwnfed	Milcanmyrddiwnwaith

§ 547. There is reason to think that the connecting words *ar* and *a* were for the most part dispensed with in ancient times. Thus in the Oxford Glosses we find; "*is trimuceint hestawr mel,*" explained as "*in hestawr mel. x. is xxx.*" Cynddelw likewise calls eleven, *undeg*, and eleventh, *undegfed*,

Undec uad awen undecusd awyt.

A relic of this usage is still retained in *deuddeg*, *pymtheg*.

§ 548. *Unfed*, *deufed*, *f. dwyfed*, are seldom used except in conjunction with another numeral; as *unfed-ar-ddeg*, *y ddwyfed-ar-bymtheg*.

§ 549. Those of the numeral adverbs which answer to the question, "how many fold?" may also be called "multiplicatives." By

placing the pronoun *pob* before the cardinals, we form another class of numerals, equivalent to the "distributives" of the Latin ; as,

" *Gwascaru aoruc llu arthur bob un bob deu,*" (singuli vel bini.)
Mabinogion, ii. 235.

§ 550. When the names of the objects numbered are joined to periphrastic numerals, they usually take their place immediately after the first-mentioned numeral ; as

" *Yr un marchar dec ar vn arueu ardec.*" (Mab. ii. 47.)

SECTION XXXIII.

VERBS.

§ 551. A causative or a verb is any word or thing that denotes action or causation, from whatever person, or thing, or being, the causing may be, whether from, or towards any person, thing, or existence. That is to say, every word that denotes action or suffering ; and every word that involves causation, and that accompanied with time, mood, and person. Action ; as *caraf, dysgaf* ; suffering ; as, *ef a'm cerir, ef a'm dysgir.*

§ 552. There are two kinds of causatives or verbs ; a free causative, and a transitive causative.

§ 553. A free causative is that which has a sufficiency of the import of speech in itself, without having an object to another thing coming after ; as *cerddaf, eisteddaf, cysgaf.*

§ 554. A transitive causative is that which has an object to another thing coming after it ; as *gwelaf, chywaf, caraf* ; the object is the expression of what is seen, heard, or loved.

SECTION XXXIV.

FORMATION OF THE VERB.

§ 555. Many primitive words assume the threefold character of a substantive, an adjective, and a verb, in the original form ; as *bod*, a being, existing, to be. But in general each class has its peculiar feature denoted by suffixes. Thus, the verbs are mostly formed by

vowel terminations, because the vowels abstractedly express motion and action. Therefore derivative verbs of the infinitive mood are formed from other words by the addition of the following endings ;

a, au or hau, aw or o, i, and u ; as,		
Gwledda, <i>to feast</i> ,	from	gwledd, <i>a feast</i>
Llawenhau, (au) <i>to rejoice</i> ...		llawen, <i>merry</i>
Cwypaw, (o) <i>to fall</i> ...		owymp, <i>a fall</i>
Torri, <i>to break</i> ...		torr, <i>a break</i>
Talu, <i>to pay</i> ...		tal, <i>payment</i> .

§ 556. Verbs ending in a generally signify *to gather*, or *collect*, and are always formed from substantives, mostly of the plural number ; as *cneua*, *afalsua*, *yta*, *coetta*, *causa*, but sometimes of the singular number, as *cymmhorta*, *ceiniocca*.

§ 557. *Au* or *hau* is for the most part attached to adjectives, as *cyfiawnhau*, from *cyfiawn*, *rhyddhau*, from *rhydd* ; sometimes also to substantives, as *dyfrhau*, from *dwfr*. The proper element seems to be *aw*, the *h* being added in composition to give it emphasis.

Verbs of this form are productive or operative of the quality, or substance, implied in their roots.

§ 558. The *aw* or *o* is affixed to roots whose vowels are *i*, *u*, *ai*, *au*, *iw*, and *wy* ; as *rhif*, *rhifaw* (o,) *crug*, *crugaw* (o,) *tail*, *teilaw* (o,) *haul*, *haulaw*, (o,) *briw*, *briwaw* (o,) *twyll*, *twyllaw* (o.) North Wallians generally insert *i* before the final *aw* or *o* ; as *gwib*, *gwibiaw*.

§ 559. With respect to *i* and *u*, it would seem that, if the preceding syllable contains *o* or *oe*, or if it ends in *w*, the former suffix is employed ; as *torri*, *ofni*, *llonni*, *poeni*, *poeri*, *oeri*, *tewi*, *syliwi*, *meddwi*. In other cases *u* appears to be the common termination ; as *malu*, *pechu*, *baeddu*, *cysgu*. But there are several exceptions, especially in *e* ; as *medi*, *rhegi*, *peri*, *geni*, *pesgi*, *gwadeddi*, *gweini*, *crawni*, *cyflawni*, *hoelio*.

§ 560. Some verbs take the following elements, as their characteristic terminations, *ael*, *aeth*, *ain*, *al*, *ed*, *eg*, *fan*, *ial*, *ied*, *y*, *yd*, *yll* ; as,

Caffael, <i>to get</i>	from	caf, <i>a hold</i>
Marchogaeth, <i>to ride</i> ...		marchog, <i>a rider</i>
Llefain, <i>to cry</i> ...		llef, <i>a voice</i>
Arthal, <i>to growl</i> ...		arth, <i>a bear</i>
Cerdded, <i>to walk</i> ...		cerdd, <i>a walk</i>
Rhedeg, <i>to run</i> ...		rhed, <i>a course</i>
Ehedfan, <i>to fly about</i> ...		ehed, <i>a flight</i>
Nychial, <i>to languish</i> ...		nych, <i>a languishing</i>
Tybid, <i>to suppose</i> ...		tyb, <i>an opinion</i>
Hely, <i>to gather</i> ...		hel, <i>a gathering</i>
Syflyd, <i>to move</i> ...		syfl, <i>a tendency to move</i>
Sefyll, <i>to stand</i> ...		saf, <i>a stand</i> .

§ 561. The suffixes *ain*, *ian*, *al*, *ial*, *fan*, when joined to verbs, imply *frequency*, or a *gradual* and *continued* action, as may be inferred from

the preceding examples. When *ais* comes after a vowel, *f* is sometimes inserted, to prevent a hiatus vocalium ; as *wylofain*.

§ 562. Other verbs make no change or alteration whatever in their roots ; as,

<i>Atteb, to answer</i>	<i>Ennill, to gain</i>
<i>Edrych, to look</i>	<i>Gofyn, to ask</i>
<i>Gwrthod, to refuse</i>	<i>Aros, to stay</i>
<i>Addef, to confess</i>	<i>Cymhorth, to assist</i>
<i>Cadw, to keep</i>	<i>Gwrandaw (o,) to listen</i>
<i>Maddeu, to forgive</i>	<i>Egawr (or,) to open.</i>
<i>Gwarchae, to besiege</i>	<i>Cau, to shut.</i>

§ 563. Nevertheless, in the other moods, and throughout their tenses, all verbs assume one general form, which, in its several modifications indicative of manner, time, and person, is superadded to the root, causing the infinitive suffix, if any, to disappear. One conjunction by inflection is thus produced.

SECTION XXXV.

MOODS.

§ 564. A mood expresses the manner in which the action or state denoted by the verb exists.

§ 565. A causative has five moods ; namely, the indicative, when any thing is narrated, as *mi a garaf* ; imperative, when anything is commanded, as *yf ddiawd, car dy Dduw, amddiffyn dy gam* ; optative, when anything is wished, as, *mynnwn fy mod yn gyfoethawg, carwn di, pei'm cerit* ; conditional, when anything is covenanted, as *pan ddelych attaf, ti a geffi bais, or os gwnei imi gyllell, ti a geffi geiniauog* ; infinitive, when it has neither number nor person, as *canu, caru, dysgu* ; and there is one other mood, which is called supplicative, when any thing is prayed for, as *Duw trugarha wrthyf, Duw a'm hyfforddo* ; but this mood occurs under the form of the imperative. These moods, however, are best understood when they are to be met with in sentences.

§ 566. The second example of the supplicative mood, given above, does not come under the imperative form. Its inflection is that of the third person singular of the second future, common to the indicative, optative and conditional moods ; but which is a tense not enumerated by Edeyrn.

§ 567. The infinitive mood, as already observed, is formed for the most part by means of vowel terminations, which signify motion or action, and is in fact the verb in its simple and absolute state.

§ 568. The imperative and indicative moods are characterised by final inflections; whilst the optative and the conditional moods, though identical with the indicative in respect of inflections, are for the most part distinguished as of a subjunctive character by means of certain particles, or auxiliary words.

§ 569. Participles are formed in various ways; in the present tense active, by adding *ad* or *awod* to the root of the verb, or by placing *yn*, *gan*, *dan*, or *wrth* before the infinitive; in the passive by affixing *edig*, *adwy*, or *awg* to the root, and putting *yn* before such words, or more periphrastically by putting *yn*, *gan*, *dan*, *wrth*, or *yn cael*, *gan gael*, *dan gael*, *wrth gael*, with a possessive pronoun, before the infinitive.

§ 570. The perfect active assumes the termination *edig* or *awr*, or it is formed by putting *gwedi*, *ar ol*, *yn ol*, before the infinitive; the passive takes the termination *edig* or *otor*, or else has *gwedi*, *ar ol*, or *yn ol*, with a possessive pronoun before the infinitive, or *gwedi*, &c. *bod yn*, before the simple perfect.

§ 571. The future is formed by the termination *adwy* both in the active and passive; or periphrastically in the active by putting *ar*, or *ar fedr*, or *ar gael*, *ar fedr cael*, before the infinitive.

§ 572. It must be observed, with regard to the periphrastic participle of the active voice, that it also has the possessive pronoun before the infinitive, whenever the latter is followed by a personal pronoun, either expressed or understood.

SECTION XXXVI.

GENDER.

§ 573. A causative or a verb is of two genders, active, or that which denotes the performance of some action, as *caraf*, *dysgaf*, *adwaenaf*; and passive, which expresses the suffering of such action, as *i'm cerir*, *i'm dysgir*, *i'm adwaenir*.

§ 574. These again may be divided into personal and impersonal.

§ 575. A personal verb is that which admits of any one of the personal pronouns as its subject, and is distinguished by inflections expressive thereof; as *wyf*, *wyt*, *yw*; *caraf*, *ceri*, *car*.

§ 576. An impersonal verb is that which does not admit of a personal subject, unless it be a proposition, and has but one form in each tense; as *ydy*, *byddys*, *ei*, *edifarodd arnaf*, *synnodd arnaf*. All verbs passive partake more or less of the impersonal form.

§ 577. A gerund is formed by the termination *ator* ; a supine by *itor*.

§ 578. These last, as well as some of the participial forms, are not now much in use ; nevertheless in ancient authors they are not unfrequently to be met with ; as

Mynawc am rann *kwynkyator*. Ancurin.

Guelattor aruyddion
Guynyeith ar Saesson. Taliesin.

Llyfn mor, *brithator* tiredd. Llywarch Hen.

Berwitor brad yr anwir. Id.

Pob llyvar *llamitor* arnau. Llofod.

Chwerddid bryd wrth a *garawr*. Adage.

The gerund and supine forms occur in a poem of 58 lines by Cyn-dedelw no less than 15 times. See Myv. Arch. i. p. 205.

SECTION XXXVII.

NUMBER.

§ 579. Like a noun, a verb or causative has but two numbers ;

§ 580. That is to say, the singular and the plural.

SECTION XXXVIII.

SPECIES.

§ 581. There are two species of causatives or verbs ; simple, as *gwonaf* ; and compound, as *perffeithionaf*.

§ 582. A simple verb may be divided, moreover, into primitive and derivative.

§ 583. The primitive verbs are the basis on which the formation of all other verbs depends, through their various inflections ; or, strictly speaking, what appear to be inflections are identified, on due examination, as nothing else but the primitive verbs affixed to pronouns.

§ 584. Verbs of this class embrace three principles ; one is expressive simply of motion, another of time, and the third of person.

§ 585. The following is a list ;—

An	}	<i>to continue moving ; to proceed ; to go.</i>
Addu		
Athu		
Aethu		
Elu		

Bod, *to be* ; bu, *was* ; bi, *is to be* ; bydd, *is to be, will be.*

Yw, ydyw, ydi, *is* ; oes, *there is* ; oedd, ydoedd, *was* ; sy, sydd, *is.*

Mae, *is here is* ; ys, *is* ; ydys, *the action is going on.*

§ 586. Simple verbs become derivatives by means of certain prefixes, and more particularly the following primary ones ; *ad*, *dad*, *di*, *dir*, *dys*, *dy*, *dym*, *go*, *gor*, *lled*, *rhy*, *tra*, *ym*.

§ 587. These modify the action of the verb through its several moods and tenses. They may also be combined in various ways for the purpose of extending such modification, as exemplified in the section on Prefix Derivatives.

§ 588. One of the prefixes, *ym*, has a peculiar effect upon transitive verbs, of a nature that may warrant the classification of a third gender, under the designation of *reflective* or *middle*. That is to say, it denotes that an action is exerted by the agent upon himself, as *gwelliannu*, *to improve*, *ymwelliannu*, *to improve one's self*.

Nid anghlod *ymwelliannu*. Adage.

The reason, however, is obvious, consisting in the pronominal character of *ym*, which is but a modification of *mi*.

SECTION XXXIX.

TENSES.

§ 589. A verb or a causative has three tenses ; that is to say, the present, or that which is now, as *caraf* ; the perfect, or that which is past, as *cerais* ; the Future, or that which is yet to come, as *carwyf*. There are besides the imperfect, or that which is not completely past, as *carwn* ; and the pluperfect, or that which is past since many a day, as *caraswn*.

§ 590. Accordingly, the leading terminations or *gobenyddiau* of the verb are five, viz. Act., *af*, *wn*, *ais*, *aswn*, *wyf* ; Pass., *ir*, *id*, *wyd*, *asid*, *er*. It is supposed that the latter series, though now applicable to all persons of its different tenses alike, properly exhibits inflections of the third person singular, and that at one time each person had its own *gobennydd*, after the manner of the Latin passive. Some remains of the usage are still traceable in the Irish verbs.

§ 591. The present tense, as above, is indefinite, and may be taken to express any time from the present forward ; hence it is as often used in a future sense ; as,

Ni *charaf* un tro tra fo gauaf. Rhys Goch.

§ 592. When the present is to be marked precisely and emphatically, it is expressed periphrastically by the present of *bod*, and the present participle of the principal verb ; as *wyf yn caru* ; *ydy yn fy ngharu*. Sometimes in the passive the participle *yn cael* is added after the

present active *bod*, as *wyf yn cael fy ngharu*. *Gwn* and *adwaen* are exceptions.

§ 593. As the present is often employed to denote the future, so the future not unfrequently takes the place of the present ; as,

Gwell bach a *feddwyf* na mawr a *welwyf*. Adage.

§ 594. Indeed etymologically this form seems the most proper to denote the present, the inflection being none other than the present indicative of *bod*.

§ 595. There is another future, whose termination or *gobennydd* is *of*, in the active, and *awr* in the passive, expressing that an action shall have been completed before the occurrence of another action ; as,

Pan *ddyffont* I'r gad nid ymwadant. Golyddan.

When they *shall have come* to the battle, they will not deny themselves.

Nid iawnder nid *osawr*. Adage.

It is not equity where the course of life shall not have been completed.

§ 596. This tense, however, is not so much used in the indicative as in the optative and conditional moods.

§ 597. The imperfect tense in the inflected form is not usually employed to describe an act in past time and not completed, but rather, in what is generally considered the secondary use of the tense, to describe an act as being habitual, or continuous, or as constantly concurrent with another act. The ordinary imperfect tense is supplied by an auxiliary, *yr oedden*, with a participle.

§ 598. Properly the inflected form of the perfect tense denotes aorist past time. To express the perfect definite or perfect present, the present indicative of *bod* with a past participle is used.

§ 599. The imperative mood has only one tense, having its distinguishing termination or *gobennydd* identical with that of the future indicative.

§ 600. The tenses of the optative and conditional moods have a common form with those of the indicative respectively as far as regards inflections, but are distinguished by means of various auxiliaries which are put before them, as already noticed in § 568.

§ 601. The following is a list of the auxiliaries most usually employed ; they are arranged in two columns, the former being used with verbs having consonant initials, the latter with such as begin with vowels.

1.	2.	
A	A	<i>that acts, do, did, will</i>
Ai	Ai?	<i>is it ?</i>
Neu, neus	Neud, neus, neur?	<i>is not ?</i>
Ni, nis	Nid, nis	<i>not</i>
O, or, os	Od, or, os	<i>if</i>

Can	Can	since
Pan	Pan	when
Oni, onis	Onid, onis	be not
Os ni, os nis	Os nid, os nis	if not
Pe, pes, pei	Ped, pes	if
Mal pe, mal pes	Mal ped, mal pes	as if
Na, nas	Nad, nas	that not
Os na, os nas	Os nad, os nas	if that not
Mal na, mal nas	Mal nad, mal nas	so that not
Pe na, pe nas	Pe nad, pe nas	if that not
O na, O nas	O nad, O nas	oh that
Na, nas	Nad, nas	but that, that
Y, yd	Yr, ydd	that may
Mal y, mal yd	Mal yr, mal ydd	so that may.

§ 602. The infinitive has a present and a perfect tense, the latter being distinguished by the prefix *rhy*.

§ 603. A participle has a present, perfect, and future, formed as described in the Section on Moods.

SECTION XL.

PERSONS.

§ 604. A causative has three persons ; first, second, and third. The first is that which speaks of itself ; as *mi* in the singular, and *ni* in the plural number. The second is that which speaks to another ; as *ti* in the singular, and *chwi* in the plural number. The third is that which is spoken of by another, as *arall* and *efe* in the singular, and *lleill* and *hwy* or *hwynt* in the plural number.

§ 605. In other words, the first denotes the person who speaks ; the second, the person to whom he speaks ; and the third, that of which he speaks.

§ 606. The verb in its different personal terminations exhibits fragments of pronouns, which will enable us more or less to identify the particular person of any form ; thus,

Class 1.	Class 2.	Class 3.	Pron.
Sing.	Sing.	Sing.	
1—af	—ais	—wn	fi, ni=mi
2—i	—aist	—it	ti
3—root simply	—odd	—ai	o, e

L

Plur.	Plur.	Plur.	
1—wn	—om	—em or ym	ni mi=ni
2—wch	—och	—ech or ych	chwi
3—ant	—ont	—ent	hwynt.

§ 607. The personal character of these verbal endings will become still more obvious, by a comparison with the abbreviated pronouns deduced analytically from the different forms under which pronouns in regimen appear. See Section on Suffix Pronouns.

SECTION XLI.

CONJUGATION.

§ 608. There are two conjugations of Cymric verbs; one by inflections, and the other by auxiliaries.

§ 609. The conjugation by auxiliaries consists in such verbs taking the inflections, instead of the principal verb, which retains throughout its infinitive form.

§ 610. Some of the auxiliaries precede the principal verb immediately; others require prepositions to intervene.

SECTION XLII.

CONJUGATION OF THE PRIMITIVE VERBS.

ACTIVE GENDER.

1, Au, *to go*.

§ 611. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Au, *to go*

Perfect.

Rhyau, *to have gone*

§ 612. Participle.

Present.

Aad, yn au, awd (aud,) awr (aur,) *going*.

The forms *awd* and *awr* are now to be met with only as substantives, signifying respectively a *season* and an *hour*.

Perfect.

Edig (edic, etc,) *gone*

Futura.

Adwy (atoi, atui, itoi=Erse,—ithi,—thi, Corn. adow,) *being to go; capable of going*.

This also is now used substantively, and stands for a *gap* or a *pass*.

§ 613. Gerund.

Ator, *in going*

§ 614. Supine.

Itor, *to be going*

§ 615.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Awyf, *let me go*A
Aed (aet, at)

Plur.—Awn

Ewch

Aent

Dos is mostly used for *a* in the second person singular.Pisfo yr henfon,
Aed yn ei ohynffon. Adage.*Ewch*, feirdd, o Ddinbych i Fon. D ab Ieuan Ddu.

§ 616.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Af, *I go ; shall or will go*

Ai, ei (ey)

A, eiff.

Plur.—Awn

Ewch

Ant.

Nid á cosp ar ynyd. Adage.

Dau dafod a'm athrodant,
Ac yn yr un genau'r ant. Ieuan Deulwyn.Att y wreic vwyhaf a gery yd *ey* di. Mab. i. 278.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Awn, *I was going ; I used to go*

Ait, ant

Ai, aei.

Plur.—Aem, aym

Aech, aych

Aent, aynt, aint, eynt.

Pei gwypwn, nyt *ant* y wrthyfi pann aethost. Mab. i. 262.Pa ffordd yd *eynt* hwy heb y gereint? Mab. ii. 57.

Perfect.

Sing.—Ais, eisym, rhy—, *I have gone*

Aist, eist

Aes, aws.

Plur.—Aesam, aesom

Aesach, aesoch

Aesant.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Aeswn, euswn, rhy—, *I had gone.*

Aesit, eusit

Aesai, eusai.

Plur.—Aeseu, eusem

Aesech, eusech

Aesent, eusent.

PARTS OF SPEECH.

First Future.

Sing.—Awyf, *I shall or will go ; I go*

Awyt

Ayw.

Plur.—Aym

Aych

Awynt.

This form is seldom used except in the optative and conditional moods.

Second Future.

Sing.—Aof, rhyaof, *I shall have gone*

Aot, rhyaot

Ao, aho, rhyao.

Plur.—Aom, rhyaom

Aoch, rhyaoch

Aont, rhyaoant.

Nyt ami yn uyw yd *aho* ef y gernyw. Mab. ii. 245.

§ 617. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 618. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with the addition of the proper auxiliaries.

2, Addu, *to go*.

§ 619. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Addu, *to go*

Perfect.

Rhyaddu, *to have gone*.

§ 620.

Participle.

Present.

Addiad, yn addu, addawd, addawr, *going*.

Perfect.

Addedig, *gone*

Future.

Addadwy, *being to go ; capable of going*

§ 621.

Gerund.

Addator, *in going*

§ 622.

Supine.

Additor, *to be going*

§ 623.

Imperative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 624.

Indicative Mood.

Present. (Obsolete.)

Imperfect. (Obsolete.)

Perfect.

Sing.—Addwyf, eddwyf, rhy—, *I have gone*
 Addwyt, eddwyt
 Eddyw.

Plur.—Eddym
 Eddydh
 Eddynt, eiddynt.

O un i un *eddynt* oll. Llywarch Hên.

Nid *eddyw* heb dda dyn i wrtho. Llygad Gwr.

In the Powysian dialect *To day* is called *Y dydd eddyw*, i.e. the day that has gone.

Pluperfect. (Obsolete.)

First Future. (Obsolete.)

Second Future. (Obsolete.)

§ 625. Supplicative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 626. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

3, *ATHU*, *to go*.

§ 627. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Athu, *to go*

Perfect.

Rhyathu, *to have gone*

§ 628. Participle.

Present.

Athad, *yn athu*, *athawd*, *athawr*, *going*

Perfect.

Athedig, *gone*

Future.

Athadwy, *being to go*; *capable of going*

§ 629. Gerund.

Athator, *in going*

§ 630. Supine.

Athitor, *to be going*

§ 631. Imperative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 632. Indicative Mood.

Present. (Obsolete.)

Imperfect. (Obsolete.)

Perfect.

Sing.—*Athais*, *athwyf*, *rhy—*, *I have gone*

Athwyt, *athaist**Ethyw*, *athoedd*.

Plur.—Ethyw, atham
Ethyw, athach
Ethynt, athant.

Ethyw a'm enaid i ; *athwyf* yn wan,
Neud *athwyf* o nwyf, yn ail Garwy Hir. H. ab Owain.

Ethynt veirt er pau athwyd. P. y Moch.

Athwyf o'm gwiw-nwyf a'm gwedd. D. ab Gwilym.

Cychwyn a wna'ar ol Gweirydd a *rythoedd* hyd yn Nghaerwynt. Gr. ab Arthur.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Athaswn, rhythaswn, *I had gone*
Athasit, rhythasit
Athasai, rhythasai.

Plur.—Athasem, rhythasem
Athasech, rhythasech
Athasent, rhythasent.

First Future. (Obsolete.)

Second Future. (Obsolete.)

§ 633. Supplicative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 634. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

Y kynnullassei yateu glot yr *pan* *athod* y wrthynt hwy. Mab ii. 31.

4. AETHU, *to go*.

§ 635. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Aethu, to go

Perfect.

Rhyaethu, to have gone.

§ 636.

Participle.

Present.

Aethiad, yn aethu, aethawd, aethawr, going

Perfect.

Aethedig, gone

Future.

Aethadwy, being to go ; capable of going

§ 637.

Gerund.

Aethator, in going

§ 638.

Supine.

Aethitor, to be going

Seen in *traethitor* :

Ae *traethawd* *traethitor*. Cynddelw.

§ 639. Imperative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 640. Indicative Mood.

Present. (Obsolete.)

Imperfect.

Sing.—Aethwn, *I was going*

Aethit.

Aethai.

Plur.—Aethem

Aethech

Aethent.

*Aethai heb dant a chantawr**Ar goll hanes Arthur gawr.* Goronwy Owen.

Perfect.

Sing.—Aethym, aethum, euthym; (*Disinet. eutho.*) rhy—, *I have gone*

Aethost

Aeth, aethws.

Plu.—Aetham, aethom, euthom

Aethach, aethoch, euthoch

Aethant, aethont, euthont.

Tri lloneid Frydwen ydd *aetham* ni iddi. Taliesin.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Aethaswn, euthaswn, rhy—, *I had gone*

Aethasit, euthasit

Aethasai, euthasai.

Plur.—Aethasem, euthasem

Aethasech, euthasech

Aethasent, euthasant

First Future. (Obsolete.)

Second Future. (Obsolete.)

§ 641. Supplicative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 642. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

5. ELU, *to go.*

§ 643. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Elu, *to go*

Perfect.

Rhyelu, *to have gone*

§ 644. Participle.

Present.

Elad, yn elu, elawd, elawr, *going**Elawr* is now most commonly used as a substantive, and denotes a *tier*, that on which the dead *proceed* to their long home.

Perfect.

Eledig, *gone*

Future.

Eladwy, *being to go; capable of going*

§ 645.

Gerund.

Elator, *in going*

§ 646.

Supine.

Elitor, *to be going*

§ 647.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Elwyf, *let me go*

Ela

Eled, elid.

Plur.—Elwn

Elwch

Elent.

Instead of *ela*, *dos* is now commonly used.*Eled* rhin yn drin. Adage.*Elid* llaw gan droed. Adage.

§ 648.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Elaf, *I go; shall or will go*

Eli

Ela, el.

Plur.—Elwn

Elwch

Elant.

Y dyn a *el* i wlad nev,
Ni ddaw eilwaith dan ddolev. L. G. Cothi.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Elwn, *I was going*

Elit

Elai.

Plur.—Elem

Elech

Elent.

Perfect.

Sing.—Elais, rhyelais, *I have gone*

Elaist, rhyelaist

Eles, rhyeles.

Plur.—Elasam, rhyelasam

Elasach, rhyelasach

Elasant, rhyelasant.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Elaswn, (*Powysian*, elswn,) rhyel—, *I had gone*

Elasit, (... elsit)

Elasai, (... elsai.)

Plur.—Elasem (... elsem)

Elasech, (... elsech)

Elasant, (... elsent.)

First Future.

Sing.—Elwyf, *I shall or will go ; or I go*

Elwyt

Elyw.

Plur.—Elym

Elych

Elwynt.

This form is seldom used except in the optative and conditional moods.

Second Future.

Sing.—Elof, rhyelof, *I shall have gone*

·Elot, rhyelot

Elo, rhyelo.

Plur.—Elom, rhyelom

Eloch, rhyeloch

Elont, rhyelont.

Madden'n beiau i'n bywyd,

Er bar, cyn elom o'r byd. T. Ll. D. ab Hywel.

§ 649.

Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 650.

Optative and Conditional Moods.

These are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

6, Bod, *to be.*

Bod is called a verb substantive, because it is the most general expression of existence.

§ 651.

Infinitive Mood.

Present

Bod, (=Corn. *boz.* Armor. *bout.*) *to be*

Compare the Persian *buden*, and Russian *buit'*.

Ei dy yn Eglwys—

Dyna fudd, da iawn ei fod. H. Huwa, Bardd Coch.

Perfect.

Rhyfod, *to have been*

§ 652.

Participle.

Present.

Bwyad, bodiad, yn bod, bwyawd, bwyawr, *being*

Diffyruythyt daear drwy gareden dyn

Dinam wyat a vu ae goreu. M. ab Gwalchmai.

Perfect.

Bodedig, *endued with being*

Future.

Bodadwy, *going to be ; capable of being*

§ 653.

Gerund. (Obsolete.)

§ 654.

Supine. (Obsolete.)

§ 655.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Byddwyf, bwyf, *let me be*

Bydda, bydd, (byd)

Bydded, boed, (boet, poet,) bid, (bit.)

Plur.—Byddwn

Byddwch

Byddent, byddant, byddont, boent, bint.

A fo pen *bid* pont. Adage

§ 656.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Wyf, ydwyf, byddaf, *I am, I be*

Wyt, ydwyt, byddi

Yw, ydyw, ydiw, bydda, bydd, byddiff, bi, mac, oes, sydd,
sy, ys.Plur.—Ym, ydym, (*Dimetian*, wyn,) byddwn

Ych, ywch, ydych, byddwch, ydywch, yttiwch

Ynt, ydynt, byddant, maent.

Byddaf, throughout its several inflections has a future as well as a present signification. Compare with this the future tense of the verb substantive in the Russian language ;

Sing.—Budu, budet', budut'.

Plur.—Budem', budete, budut'.

Cad a f ar Byri Afon.

A Brython dyworbi. Myrddin.

Nid tafawd yw llafar car. Adage.

Hir ddywedyd, rhoi ydd ydywch,

Yw cofiau am bob cyff ywch. Ieuan Tew.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Oeddwn, yttoeddwn, byddwn, bywn, bawn, *I was, I existed*

Oeddit, byddit, bait

Oedd, ydoedd, (yttoed,) byddai, bai.

Plur.—Oeddem, oeddym, ydoeddem, byddem, byddym, baem, beym

Oeddech, oeddych, ydoeddech, byddech, byddych, baech,
beych.Oeddent, oeddynt, ydoeddent, (yttoedynt,) byddent, bydd-
ynt, baent, beynt.

The affinity of *oeddwn* with the Latin *essem* will appear very evident through the medium of the Cornish ; thus,

Cymraeg. Yn eich mysg *pan oeddwn*.Cornish. In agis mysk *pan esen*. Pass. 75. 1.Latin. Inter vos *cum essem*.Talhaiarn, bardd *ydoedd*, a gwr dysgedig a chall, a da *oedd* efe. Iolo MSS.Yn y lle *ydoedem* yn chwara. Mab. ii. 24.Gwr a *vei gystal* ag ef. Mab. ii. 25.*Bydder* praff heddyw y pruned oi fedd. D. Benfras.

Perfect.

Sing.—Buais, bum, buwyf, (*Dimetician*, buo,) rhy—, *I have been*

Buaist, buost

Bues, bu, buwa, buwys, buoedd.

Plur.—Buasam, buasom, buam, buom,
Buasach, buasoch, buach, buoch
Buasant, buant.

Compare this tense in some of its forms with the Latin.

Sing.—Fui (olim fuim ?)

Plur.—Fuimus

Fuisti.

Fuistis

Fuit.

Fuerunt

Yr gaer y buaswn y nos gynt. Mab. i. 10.

Buwyf Llywelyn biau. D. Benfras.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Buaswn, buwn, buoeddwn, rhyf—, *I had been*

Buasit, buit, buoeddit

Buasai, buai, buoed dai.

Plur.—Buasem, buesym, buem, buoeddem

Buasech, buesyech, buech, buoeddech

Buasent, buesynt, buent, buoeddent.

The first form of this tense bears a near relation to the Latin pluperfect, especially if we restore the *s* in the place of *r*, where there is reason to believe that it originally stood.

Sing.—Fuesam

Plur.—Fuesamus

Fueas

Fueatis

Fueat

Fueant.

First Future.

Sing.—Byddwyf, bythwyf, bwyf, *I shall or will be; I am*

Byddwyt, bythwyt, bwyt

Byddyw, bythyw.

Plur.—Byddym, bythym, bwym

Byddych, bythyech, bwych

Byddwynt, bythwynt, bwynt.

This form is seldom used except in the optative and conditional moods. Compare with it the indefinite or subjunctive form in the Persian, which is also termed a future.

Sing.—Buvem, buvi, buved

Buvm, buvid, buvend.

Second Future.

Sing.—Byddof, bythof, bof, rhyf—, *I shall have been.*

Byddot, bythot, bot, byddych, bych

Byddo, bytho, bo.

Plur.—Byddom, bythom, bom

Byddoch, bythoch, boch

Byddont, bythont, bont.

Ys gwaë vro ni bo krefyd. Llefoed.

- § 657. Supplicative Mood.
This mood is formed like the imperative.
- § 658. Optative and Conditional Moods
These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.
Ni obeithiaf na bythwyf. W. Lley.

PASSIVE GENDER.

1. AU.

- § 659. Participle.
Present.
Yn edig, yn adawg, *being gone*
Yn adwy, *being to be gone*
Perfect.
Edig, otor, *gone*
Future.
Adwy, *being about to be gone*
- § 660. Imperative Mood.
Aer, aid, *be there a going*
Aer pan eler, doer pan ddeler. L. G. Cothi.
- § 661. Indicative Mood.
Present.
Aer, eir, *there is a going ; there will be a going*
Imperfect.
Aid, aed, eid aesid, *there was a going*
Perfect.
Awyd, rhyawyd, *there has been a going*
Pluperfect.
Aesid, rhyaesid, *there had been a going*
First Future.
Air, eir, *there will be a going ; there is a going*
Second Future.
Aer, rhyaer, *there shall have been a going*
- § 662. Supplicative Mood.
This mood is formed like the imperative.
- § 663. Optative and Conditional Moods.
These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.
Rhaid ymddiddwyn a'r byd os eir i'r nef. Adage.

2. ADDU.

- § 664. Participle.
Present.
Yn addedig, yn addawg, *being gone*
Yn addadwy, *being to be gone*
Perfect.
Addedig, addotor, *gone*

Future.

Addadwy, *being about to be gone.*

§ 665. Imperative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 666. Indicative Mood.

Present. (Obsolete.)

Imperfect. (Obsolete.)

Perfect.

Eddwyd, rhyeddwyd, *there has been a going*

Cau a wnaf fy nynyw llwyd

Y ddeuddwrn yr lle'dd *eddwyd.* D. ab Gwilym.

Pluperfect. (Obsolete.)

First Future. (Obsolete.)

Second Future. (Obsolete.)

§ 667. Supplicative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 668. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

3, ATHU.

§ 669. Participle.

Present.

Yn athedig, yn athawg, *being gone*Yn athadwy, *being to be gone*

Perfect

Athedig, athotor, *gone*

Future.

Athadwy, *being about to be gone.*

§ 670. Imperative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 671. Indicative Mood.

Present. (Obsolete.)

Imperfect. (Obsolete.)

Perfect.

Athwyd, rhyathwyd, *there has been a going*

Pluperfect.

Athasid, athesid, rhyath—, *there had been a going*

First Future. (Obsolete.)

Second Future. (Obsolete.)

§ 672. Supplicative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 673. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

4, AETHU.

§ 674. Participle.

Present.

Yn athedig, yn aethawg, *being gone*Yn aethadwy, *being to be gone*

PARTS OF SPEECH.

Perfect.

Aethedig, aethotor, *gone.*

Future.

Aethadwy, *being about to be gone.*

§ 675. Imperative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 676. Indicative Mood.

Present. (Obsolete.)

Imperfect.

Aethid, aethed, *there was a going*

Perfect.

Aethwyd, aethpwyd, rhyaeth—, *there has been a going*

Pluperfect.

Aethasid, aethesid, rhyaeth—, *there had been a going*

First Future. (Obsolete.)

Second Future. (Obsolete.)

§ 677. Supplicative Mood. (Obsolete.)

§ 678. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

5, ELU.

§ 679. Participle.

Present.

Yn eledig, yn elawg, *being gone*Yn eladwy, *being to be gone*

Perfect.

Eledig, elotor, *gone*

Future.

Eladwy, *being about to be gone*

§ 680. Imperative Mood.

Eler, elid, *be there a going*

§ 681. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Elir, *there is (shall or will be) a going*

Imperfect.

Elid, eled, *there was a going*

Perfect.

Elwyd, rhyelwyd, *there has been a going*

Pluperfect.

Elasid, elsid, rhyel—, *there had been a going*

First Future.

Elir, *there shall or will be (is) a going*

Second Future.

Eler, rhyeler, *there shall have been a going*

§ 682. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 683. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

6, Bod.

§ 684. Participle.

Present.

Yn fodedig, yn fodawg, *being endued with existence*

Yn fodadwy, *capable of being endued with existence*

Perfect.

Bodedig, *endued with existence*

Future.

Bodadwy, *being about to be endued with existence.*

§ 685. Imperative Mood.

Bydder, byddid, *let there be*

§ 686. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Byddir, byddis, byddys, ys, ydys, *there is (shall or will be) taking place*

Hir y *byddis* yn enoi tammaid chwerv. Adage.

Ys is in the Powysian and Dimetian dialects ; it is pronounced exactly as the root *as* in Sanskrit. The same root slightly modified, viz. *is* or *isi*, is extant in the Erse and Scottish dialects of the Celtic ; Cf. Gr. *es-ti* ; Lat. *es-t* ; Eng. *is*.

Imperfect.

Byddid, buid, buad, bwyad, *there used to be*

Oeddid, *there was going on*

Ni ofelir cymmaint y dyddiau hynn am gymmeriad ag y buad yn yr oesoedd gynt. Cyl. y Beirdd, t.d. 69.

Compare the Sanskrit, *bhuyatai*.

Perfect.

Buwyd, bued, oeddwyd, rhyfuwyd, *there used to have been*

Compare the Sanskrit *bhutwa*.

Llawen *uwyt* wrthunt. Mab. ii, 61.

Pluperfect.

Buasid, buesid, rhyf—, *there had been*

Compare in Latin *fuisset*, or rather *fuesit*, the old form of *fuerit*.

First Future.

Bydder, byddir, *there shall or will be (is) taking place*

Second Future.

Bydder, rhyfydder, *there shall have been taking place*

With *bydder* or *byddir* the Latin *futurus* is evidently cognate.

§ 687. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 688. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

SECTION XLIII.

AUXILIARY VERBS.

§ 689. The foregoing form the terminations of all other verbs, and are also, especially the verb substantive *bod*, used as auxiliaries for the purpose of defining more accurately their time of action or event, and particularising their signification. But auxiliaries are not confined to the primitive verbs; they are also taken occasionally from verbs of a more compound character. The following are the leading verbs of this class;

Darfod, *cael*, *gwneyd*, *gallu*, *medru*, *dylu*, *dichon*, and *mynnu*.

§ 690. The difference between *medru*, *gallu*, and *dichon*, consists in this; *medru* implies skill and ability, whether natural or acquired, on the part of the person that constitutes the subject; as,

Ni wyr ni welodd, ni feidr ni ddyg. Adage.

Gallu implies power, permission, or the non-existence of any external impediment; as,

Ni eill neb namyn el allu. Adage.

Dichon affirmatively denotes *contingency*—"it may be;" as,

Dichon fy mod yn cyfeiliorni.

When used with a negative, power, corresponding to *can*, is implied; as,

Ni ddichon gwan ond gwaeddi. Adage.

These distinctions they retain as auxiliaries to other verbs.

§ 691. *Cael* strictly signifies *to have*. As an auxiliary to active verbs, it implies liberty, or freedom from external hindrances; permission, compulsion, &c., as *caf ddyegu*. When an auxiliary to passive verbs, it retains its primary signification, as, *yr wyf yn cael fy nyegu*.

§ 692. *Gwneyd* and *darfod*, as auxiliaries to some of the past tenses, may be used indiscriminately, as *gwnaethum ddyegu*, *darfum ddyegu*, both of which forms signify *I learnt*; though the one more particularly refers to the act in its past process; the other to its cessation altogether.

Kian pan ddarfu
Lliaws gyfolu. Taliesin.

§ 693. *Dylu* implies *duty*, like the English *ought*; as *dylon fyned*.

§ 694. *Mynnu* implies will or determination; as *mynnaf ddyfod*, I will have to come, I will come.

Ni fyn pan gaffo, ni chaiff pan fyno. Adage.

§ 695. The word *rhaid*, answering to the English *must*, is not a verb, but a noun, whether substantive or adjective. Therefore in such a sentence as this,

Nid rhaid doddi cloch am fwnwgl yr ynfyd. Adage.

which seems as if *rhaid* were an auxiliary to *dodi*, the verb substantive is to be understood ; *Nid oes raid, nid rhaid yw.* Sometimes it is expressed, as,

Rhaid yw cro pian cyn cerdded. Adaga.

SECTION XLIV.

CONJUGATION BY AUXILIARIES.

BOD, to be. CARU, to love.

ACTIVE GENDER.

§ 696. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Bod yn caru, to be loving.

Perfect.

Bod wedi caru, to have loved.

§ 697. Imperative Mood.

Sing.—*Byddwyf, bwyf yn caru, let me be loving*

Bydda, bydd yn caru

Bydded, boed, bid yn caru.

Plur.—*Byddwn yn caru*

Byddwch yn caru

Byddent, byddont, byddant, boent, bint yn caru.

§ 698. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—*Wyf, ydwyf, byddaf yn caru, I am (be) loving*

Wyt, ydwyt, byddi yn caru

Mae, bydd, byddiff, bydda yn caru.

Plur.—*Ym, ydym, byddwn yn caru*

Ych, ydych, byddwch yn caru

Maent, ynt, ydynt, byddant yn caru.

Imperfect.

Sing.—*Oeddwn, byddwn yn caru, I was loving, used to love*

Oeddit, byddit yn caru

Oedd, ydoedd, byddai yn caru.

Plur.—*Oeddem, oeddym, byddem, byddym yn caru*

Oeddech, oeddych, byddech, byddych yn caru

Oeddent, oeddynt, byddent, byddynt yn caru.

Perfect.

Sing.—*Buais, bum, buwyf yn caru, I have been loving*

Buaist, buost yn caru

Bues, buws, buwys, buoedd, bu yn caru.

Plur.—*Buasam, buasom, buam, buom yn caru*

Buasach, buasoch, buach, buoch yn caru

Buasant, buant yn caru.

N

More definitely,

Sing.—Wyf wedi caru, *I have loved*
Wyt wedi caru
Mae, &c. wedi caru.

Plur.—Yn wedi caru
Ych wedi caru
Maent wedi caru.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Buaswn, buwn, buoeddwn yn caru, *I had been loving*
Buasit, buit, buoeddit yn caru
Buasai, buai, buoeddai yn caru.

Plur.—Buasem, buesym, buem, buoeddem yn caru
Buasech, buesyech, buech, buoeddech yn caru
Buasant, buesynt, buant, buoeddent yn caru.

Another form,

Sing.—Oeddwn wedi caru, *I had loved*
Oeddit wedi caru
Oedd wedi caru.

Plur.—Oeddem wedi caru
Oeddech wedi caru
Oeddent wedi caru.

And of habit or custom,—Byddwn wedi caru, &c.

First Future.

Sing.—Byddwyf, bwyf yn caru, *I shall or will be loving; I am loving.*
Byddwyt, bwyt yn caru
Byddyw yn caru

Plur.—Byddym, bwym yn caru
Byddyech, bwych yn caru
Byddwynt, bwynt yn caru.

Second Future.

Sing.—Byddof, bof yn caru, *I shall have been loving*
Byddot, bot, byddyech, bych yn caru
Byddo, bo yn caru.

Plur.—Byddom, bom yn caru
Byddoch, boch yn caru
Byddont, bont yn caru.

More definitely,

Sing.—Byddaf wedi caru, *I shall have loved.*
Byddi wedi caru
Bydd wedi caru

Plur.—Byddwn wedi caru.
Byddwch wedi caru
Byddant wedi caru.

§ 699.

Supplicative Mood.

The supplicative mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 700. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with the proper subjunctive auxiliaries.

PASSIVE GENDER.

§ 701. Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Bydder, byddid yn fy ngharu, *let me be loved*

yn dy garu

yn ei garu.

Plur.

yn ein caru

yn eich caru

yn eu caru.

§ 702. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Byddir, byddis, ydys yn fy ngharu, *I am being loved.*

yn dy garu

yn ei garu.

Plur.—

yn ein caru

yn eich caru

yn eu caru.

Im perfect.

Sing.—Byddid, buid, buad, bwyad, oeddid, ydoeddid yn fy ngharu, *I used to be (was being) loved.*

yn dy garu

yn ei garu.

Plur.—

yn ein caru

yn eich caru

yn eu caru.

Perfect.

Sing.—Buwyd, rhyfuwyd, oeddwyd yn fy ngharu, *I have been loved.*

yn dy garu

yn ei garu.

Plur.—

yn ein caru

yn eich caru

yn eu caru.

More definitely ;

Ydys wedi fy ngharu, &c.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Buasid, rhyfuasid yn fy ngharu, *I had been loved.*

yn dy garu

yn ei garu.

Plur.—

yn ein caru

yn eich caru

yn eu caru.

Another form ;

Oeddit wedi fy ngharu, &c.

First Future.

Sing.—Byddir yn fy ngharu, *I shall be (I am being) loved*

yn dy garu

yn ei garu.

Plur.—

yn ein caru

yn eich caru

yn eu caru.

Second Future.

Sing.—Bydder, rhyfydder yn fy ngharu, *I shall have been loved*

yn dy garu

yn ei garu.

Plur.—

yn ein caru

yn eich caru

yn eu caru.

§ 703. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 704. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with their distinctive auxiliaries.

§ 705. All other auxiliaries are employed in the same way. When, however, more than one auxiliary are used, the first only is inflected; the others retain their infinitive form, like the principal verb.

Wyf yn cael caru

Oeddwn yn cael caru

Bum yn cael caru, &c.

SECTION XLV.

CONJUGATION BY INFLECTION.

§ 706. The primitive verbs, expressive either of motion or existence, are in themselves the inflections which are suffixed to all other verbs. When verbs adhere to the form of any of these in particular throughout their tenses, such are called regular verbs; but when they borrow their inflections indiscriminately, from one or the other, they are designated irregular.

SECTION XLVI.

REGULAR VERBS.

CARU, (car-au,) *to love*

ACTIVE GENDER.

§ 707.

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Caru, *to love*

Perfect.

Rhygaru, *to have loved*

Adnabot aoruc rygaffel dyrnawt. Mab. i. 13.

§ 708.

Participle.

Present.

Cariad	}	loving
Yn caru		
Carawd		

Yn caru is not properly a participle, unless we consider *yn* to have been originally prefixed to the verb, and to be cognate with the Greek *εν*, the Latin *ans* or *ens*, and the English *ing*; *φιλῶν*, *amans*, *loving*, *yn caru*. But though it is to be met with in that state in a few instances, as,

Ar llall *endeweduet* ac en adel. Welsh Laws, i. 134.

Ami awelwn gwr malyngoch mawr *yndyuo*. Mab. Branwen verch Llyr.

it is on the whole more probable that *yn* should be a preposition, forming with the infinitive mood an expression equivalent to the Greek gerund *εν τῷ φιλεῖν*; especially as other prepositions, such as *gan*, *dan*, *wrth*, are similarly employed. In Cornish and Armoric the particles *ow* and *oz* (for *ouz*, ourz=Cymric *wrth*), are used.

Perfect.

Caredig, *loved*Carawr, *become loving*

Future.

Caradwy, *being to love*

§ 709.

Gerund.

Carator, *in loving*

Canu makes *caintor* in the gerund, as

Kaffant pawb ei deithi llawen fi brython,

Caintor cyn elwch, kathl heddwech, a hion. Myrddin.

Another version, however, has it *cenitor*.

§ 710.

Supine.

Ceritor, *to be loving*

The mutation observable in the beginning of this word, is peculiar to such verbs as are formed from roots, whose last vowel (or if two vowels come together, the last but one), is *a*.

§ 711.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Carwyf, *let me love*Cara, *car*

Cared.

Plur.—Carwn

Carwch, *cerwch*Carent, *carant*.

The first person singular is of the same form as in the second future tense, and is in fact that part of the verb used in an optative sense. *Rhoi* has sometimes *dyro* for *rho* in the second person singular; and in the same place, *codi* has *cwyd* for *cod* or *coda*. *Dywedyd* has sometimes *dywaid* for *dywed*;

Ac na *ddywaid* f'enaid fun. D. ab Gwilym.

Aro is also occasionally put for *aros*;

Na ffo, *cyfaro* forwyn. D. ab Gwilym.

In the Oxford glosses, the personal pronoun is suffixed to the second person singular, *helghati*=*hela di*. This person is now generally the root of the verb. The exceptions comprize most of those verbs which in the infinitive have the termination *a*, *o*, or *u*, in which case the imperative takes the termination *a* in addition to the root.

§ 712.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—*Caraf*, (*caram*.) *I love; shall or will love*

Cari, *ceri*, (*Dimet. cery*.)

Cara, *ceir*, *car*.

Plur.—*Carwn*, (*carun*)

Carwch, (*carauch*)

Carant.

The form which the first person singular seems to have originally assumed was *am*, (=Hibern. *im*, Lat. *am*;) thus in the Oxford glosses we have *ladam*, *conam*, *rannam*, *lanmam*, *credam*, &c., and in the Luxembourg glosses, *doguorennam*.

Relative to the second form of the second person singular, see the remark on Supine.

The third person singular is generally formed without the termination *a*; especially when the infinitive consists of the root alone; as,

Infinitive.	Root.	Third person, present.
Edrych	edrych	edrych.

Verbs ending in *a* in the infinitive, or in the second person singular imperative, generally take that termination in this tense; as is also the case with those whose infinitives end in *o*.

The vowels of the root are liable to inflection when the termination is omitted; as,

	Infinitive.	Root.	3rd. per. present.
a into e	<i>para</i>	<i>par</i>	<i>pery</i>
a ... ei	<i>cadw</i>	<i>cadw</i>	<i>ceidw</i>
	<i>llenwi</i>	<i>llanw</i>	<i>lleinw</i>
o ... y	<i>rhoddi</i>	<i>rhodd</i>	<i>rhydd</i>
	<i>cyfod</i>	<i>cyfod</i>	<i>cyfyd</i>
o ... aw	<i>toddi</i>	<i>todd</i>	<i>tawdd</i>
a-a ... e-ei	<i>gwahardd</i>	<i>gwahardd</i>	<i>gweheirdd</i>
a-e ... e-y	<i>atdeb</i>	<i>atdeb</i>	<i>ettyb</i>
a-o ... e-y	<i>aros</i>	<i>aros</i>	<i>crys</i>

Also *ery*, as

Wynneb trist drwg a'i ery. Iolo MSS. p. 253.

Indeed in all its tenses this verb may throw off as well as retain *s*: as *arouis*, *arouist*, or *arousais*, *arouaist*.

o-o ... e-y	<i>gosod</i>	<i>gosod</i>	<i>gesyd</i> .
-------------	--------------	--------------	----------------

The following are peculiar formations :

Bwytta	bwytty	Dwyn	dwg
Ceisio	cais	Gweled	gwyl
Codi	cwyd	Peri	pair (peir)
Cyagu	cwag	Sefyll	saif.
Chwerthin	chwardd		

The third person singular is frequently made to end in *iff*, as *ceriff*, *ceiff*, *rhoddiff*, which is perhaps a corruption of the pronoun *ef*, he, as *caref*; or cognate with the Latin *ab* or *eb*, as in *amabit*, *docebit*.

Rhoi has sometimes *dyry* in the third person singular for *rho* or *rhy*. *Dywedyd* has sometimes in the same person and number, *dywyd* and *dywaid*, for *dywed* or *dyweda*.

Pa ddeall, pwy a *ddywaid*

Beth o'i naws, mor boeth ei naid? W. Lleyn.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Carwn, (carun.) *I was loving, or used to love*

Carit, carud, caryd, (carut,) cerit

Carai, carei.

Plur.—Carem, carym, carom, cerym

Carech, carych, caroch, (careuch, carewch,) cerych

Carent, carynt, caront, cerint, ceraint, cerynt.

Used indicatively, this tense represents an action as going on at some time past; also a habit, or an action often repeated. It is not much used, however, in this mood, the perfect being put instead of it; but it obtains its due station in the optative and conditional moods.

Perfect.

Sing.—Carais, cerais, carum, caridum, rhyg—, *I have loved*

Caraiſt, ceraist, cereist

Carodd, caroedd, carawdd, ceris, cares, (*Dimet.* carws,)

carwys, caras.

Plur.—Carasom, carasam, carysom

Carasoch, carasach, carasawch, (carasauch,) carysoch

Carasant, carasaint, carasant, carysont.

Some of the poets make the first person singular to end in *is*, as

Mae'r dis? mi a'i *teffis* yn tân. S. Tudur.

The ultimate *a* of the root is almost invariably inflected into *e* in the first and second persons singular of this tense, both in ancient and modern documents. Nor are these vocal changes peculiar to the Celtic tongue; they occur more or less in other languages also, as Lat. *capio*, *cepi*; *ago*, *egi*; *facio*, *feci*; *jacio*, *jeci*; Mæso-Gothic, *svara*, *svôr*; *giba*, *gab*; *hilpa*, *halp*. This mutation is supposed to be a vestige of the reduplication of the root, by which a complete or past action is said to have been originally expressed, and which hence became a characteristic of the preterperfect tense; as Gr. *τύπτω*, *τετυφα*; Lat. *tundo*, *tutudi*; Sansk. *tup*, *tupati*, *tutopa*. The preterite of *caru* would on 'his principle be *cacaru*, or rather *cycaru*. When, owing to a rapidity

of utterance, the *c* became quiescent, *aa* or *ya* would easily mutate into *e*. If the Cymraeg, however, was at any time subject to this reduplication, it would appear to have subsequently assumed the fixed form of *rhy* (*ro*), which continued to a comparatively late period; as,

Ar glawr elfydd
Ei gystedlydd
Ni ryaned. Taliesin.

Mor maes Gwyddno rhydoes. Gwyddno.

Re devedassam ny ema. Laws, ii. 6, 31.

Coet ryrealsom ar yweilgi. Mab. iii. 93.

Erddi rhygenais geinion odlau. Rhys Goch.

Ny rygolles nef ny bo ynfyf. Cynddelw.

Rywelais Ruffudd ryffyrf ardwy. Madawg Dwygraig.

Though it most commonly accompanies the preterperfect tense, we find that it moreover extends to such other tenses as are of a preterite character; viz. the pluperfect, and the second future; whilst it serves also to denote the past infinitive. Of this prefix the verbal particles *y*, *yr*, and probably *a*, seem to be traces, still in use, as shall be more fully explained in a future section.

In the third person singular the termination *odd* is sometimes contracted after *n* into *t*, as *cant*, *gwant*, for *canodd*, *gwanodd*; and after *r* into *th*, as *cymmerth* for *cymmerodd*.

Ef a gant y pader. Mab. i. 239.

Ac ae gwant dros bedrein y uarch yr llawr. Mab. i. 258.

E peth e kemirth. Mab. ii. 6.

Dywedyd has sometimes in the third person singular perfect, *dywawd*, *dyfod*, and *dywad*, for *dywedodd*.

Dyn wyf a á dan ei wád.
Er nad á'r un a'i dywad. Hywel Kilan.

Dwyn has *dug* as well as *dygodd*; sometimes *dugum* in the first person singular for *dygais*.

The poets occasionally reject the final *t* in the third person plural; as,

Am a wnaethan a'm annedd. L. Glyn Cothi.

Arian i Suddas er ansoddion,
Er ei Dduw Iesu a roddason. G. ap Ia. ap L'e Fychan.

Clywed has in the perfect both *clywais*, and *clybum*, the latter being properly the regular perfect of the obsolete *clybod*, (*clywbod*.)

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Caraswn, caryswn, rhyg—, *I had loved*

Carasit, carysit, carasyt, caresud, caroeddit, caroeddudd
Carasai, carysai (ei).

Plur.—Carasem, caresym, carysem
 Carasech, caresych, carysech
 Carasent, caresynt, carysynt.

The inflection of the *a* into *y* in the penultimate is Powysian.

First Future.

Sing.—Carwyf, *I shall or will love; I love*
 Carwyd (wyt)
 Caryw, carwy.

Plur.—Carym, carwym
 Carych, carwych
 Carynt, carwynt.

This tense, with the exception of the first person singular, is hardly ever used in the optative and conditional moods; the second future is used instead.

For *bwyttawyf* we sometimes have *bwyttathwyf*; and *dd* is occasionally changed into *th* in such words as *rhoddwyf*, *rthowyf*.

Second Future.

Sing.—Carof, rhygarof, *I shall have loved*
 Carot
 Caro.

Plur.—Carom
 Caroch
 Caront.

In the third person singular, *rho* and *rtho* are sometimes used for *rhoddo*; as

A ro gam i wraig o Iâl,
 Ery Duw rai a'i dial. L. Mon.

Maer Rhuthyn ym a'i *rtho*. T. Aled.

This tense is not so much used in the indicative as in the optative and conditional moods.

§ 713. Supplicative Mood.

This is formed like the imperative.

§ 714. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These are formed like the indicative mood, with auxiliaries.

PASSIVE GENDER.

§ 715. Infinitive Mood.

In Cymraeg there is no inflection of the verb to express the infinitive passive; but that state is usually indicated by combinations of the possessive pronouns with the infinitive active, with or without auxiliary verbs; as,

Idd ei garu, i'w garu, i gael ei garu, *to be loved*

§ 716. Participle.

Present.

Yn garedig, *being loved*
 Yn garadwy, *being to be loved*
 Yn garawg, *being loved*

o

Perfect.

Caredig, *loved*Carotor, *become to be loved*

§ 717.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Carer fi, *let me be loved*

Carer di

Carer ef, or hi.

Plur.—Carer ni

Carer chwi

Carer hwy, or hwynt.

§ 718.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Cerir fi, *I am (shall or will be) loved*

Cerir di

Cerir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Cerir ni

Cerir chwi

Cerir hwy.

As in the active, this tense is used to denote the future as well as the present time.

Pres.—Y chwedyl hwn *aethir* chwedyl iarlles y ffynawn. Mab. i. 38.

Fut.—A orchfygo yma a *goronir* fry. Adage.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Cerid, carid fi, *I was loved*

Cerid, carid di

Cerid, carid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Cerid, carid ni

Cerid, carid chwi

Cerid, carid hwy.

Rhygerid is an old form; the following is an example,

Ti a noddyd

A *rygeryd*

O bob carchar. Taliesin.

Perfect.

Sing.—Carwyd, cared fi, rhyg—, *I have been loved*

Carwyd, cared di

Carwyd, cared ef, or hi.

Plur.—Carwyd, cared ni

Carwyd, cared chwi

Carwyd, cared hwy.

Anciently, (and still in the Silurian dialect,) this tense commonly ended in *wys*; as,

Mewn boly tywyll im *tywalldwys*,Mewn mor dylan im *dychwehwys*. Taliesin.

In the same dialect *llas* is put for *lladdwyd*; as,

Oed Crist 1138 y *llas* Cynfrig ab Owain Gwynedd, gan Fadawg ab Maredydd ab Bleddyn ab Cynfyn. Brut y Tywysogion.

We have also *claddpwyd* for *claddhoyd*, *lladdpwyd* for *lladdhoyd*, *gwanpwyd* for *gwanhoyd*.

Dyoespwyd occurs occasionally for *dyoedhoyd* :

Myned yn erbyn y ddau Frenhin amhwyllgar, a sothant fel y *dyoespwyd*, wrth ddifrawd ac anraith. Iolo MSS. 193.

Er ugeinpunt a *ganpwyd*, (for *ganhoyd*.) D. ap Gwilym.

Likewise *anydoedd* for *anhoyd*.

Y mab ydoedd

A *anydoedd*

Dan ei nodau. Y Brawd Fadawg ap Gwallter.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Carasid, carysid fi, rhyg—, *I had been loved*

Carasid, carysid di

Carasid, carysid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Carasid, carysid ni

Carasid, carysid chwi

Carasid, carysid hwy.

First Future.

Sing.—Carer, carawr fi, *I shall or will be (I am) loved*

Carer, carawr di

Carer, carawr ef, or hi.

Plur.—Carer, carawr ni

Carer, carawr chwi

Carer, carawr hwy.

This tense not unfrequently denotes present time ; as

A *rodde* i dlawd a delir ddydd brawd. Adage.

Deu edryd y syd a *synhwyraur*. Cynddelw.

Second Future

Sing.—Carawr, rhygarawr fi, *I shall have been loved*

Carawr, rhygarawr di

Carawr, rhygarawr ef, or hi.

Plur.—Carawr, rhygarawr ni

Carawr, rhygarawr chwi

Carawr, rhygarawr hwy.

This form is very old, and occurs in the MS. mentioned in § 164, thus ;

Niguroosam nemlencuaur henoio mitelu nit gurmaur mi amfranc dam am-calaur.

§ 719.

Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 720.

Optative and Conditional Moods

These are formed like the indicative mood, with auxiliaries.

SECTION XLVI.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

§ 721. The verbs which exhibit the greatest irregularity of conjugation, are the following ; *myned, dyfod, gwneud* or *gwneuthur, gwobod, adwaen, cael* or *caffael*.

1, *MYNED, to go*

ACTIVE GENDER.

§ 722.

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Myned, to go

Perfect.

Rhyfyned, to have gone

§ 723.

Participle.

Present.

Mynediad, yn myned, going

Mynedadwy, capable of going

Perfect.

Mynededig, wedi myned, gone

§ 724.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—

Dos, cerdd, go thou

Aed, eled, cerdded.

Plur.—*Awn, elwn*

Ewch, elwch, cerddwch

Ant, elant, cerddant.

§ 725.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—*Af, elaf, I go, or shall go*

Ai, ei, eli

A, aiff, el, ela.

Plur.—*Awn, elwn*

Ewch, elwch

Ant, elant.

Imperfect.

Sing.—*Awn, elwn, I used to go*

Ait, elit

Ai, elai.

Plur.—*Aem, elem*

Aech, elech

Aent, elent.

Perfect.

Sing —*Aethym, aethum, euthym, elais, rhy—, I went*

Aethost, euthost, elaiist

Aeth, aethws, elodd.

Plur.—Aethom, aetham, euthom, elsom
 Aethoch, euthoch, aethach, elsach
 Aethant, euthant, aethont, elsant.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Aethaswn, euthaswn, elaswn, rhy—, *I had gone*
 Aethasit, euthasit, elasit
 Aethasai, euthasai, elasai.

Plur.—Aethasem, euthasem, elasem
 Aethasech, euthasech, elasech
 Aethasent, euthasant, elasent.

First Future.

Sing.—Awyf, elwyf, *I shall or will go, or am going*
 Awyt, elwyt
 Ayw, elyw.

Plur.—Aym, elym
 Aych, elych
 Awynt, elwynt.

This form is seldom used except in the optative and conditional moods.

Second Future.

Sing.—Aof, elof, rhy—, *I shall have gone*
 Aot, elot
 Ao, elo.

Plur.—Aom, elom
 Aoch, eloch
 Aont, elont.

§ 726. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 727. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

2, DYFOD, *to come*

§ 728. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Dyfod, dywod, *to come*

A chan Dduw ni chawn *ddywod*
 Mewn ty fry er maint fai'r od. Tudur Aled.

Perfect.

Rhyddyfod, *to have come*

§ 729. Participle.

Present.

Dyfodiad, yn dyfod, *coming*

Perfect.

Dyfodedig, *having come*

Future.

Dyfodadwy, *being to come, capable of coming*

§ 730.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—

Tyred, dyred, tyre, dyre, *come thou*Deued, deled, (*Dinet. dawed,*) doed.

Plur.—Deuwn, delwn, down, down

Deuwch, delwch, dewch, dowch

Deuant, delant, dewant, dont.

*Dyre i'n gwlad dur iawn gledd. Iolo.**Doed wyr mount ar deid i'r mor. R. Leiaf.*

§ 731.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Deuaf, delaf, dawaf, doaf, dof, *I come ; shall or will come*

Deui, deli, dewi, doi

Deua, del, dela, daw.

Plur.—Deuwn, delwn, down, down

Deuwch, delwch, dewch, dowch

Deuant, delant, dewant, dont.

*A ddewi di gyda mi ? Iolo MSS. 168.**Gwedi hynny mi a ddawaf, a mwy haelioni yn fy llaw. Ib. 169.*

It will be observed that the plural of this tense is identical in form with that of the imperative.

From *daw* comes the compound *dyddaw*.

Can *dyddaw* angu angen drallawd. Madog Benfras.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Deuwn, delwn, *I used to come*

Deuit delit,

Deuai, delai.

Plur.—Deuwn, delem

Deuech, delech

Deuent, delent.

Perfect.

Sing.—Daethym, dothwyf, deuais, doddwy, rhy—; *I came*

Daethost, deuaist

Daeth, deuodd, dyfu, doddodd, doddoedd, doddyw, deddyw.

Plur.—Daethom, deusom

Daethoch, deusoch

Daethant, deusant.

Tri theyrn maon

A *ddyfu* o Frython. Aneurin.Dolur gormodd a'm *doddyw*.*Deddyw* o'i phen lw diddim. D. ab Gwilym.Ai wisgodd ym *doddodd* dawn. Bleddyn Fardd.

From *doddyro* we have the compound *dyddoddyro*.

Dydotyro y dyt dauyt dyuynfri. Ll. P. y Moch.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Daethwn, delswn, rhydd—, *I had come*

Daethit, delsit

Daethai, delasai.

Plur.—Daethem, delsem

Daethech, delsech

Daethent, delsent.

First Future.

Sing.—Deuwyf, delwyf, *I shall or will come; I come*

Delwyt

Delyw, dyfi.

Plur.—Delym

Delych

Dewynt, doddynt.

Ni *doddynt* tros for etwaeth. Meilyr.

Second Future.

Sing.—Delof, rhyddelof, *I shall have come*

Delot

Delo.

Plur.—Denom, delom

Deuoch, deloch

Deuont, delont.

§ 732. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 733. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

Hwyr y rhof o *def* i dir. D. ab Gwilym.

Erglyw fi can *dothwyf*. Cynddelw.

This verb, moreover, takes the form of its root *bod*; in which case it expresses more particularly the idea of *to be*, or *to come to pass*, thus,

Cyd boed hirddydd *dybydd* ucher. Adage.

Dilyw a *ddyfu*, dyddbrawd a *ddyf*. Gwalchmai.

In the following it has the sense of *to be* and *to come*.

A *ddyfo* (he that is) can-car, a *ddyfydd* (will come) can-nos. Adage.

3, GWNEYD, or GWNEUTHUR, *to do*

§ 734. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Gwneyd, gwneuthur, gwneuthud, *to do*

Perfect.

Rhywn eyd, rhywneuthur, rhywneuthud, *to have done*

§ 735.

Participle.

Present.

Gwneuthuriad, yn gwneyd or gwneuthur, *doing*
Perfect.Gwneuthuredig, *having done*
Future.Gwneuthuradwy, *being to do*

§ 736.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Gwna, *do thou*

Gwnaed, gwneled, gwnelid.

Plur.—Gwnawn, gwnelwn

Gwnewch, gwnelwch

Gwnant, gwnelant.

§ 737.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Gwnaf, gwnelaf, *I do, shall or will do*
Gwnai, gwneli

Gwna, gwnaiff, gwnel.

Plur.—Gwnawn, gwnelwn

Gwnewch, gwnelwch

Gwnant, gwnelant.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Gwnawn, gwnelwn, *I used to do*
Gwnait, gwnelit

Gwnai, gwnelai.

Plur.—Gwnaem, gwnelem, gwneym

Gwnaech, gwnelech, gwneych

Gwnaent, gwneleant, gwneynt.

Perfect.

Sing.—Gwnaethym, gwneuthym, gwnaethum, gwneuthum, gwnel-
ais, gwneddwyf, rhywn—, *I have done*

Gwnaethost, gwneuthost, gwnelaist

Gwnaeth, gwnathoedd. gwnelodd, gwneddyw, gwnaddoedd.

Plur.—Gwnaethom, gwneuthom, gwnelso

Gwnaethoch, gwneuthoch, gwnelsoch

Gwnaethant, gwneuthant, gwnelant.

Prydu i'th wedd a *wneddwyf*. D. ab Gwilym.Llwfwr a rhyfedd y *gwneddyw*. D. ab Gwilym.

Llys gwin ac emys ddigammoedd—gyllid,

Och gollu a'i *gwaddoedd*. D. ab Gwilym.Ni adwna Duw a *wnathoedd*. Adage.Y dodes Arthur iddynt Arfau a Thrwydded llys iddynt ac i bob un herwydd y
gamp arnaw ar orchest a *rywnaethoedd*. Iolo MSS. 76.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Gwnaethwn, gwnelawn, rhywn—, *I had done*

Gwnaethit, gwnelait

Gwneuthai, gwnelasai.

Plur.—Gwnaethem, gwnelsem
 Gwnaethech, gwnelsech
 Gwnaethent, gwnelsent.

The contracted forms *gwnelsom*, *gwnelwon*, in the two preceding tenses, are in the Powysian dialects.

First Future.

Sing.—Gwnelwyf, *I shall or will do; I do*
 Gwnelwyt
 Gwnelyw.

Plur.—Gwnelym
 Gwnelych
 Gwnelynt.

Second Future.

Sing.—Gwnelof, rhywnel—, *I shall or will have done*
 Gwnelych, gwnelech, gwnelot
 Gwnelo.

Plur.—Gwnelom
 Gwneloch
 Gwnelont.

§ 738. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 739. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

4. GWYBOD, *to know*.

§ 740. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Gwybod, *to know*

Perfect.

Rhywybod, *to have known*

§ 741. Participle.

Present.

Yn gwybod, *knowing*

Perfect.

Gwybyddedig, gwyddedig, gwybodedig, *known*

Future.

Gwybodadwy, *being to know*

§ 742. Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Gwybydd, *know thou*
 Gwybydded, gwypped.

Plur.—Gwybyddwn, gwypewn
 Gwybyddwch, gwypwch
 Gwybyddant, gwypant.

§ 743.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Gwn, gwybyddaf, *I know; I shall or will know*

Gwyddost, gwybyddi

Gwyr, gwybydd.

Plur.—Gwyddom, gwybyddwn

Gwyddoch, gwybyddwch

Gwyddant, gwybyddant.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Gwyddwn, gwybyddwn, gwypwn, *I did know*

Gwyddit, gwybyddit, gwypit

Gwyddai, gwybyddai, gwypai, gwypdiad.

Plur.—Gwyddem, gwybyddem, gwypem

Gwyddech, gwybyddech, gwyppech

Gwyddent, gwybyddent, gwypent.

Gwaith cymmen ar fedwen fâd,

Gweddeiddiaw gwydd a wyddiad.

D. ab Gwilym.

The second form, and its contraction gwypwn, &c. are chiefly used in the optative and potential moods.

Perfect.

Sing.—Gwybum, gwybuum, rhywyb—, *I have known*

Gwybuost

Gwybu.

Plur.—Gwybuom

Gwybuoch

Gwybuant.

Dy garu a wybum

Darlain dy bylgain y bum.

Hywel Swrwal.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Gwybyddaswn, gwybuaswn, gwybaswn, rhywyb—, *I had known.*

Gwybyddasit, gwybuasit, gwybasit

Gwybyddasai, gwybuasai, gwybasai.

Plur.—Gwybyddasem, gwybuasem, gwybasem

Gwybyddasech, gwybuasech, gwybasech

Gwybyddasent, gwybuasent, gwybasent.

First Future.

Sing.—Gwybyddwyf, gwypwyf, *I shall or will know; I know*

Gwybyddwyt, gwypwyt

Gwybyddyw, gwypyw.

Plur.—Gwybyddym, gwypym

Gwybyddyh, gwypych

Gwybyddynt, gwypynt

Second Future.

Sing.—Gwybyddof, gwypof, rhyw—, *I shall have known*

Gwybyddot, gwypot

Gwybyddo, gwyppo.

Plur.—Gwybyddom, gwypptom
Gwybyddoch, gwypPOCH
Gwybyddont, gwypPONT.

§ 744. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 745. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

5, ADWAEN, *to be acquainted with, to recognise.*

§ 746. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Adwaen, *to recognise*

Perfect.

Rhyadwaen, *to have recognised*

§ 747. Participle.

Present.

Adwaeniad, yn adwaen, *recognising*

Perfect.

Adnabyddedig, *recognised*

Wlkessar byt *etnodedyc* yth dy osparth dy. Gr. ab Arthur.

Future.

Adnabyddadwy, *being to recognise*

§ 748. Imperative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Adnebydd, *recognise thou*

Adnabydded

Plur.—Adnabyddwn

Adnabyddwch

Adnabyddant.

§ 749. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Adwaen, *I recognise*

Adwaenost

Edwyn.

Plur —Adwaenom

Adwaenoch

Adwaenant, adwaenont.

Adwaen has sometimes a future sense ; as,

Hyn a *adwaen* cyn henaint. D. ab Gwilym.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Adwaenwn, *I used to recognise*

Adwaenit

Adwaenai.

Plur.—Adwaenem, adwaenym
Adwaenech, adwaenych
Adwaenent, adwaenynt.

Perfect.

Sing.—Adnabum, rhyad—, *I have recognised*
Adnabuost
Adnabu, adwaeniad, adwaenodd.

Plur.—Adnabuom
Adnabucch
Adnabuont.

Gwae ei thad a *adwiniad* ei daioni. D. ab Gwilym.

Cynfigen bresen heb rodd,
Godineb gwae ai '*dwaenodd*. Iolo.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Adnabuaswn, rhyadnabuaswn, *I had recognised*
Adnabuasit, rhyadnabuasit
Adnabuasai, rhyadnabuasai.

Plur.—Adnabuasem, rhyadnabuasem
Adnabuasech, rhyadnabuasech
Adnabuasent, rhyadnabuasent.

First Future.

Sing.—Adwaenwyf, *I shall or will recognise ; I recognise*
Adwaenwyt
Adwaenyw.

Plur.—Adwaenym
Adwaenych
Adwaenynt.

Second Futura.

Sing.—Adwaenof, rhyadwaenof *I shall have recognised*
Adwaenot, rhyadwaenot
Adwaeno, rhyadwaeno.

Plur.—Adwaenom, rhyadwaenom
Adwaenoch, rhyadwaenoch
Adwaenont, rhyadwaenont.

§ 750. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 751. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

6, CAEL, CAHEL, CAFFAEL, *to obtain*.

§ 752. Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Cael, cahel, caffael, *to obtain*.

Perfect.

Rhygaffael, *to have obtained*.

§ 753.

Participle.

Present.

Caffaeliad, caffad, yn cael, cahel, caffael, *obtaining*Arddyledawr canu cymain *caffad*. Aneurin.

Perfect.

Caffaeledig, *obtained*.

Future.

Caffaeladwy, *being to obtain*.

§ 754.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—

Caed, caffed, *let him obtain*

Plur.—Caffom, cafom

Caffoch, cafoch

Caffont, cafont, caffant, cant.

§ 755.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Caf, caffaf, *I obtain; I shall or will obtain*

Cai, cei, cefi

Ca, caiff.

Plur.—Cawn

Cewch

Cant, caffant.

Ebol goffol a *gaffaf*. Iolo.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Cawn, caffwn, *I used to obtain*

Cait, cefit

Cai, ceffai.

Plur.—Caem, ceym, caffem, ceffym

Caech, ceych, caffech, ceffych

Caent, ceynt, caffent, ceffynt.

Perfect.

Sing.—Cefais, ceis, rhyg—, *I have obtained*

Cefaist, cest

Cafodd, cadd, cafas, cas.

Plur.—Cawsom

Cawsoch

Cawsant.

Pan *gafas* aer-was eur-was. Elidr Sais.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Cawswm, rhygawswm, *I had obtained*

Cawsit, rhygawsit

Cawsai, rhygawsai.

Plur.—Cawsem, rhygawsem
 • Cawsech, rhygawsech
 Cawsent, rhygawsent.

First Future.

Sing.—Caffwyf, cafwyf, *I shall or will obtain ; I obtain*
 Caffwyt
 Caffwy.

Plur.—Caffym
 Caffych, cafwych, ceych
 Caffynt.

Gwerthaf y wyau, ag a gadwaf yn gynnil cynnil am a gaffwyf am danynt.
 Iolo MSS. p. 181.

Second Future.

Sing.—Caffof, cafof, caof, rhyg—, *I shall have obtained*
 Caffot, cafot, caot
 Caffo, cafo, cao.

Plur.—Caffom, cafom, caom
 Caffoch, cafoch, caoch
 Caffont, cafont, caont.

Tri pheth ni cheif dyn ddigon er a gaffo : iechyd, hoedl a chyfoeth. Triodd
 Mocs.

A gaffo Dduw a gaiff dda. Sion Cent.

§ 756. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 757. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

PASSIVE GENDER.

1, MYNED.

§ 758. Participle.

Present.

Yn fynededig, *being gone*
 Yn fynedadwy, *being to be gone*
 Yn fynedawg, *being gone.*

Perfect.

Mynededig, *gone.*

§ 759. Imperative Mood.

Aer, eler, *be there a going*

§ 760. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Air, eir, elir, *there is (there will be) a going*

Imperfect.

Aid, aed, eid, aesid, elid, *there was a going*

Perfect.

Aed, awd, awyd, aethwyd, aethpwyd, rhy—, *there has been a going*

Pluperfect.

Aethid, elsid, rhy—, *there had been a going*

First Future.

Air, eir, elir, *there shall or will be (there is) a going*

Second Future.

Aer, eler, rhy—, *there shall have been a going*

§ 761. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 762. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

2, DYPOD, (*Dimetian* Dawod.)

§ 763. Participle.

Present.

Yn ddyfodedig, *being come*Yn ddyfodadwy, *being to be come*Yn ddyfodawg, *being come.*

Perfect.

Dyfodedig, *come.*

§ 764. Imperative Mood.

Deuer, deler, doer, (*Dim. dawer,*) *let there come.*

§ 765. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Deuir, delir, (*Dim. dewir,*) *there is (there shall or will be) coming.*

Imperfect.

Deuid, delid, *there was a coming*

Perfect.

Deuwyd, deued, daethwyd, daethpwyd, doed, rhydd—, *there has been a coming.*

Pluperfect.

Daethid, dalsid, rhydd—, *there had been a coming.*

First Future.

Deuir, delir, dewir, deir, doir, *there shall or will be (there is) a coming.*

Second Future.

Deuer, deler, doer, (*Dim. dawer,*) rhydd—, *there will have been a going.*

§ 766. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 767. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

3, GWNEYD OR GWNEUTHUR.

§ 768.

Participle.

Present.

Yn wneuthuredig, *being made*Yn wneuthuradwy, *being to be made, capable of being made*Yn wneuthurawg, *being made.*

Perfect.

Gwneuthuredig, *made.*

§ 769.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Gwnaer, gwneler fi, *let me be made,*

Gwnaer, gwneler di

Gwnaer, gwneler ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwnaer, gwneler ni

Gwnaer, gwneler chwi

Gwnaer, gwneler hwynt.

§ 770.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Gwneir, gwnelir fi, *I am (shall or will be) made*

Gwneir, gwnelir fi

Gwneir, gwnelir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwneir, gwnelir ni

Gwneir, gwnelir chwi

Gwneir, gwnelir hwynt.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Gwneid, gwnelid fi, *I was made*

Gwneid, gwnelid di

Gwneid, gwnelid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwneid, gwnelid ni

Gwneid, gwnelid chwi

Gwneid, gwnelid hwynt.

Perfect.

Sing.—Gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd, rhywn—, fi, *I have been made*

Gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd di

Gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd ni

Gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd chwi

Gwnaed, gwnawd, gwnaethwyd, gwnaethpwyd hwynt.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Gwnaethid, gwnelsid, rhyw—, fi, *I had been made*

Gwnaethid, gwnelsid di

Gwnaethid, gwnelsid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwnaethid, gwnelsid ni

Gwnaethid, gwnelsid chwi

Gwnaethid, gwnelsid hwynt.

First Future.

Sing.—Gwneir, gwnelir fi, *I shall or will be (I am) made*

Gwneir, gwnelir di

Gwneir, gwnelir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwneir, gwnelir ni

Gwneir, gwnelir chwi

Gwneir, gwnelir hwynt.

Second Future.

Sing.—Gwnaer, gwneler, rhyw—, fi, *I shall or will have been made*

Gwnaer, gwneler di

Gwnaer, gwneler ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwnaer, gwneler ni

Gwnaer, gwneler chwi

Gwnaer, gwneler hwynt.

Am bynny y dywedir am a *wneler* yn rhyfyg. Iolo MSS. p. 182.

§ 771. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 772. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

4, GWYBOD.

§ 773. Participle.

Present.

Yn wybyddedig, yn wybodedig, *being known*

Yn wybyddadwy, yn wybodadwy, *being to be known, capable of being*

Yn wybyddawg, yn wybodawg, *being known.* [*known*]

Perfect.

Gwybyddedig, gwybodedig, *known.*

§ 774. Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Gwybydder, gwypper fi, *let me be known*

Gwybydder, gwypper di

Gwybydder, gwypper ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwybydder, gwypper ni

Gwybydder, gwypper chwi

Gwybydder, gwypper hwynt.

§ 775. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Gwyddir, gwybyddir, gwyddys, gwys fi, *I am (I shall or will*

Gwyddir, gwybyddir, gwyddys, gwys di *be) known*

Gwyddir, gwybyddir, gwyddys, gwys ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwyddir, gwybyddir, gwyddys, gwys ni

Gwyddir, gwybyddir, gwyddys, gwys chwi

Gwyddir, gwybyddir, gwyddys, gwys hwynt.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Gwyddid, gwybyddid fi, *I was known*

Gwyddid, gwybyddid di

Gwyddid, gwybyddid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwyddid, gwybyddid ni

Gwyddid, gwybyddid chwi

Gwyddid, gwybyddid hwynt.

Perfect.

Sing.—Gwybuwyd, gwyppwyd, rhyw—, fi, *I have been known*

Gwybuwyd, gwyppwyd di

Gwybuwyd, gwyppwyd ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwybuwyd, gwyppwyd ni

Gwybuwyd, gwyppwyd chwi

Gwybuwyd, gwyppwyd hwynt.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Gwybuasid, rhyw—, fi, *I had been known*

Gwybuasid di

Gwybuasid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwybuasid ni

Gwybuasid chwi

Gwybuasid hwynt.

First Future.

Sing.—Gwyddir, gwybyddir fi, *I shall or will be known*

Gwyddir, gwybyddir di

Gwyddir, gwybyddir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwyddir, gwybyddir ni

Gwyddir, gwybyddir chwi

Gwyddir, gwybyddir hwynt.

Second Future.

Sing.—Gwybydder, gwypper, rhyw—, fi, *I shall or will be (I am)*

Gwybydder, gwypper di

Gwybydder, gwypper ef, or hi.

Plur.—Gwybydder, gwypper ni

Gwybydder, gwypper chwi

Gwybydder, gwypper hwynt.

§ 776.

Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 777.

Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

5, ADWAEN.

§ 778.

Participle.

Present.

Yn adnabodedig, yn adnabyddedig, *being recognised*Yn adnabodadwy, yn adnabyddadwy, *being to be recognised, capable of*Yn adnabodawg, yn adnabyddawg, *being recognised. [being recognised*

Perfect.

Adnabodedig, adnabyddedig, *recognised*.

§ 779. Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper fi, *let me be recognised*

Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper di

Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper ef, or hi.

Plur.—Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper ni

Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper chwi

Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper hwynt.

§ 780. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Adwaenir fi, *I am recognised*

Adwaenir di

Adwaenir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Adwaenir ni

Adwaenir chwi

Adwaenir hwynt.

Another form is adnabyddir, which has both a present and a future import.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Adwaenid fi, *I was recognised*

Adwaenid di

Adwaenid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Adwaenid ni

Adwaenid chwi

Adwaenid hwynt.

Perfect.

Sing.—Adnabuwyd, rhyadnabuwyd fi, *I have been recognised*

Adnabuwyd, rhyadnabuwyd di

Adnabuwyd, rhyadnabuwyd ef, or hi.

Plur.—Adnabuwyd, rhyadnabuwyd ni

Adnabuwyd, rhyadnabuwyd chwi

Adnabuwyd, rhyadnabuwyd hwynt.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Adnabuasid, rhyadnabuasid fi, *I had been recognised*

Adnabuasid, rhyadnabuasid di

Adnabuasid, rhyadnabuasid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Adnabuasid, rhyadnabuasid ni

Adnabuasid, rhyadnabuasid chwi

Adnabuasid, rhyadnabuasid hwynt.

First Future.

Sing.—Adnabyddir fi, *I shall or will be, I am recognised*

Adnabyddir di

Adnabyddir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Adnabyddir ni
Adnabyddir chwi
Adnabyddir hwynt.

Second Future.

Sing.—Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper, rhyad—, fi, *I shall or will*
Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper di [*have been recognised*]
Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper ef, or hi.

Plur.—Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper ni
Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper chwi
Adwaener, adnabydder, adnapper hwynt.

§ 781. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 782. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

6, CAEL OF CAFFARL.

§ 783. Participle.

Present.

Yn gaffaeledig, *being obtained*
Yn gaffaeladwy, *being to be obtained, capable of being obtained*
Yn gaffaeladawg, *being obtained.*

Perfect.

Caffaeledig, *obtained.*

§ 784. Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Caer, caffer fi, *let me be obtained*
Caer, caffer di
Caer, caffer ef, or hi.

Plur.—Caer, caffer ni
Caer, caffer chwi
Caer, caffer hwynt.

§ 785. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Ceir, ceffir fi, *I am (shall or will be) obtained*
Ceir, ceffir di
Ceir, ceffir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Ceir, ceffir ni
Ceir, ceffir chwi
Ceir, ceffir hwynt.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Ceid, ceffid fi, *I was obtained*
Ceid, ceffid di
Ceid, ceffid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Ceid, ceffid ni
Ceid, ceffid chwi
Ceid, ceffid hwynt.

Perfect.

Sing.—Cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd, rhyg—, fi, *I have been obtained*

Cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd di

Cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd ef, or hi.

Plur.—Cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd ni

Cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd chwi

Cafwyd, caffwyd, caed, cawd hwynt.

Pluperfect.

Sing.—Cawsid, rhygawsid fi, *I had been obtained*

Cawsid, rhygawsid di

Cawsid, rhygawsid ef, or hi.

Plur.—Cawsid, rhygawsid ni

Cawsid, rhygawsid chwi

Cawsid, rhygawsid hwynt.

First Future.

Sing.—Ceir, ceffir fi, *I shall or will be (I am) obtained*

Ceir, ceffir di

Ceir, ceffir ef, or hi.

Plur.—Ceir, ceffir ni

Ceir, ceffir chwi

Ceir, ceffir hwynt.

A gadwr a geir wrth raid. Adage.

Second Future.

Sing.—Caer, caffer, rhyg—, fi, *I shall or will have been obtained*

Caer, caffer, di

Caer, caffer ef, or hi.

Plur.—Caer, caffer ni.

Caer, caffer chwi

Caer, caffer hwynt.

§ 786. Supplicative Mood.

This mood is formed like the imperative.

§ 787. Optative and Conditional Moods.

These moods are formed like the indicative, with auxiliaries.

SECTION XLVII.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

§ 788. This name is commonly given to those verbs only in which the defectiveness is striking, and which are found exclusively in certain forms and combinations; though there is, besides, a considerable number of real defectives, which want certain tenses, or of which, at least, no example can be produced from Cymric records.

§ 789. Defective verbs are *byw*, *marw*, *adolwyn*, *cyglyu*, *degle*, *hæde* or *hwre*, *moes*, *eb*, *medd*, *piaw*, *dawr* or *tawr*, *goru*.

1, Brw.

§ 790.

Infinitive Mood.

Byw, *to live*.

§ 791.

Participle.

Yn byw, *living*.

2, MARW.

§ 792.

Infinitive Mood.

Marw, *to die*.

§ 793.

Participle.

Yn marw, *dying*.

In Taliesin, *marwaed* occurs as the third person of the perfect tense indicative,—

A nawcant Maer *marwaed*.

3, ADOLWYN.

§ 794.

Infinitive Mood.

Adolwyn, *to beseech*.

Adolwyn yt, dal a naid,

A rhwyg gwrr yr huc euraid. Rhys Goch o Eryri.

4, CYGLYU.

§ 795.

Indicative Mood.

Perfect.

Sing.—3 person, Cyglyu, cygle, cicle, ciglef, *he or she hath heard*.

A phan *gyglyu* y ferch yr ymadroddion hynny wylaw a orug. G. ab Arthur.

Doe ym mberigl y *ciglef*

Ynglyn aur angel o nef. D. ab Gwilym.

A'u *cyglex* na's clwyv hevyd. Ll. Hen.

5, DEGLE.

§ 796.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—2 person, Degle, *listen*.

Perhaps it is an old form of *dyglyw*, the 2nd person singular imperative of *dyglywed*.

6, HWDE OR HWRE.

The former is used in North Wales; the latter in South Wales.

§ 797.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Hwde or hwre, *take thou*.

Plur.—Hwdiwch, or hwriwch and hwrewch, *take ye*.

Hwde di y votrwy honn. Mab. i. 14.

§ 798. The words are sometimes written *hwda* and *hwra*.

Hwda fawl didawl, da dyleu dy rad;

Hwda rwydd erfyniau. H. D. ab Ifan.

Hwra don galon, a gwaelod hiraeth;

Hwra gorph llawn pechawd. H. D. ab Ifan.

7, MOES.

§ 799. Imperative Mood.

Sing.—Moes, *give thou.*Plur.—Moeswch, *give ye.*

Gwell moes law na moes fam. Adage.

Moerwch hai, y maes a chwi. Morys Llwyd.

Some say *moeswn* and *moesant* in the first and third persons plural respectively.

8, EBU.

§ 800. Infinitive Mood.

Ebu, *to say.*

§ 801. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Eb, ebe, eb y, eb yr, ebr, ebwyf, ebof, ebaf, ebai fi, *quoth I*

Eb, ebe, ebr, ebai ti

Eb, ebe, ebyr, ebr, ebai ef, or hi.

Plur.—Eb, ebe, eb y, eb yr, ebr, ebwn, ebai ni

Eb, ebe, eb y, eb yr, ebr, ebai chwi

Eb, ebe, eb yr, ebr, ebai hwynt.

§ 802. The word was formerly for the most part written with an *h*, as *heb* ; thus,

Dioer *heb* yr Owain, truan yw hynny. Mab. i. 34.Ti hebod nyd *hebu* oet teu,Mi hebod ny *heba*f unheu. Cynddelw.

The aspirate is still retained in its compound *gohebu*.

9, MEDD.

§ 803. Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Meddaf, *I say*

Meddi

Medd.

Plur.—Meddwn

Meddwch

Meddant.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Meddwn, *I was saying*

Meddit

Meddai.

Plur.—Meddem, meddym

Meddech, meddych

Meddent, meddynt.

Ni ellir derwydd, *medd* derwydd. Adage.*Meddai* 'r gwyr a ommeddwyd,

Mab y Crinwas Euas wyd. Gutto'r Glyn.

10, PIAU.

§ 804.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.—Mi	}	<i>I own.</i>
Ti		
Efe, or hi		
Plur.—Ni	}	biau or piau
Chwi		
Hwynt-hwy)		

Imperfect.

Sing.—Mi	}	<i>I did own.</i>
Ti		
Efe, or hi		
Plur.—Ni	}	bioedd or pioedd
Chwi		
Hwynt-hwy)		

Future.

Sing.—Mi	}	<i>I shall or will own.</i>
Ti		
Efe, or hi		
Plur.—Ni	}	bieufydd or pieufydd
Chwi		
Hwynt-hwy)		

Datydd *bieufydd* y bel. L. G. Cothi.

§ 805.

Optative Mood.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Mi	}	<i>May I own.</i>
Ti		
Efe, or hi		
Plur.—Ni	}	bieufyddai or pieufyddai
Chwi		
Hwynt-hwy)		

§ 806. Indeed, if the verb substantive be affixed to *pieu* or *bieu*, the word may be used, not only in all the moods and tenses, but in all the persons also; thus, *mi pioeddwn*, or *bioeddwn*, *ti bioeddit*, &c.

Ni buont hir eu bywyd,
Nawny *bioeddyn* y byd. S. ab Hywel.

11, DAWR OR TAWR.

§ 807. This verb is used impersonally and personally.

§ 808. Impersonally in the present and future tenses, indicative mood; as

§ 809. Indicative Mood.

Present and Future.

Sing.—Ni'm dawr i, *It concerns me not, It will not concern me*

Ni'rh dawr di

Ni ddawr ef, or hi.

Plur.—Ni'n dawr ni

Ni'ch dawr chwi

Ni ddawr hwynt.

Nymtawr i vynet. Mab. ii. 53.

Ni ddawr hwn oni ddaw'r haf. D. ab Gwilym.

Dorbi (dawr-bi) also occurs in the future tense; as *Ni'm dorbi*, It will not concern me.

§ 810. Personally in the imperfect tense, indicative mood.

§ 811. Indicative Mood.

Imperfect.

Sing.—Ni ddorwn, *It did not concern me*

Ni ddorit

Ni ddorai.

Plur.—Ni ddorem

Ni ddorech

Ni ddorent.

Ni ddawr hi ddaiaru hwn;

O'i ddaiaru ni ddorwn. D. ab Gwilym.

It is used also imperatively; as,

Os engyl a'th nawdd yn nydd a nos, na ddawr a'th erlidiant. Myv. Arch. iii. 91.

12, GORU.

§ 812. Infinitive Mood.

Goru, *to do.*

Yn medu medged i oru eirchiawn. Gwalchmai.

§ 813. Indicative Mood.

Perfect.

Sing.—Gorugum, rhygorugum, *I did*

Gorugost

Gorug, goryw.

Plur.—Gorugam

Gorugoch

Gorugant.

Kyfodi aorugum. Mab. i. 6.*Gorugost* rydost rediad. D. ab Gwilym.

Annelu ei fwa a orug y mab. Gr. ab Arthur.

Serch ar Ifor a'm goryw. D. ab Gwilym.

Ac eistedd aorugam yma. Mab. i. 4.

Ymwan a orugant. Mab. i. 244.

Rygorug Duw dda—*Rygorug* fy Awen. Taliesin.

R

SECTION XLVIII.

VERBAL PARTICLES.

§ 814. Edeyrn Dafod Aur, though not in the present copy, is said thus to describe the verbal particles ;

“Er, a, i, y. They are regarded as the sub-servants of verbs, because each one ministers and renders homage to the verbs.”

§ 815. And the Minnwynn ;

“Yr, idd, ydd, ir, they are indispensable ancillaries in the Cimbric language, and præpositions to the verbs.”

§ 816. The most ancient form is *ro*, as in the Luxemburgh Glosses, *roluncas, rogulipias*. This is always prefixed to the verb.

§ 817. Subsequently it was written *ry* or *re*, and was either joined to the verb, or placed in a separate position.

§ 818. It is supposed to have been a relic of the reduplication, by which preterite tenses were originally distinguished. Thus it is found to accompany the perfect, pluperfect, and second future tenses, in old writings ; as,

Perfect tense,—

Er edlyg arey *re deueclassam* ny huchof. Welsh Laws, i. 5. 12.

Peth ryued *ryweleis* yghot. Mab. i. 236.

Seith gantref *ry edewit* ymi. Ib. iii. 144.

Pluperfect,—

Er din *rebriasei*. Laws, ii. 5. 5.

Y vorryn *rywelsei* trwy y hun. Mab. iii. 267.

Second Future,—

Kyt *rywnelych* di. Mab. iii. 304.

Nyt oes ar y helw namyn yr unty hwnn nys *ry dycko* iarll ieuanc ysyd gym-odawc idi. Mab. i. 28.

§ 819. Zeuss seems to confine it to these tenses, calling it a particle of consummation ; but in reality, whether proper or not, we find it extending to other tenses as well ; thus,

Present,—

Ny *rygar* trugar tra syberuyd ;

Ny *rydau* anau oe anwylyd. Cynddelw.

Imperfect,—

Rhai a'i *rhyfolai* llawr hufelydd. Sefryn.

Twyllid *rhyfegid* rhyfygaid. Adage.

Future,—

A *rygotoy* glew, gogeled rhagtaw. O. Cyfeillawg.

§ 820. Care, however, must be taken, in ascertaining the character of the verb, not to confound the reduplicate particle with the simple prefix *rhy*, excessive, over.

§ 821. Zeuss is decidedly wrong in saying that *ry* is never separated from the verb by another word, not even by a pronoun. There are several instances to the contrary in respect of the pronoun ; as,

Rhym gorug yn veddw vedd Tren. Ll. Hen.

Gwae ry llaw, llam rym gallas. Ib.

Gwen, gwae ry hen ryth-golles. Ib.

§ 822. It is not difficult to see how *ry* came in time to assume the form of *yr*, *y*, the former being, in truth, but the old particle reversed. Indeed, "gwae *ry* hen" in the line just quoted would seem to be exactly equivalent to the more modern expression "gwae *yr* hen." *Yr*, again, would, according to the law of euphony, which extensively regulates the structure of the Cymraeg, naturally become *y* before a consonant.

§ 823. Whether *a* be a modification of *ro*, *re*, *ry*, is not so clear. It is certain that *y* is used in the Dimetian dialect instead of *a* ; as,

Dod mawr ddiolch i Dduw beth bynag y rhotho ev itti. Myv. Arch. iii. 105.

§ 824. *Yd* and *ydd* would seem to be equivalent to the Latin *id*, or the English *it* ; thus, *ydd* *ys*, *yd* *ys*, *ydys*, has the same meaning as *id est*, or *it is* ; *ys* *yd*, *ys* *ydd*, *sydd*, is the same expression with its component parts transposed. Indeed, in some of the poets, *ydd* occurs as a pronoun ; thus,

Neum rhoddes i Run rwyf iolydd—cantref,

A chant eidionydd ;

Ac un rodd oedd well nog ydd. Ll. Hen.

Y, *yr*, *yd*, and *ydd*, are now indiscriminately used, though the two last forms are more generally used by South Wallians ; whilst the other two appear more especially in the dialect of North Wales.

A wnel dyn Duw a'i barn. Myv. Arch. iii. 148.

Hir y bydd chwerv hen alanas. Ib. 162.

Fordd Llan Vaglan yr eir i'r nef. Ib. 156.

Basav dwvr yn yd levair. Ib. 149.

Fordd Llan Vechan ydd ai y wenyneyn yn ei phreseb. Ib. 156.

SECTION XLIX.

CONCORD OF NOUNS WITH VERBS.

§ 825. A name and a causative ought to agree in number and person ; if such be not the case, the construction will be faulty.

§ 826. This rule in general applies only to such nouns as precede the verb ; thus,

Adar Bydafau heidiau hedant. Rhys Goch ab Rhiccert.

§ 827. When the noun follows the verb, then the verb is put in the third person singular, whether the subject be singular or plural ; as,

Lle daw meinwen dan gaeadlen. Rhys Goch ab Rhicoert.

A daw cain gogau dolau deilbant. Ib.

§ 828. The poets, however, frequently give a more extended scope to Edeyrn's rule ; as,

Cydfolant honn adar gwylltion Rhys Goch ab Rhicoert.

And prose writers occasionally ; as

Ni ddygant y Beirdd arf noeth yn erbyn neb. Iolo MSS. 51.

SECTION L.

PRONOUNS.

§ 829. There is another part of speech, which is sometimes substituted for a noun, and is called a pronoun. A pronoun is that which designates a personification or personalty, whether it be a being or a deputy ; and that which denotes possession, or interrogation ;—personalty or personification, as *mi, ti, efe, arall* ; possession, as *meu, teu, eiddaw* ; interrogation, as *pwy, pa beth*.

§ 830. There are twenty-four pronouns ; twelve in the singular number, and twelve in the plural. In the singular number are *mi, ti, y llall, hwnn, honn, hwnnw, honno, pwy, ap beth, meu, teu, eiddaw*. In the plural number are *ni, chwi, eraill, y rhai hynn, y rhai hynny, y naill rai, y rhai eraill, pa rai, pa bethau, einim, eiddoch, eiddynt*.

§ 831. The seven first, in both the singular and plural number, denote personalty or personification ; the three last, in the singular and plural number, denote possession ; the four central or middle, namely *pwy, pa beth, pa rai, pa bethau*, denote interrogation.

§ 832. Dafydd Ddu Athraw enumerates the pronouns somewhat differently ; "There are twenty pronouns, namely *mi, ti, ef, myfi, tydi, evo, hwnn, hwnnw, mau, tau, eiddaw, einym, einwch, eiddynt*. Of these, four are primitives (tadogion), and all the others are derivatives (tynnedigion)."

SECTION LI.

ETYMOLOGICAL FORMS OF PRONOUNS.

§ 833. The etymological structure of a pronoun is twofold, *primitive* and *derivative*.

§ 834. The primitive pronouns are *mi, ti, ef, hwnn*.

§ 835. The derivatives are such as are amplifications of these ; as, *myfi, tydi, efo, minnau, tithau, yntau, hwnnu*.

SECTION LII.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 836. The personal pronouns are the following ;—

Singular.

Simple.—*Mi, fi, i, ym, I, me*, (Corn. Armor. *me*)

Emphatic.—*Myfi (mimi), I, or me myself*, (=Gr. *ἐγώγῃς*, Lat. *memet*)

Conjunctive.—*Minnau (minneu), I also, me also*

Em. & Con.—*Myfinnau (miminneu), I, me, or myself also*.

Plural.

Simple.—*Ni, we, us*, (Corn. Armor. *ni*)

Emphatic.—*Nyni (nini), we, or us ourselves*

Conjunctive.—*Ninnau (ninneu), we, or us also*

Em. & Con.—*Nyninnau (nininneu), we, or us ourselves also*.

Singular.

Simple.—*Ti, thou, thee*, (Corn. Armor. *te* ; Hibern. *tu*)

Emphatic.—*Tydi (titi), thou, or thee thyself*, (=Lat. *tete*)

Conjunctive.—*Tithau (titheu), thou, or thee also*

Em. & Con.—*Tyditheu (tiditheu), thou, or thee thyself also*.

Plural.

Simple.—*Chwi, you, ye*, (Corn. why ; Armor. *hui*)

Emphatic.—*Chwychwi (chwichwi), you yourselves*

Conjunctive.—*Chwithau (chwithheu), you, or ye also*

Em. & Con.—*Chwychwithau (chwichwithheu), you yourselves also*.

Singular.

Simple.—*E, ef, fe, o, fo, he, him, it*, (Corn. Armor. *ef* ; Hib. *se*)

Emphatic.—*Efe, efo, effo, he himself, it itself*, (=Lat. *sece*)

Conjunctive.—*Yntau (inteu), yntef, he, him, it also*

Em. & Con.—*Efyntau (efinteu), he, or himself, itself also*.

Plural.

Simple.—*Hwy (wy), hwynt (wynt), nhwy, nhw, ydd, they, them*, (Corn. Armor. *i*)

Emphatic.—*Hwynthwy, they, themselves*

Conjunctive.—*Hwyntau (wynteu), hwythau, nhwythau, nhwthau, they, them also*.

Em. & Con.—*Hwynthwythau, they themselves also*.

Singular.

Simple.—Hi, *she, her*, (Corn. Armor. hi ; Hibern. si)

Emphatic.—Hyhi (hibi), *she herself*

Conjunctive.—Hithau (hitheu), *she also*

Em. & Con.—Hyhithau (hibithen), *she herself also*.

Plural.

Simple.—Hwy, hwynt, nhwy, nhw, ydd, *they, them*

Emphatic.—Hwynthwy, *they themselves*

Conjunctive.—Hwyntau, hwythau, nhwythau, nhwthau, *they, them also*

Em. & Con.—Hwynthwythau, *they themselves*.

§ 837. The following are examples of some of the oldest forms ;

Mi ny weleis gristawn. Mab. i. 266.

Mywy esit briodaur. Laws, ii, 11, 19.

Y kyuarohawd ef well ymi no miwi idaw ef. Mab. i. 4.

Ny adeuedun. Laws, ii. 1. 69.

Nymy adeuedun ; nini adeuedun. Ib. ii. 1. 70 ; ii. 6. 9.

Helghati, nerthiti. Oxford Glosses.

Ni weleis i eirnoet was well no thidi. Mab. i. 14.

Panniu effo adeueis. Laws, ii. 11. 24.

Enteu ay pryno. Ib. i. 11. 18.

Pop cyfreith avo dy brennin Morgannhuc yn lys ou bot yn hollaul dy esoop Teliau ny lys yntou. Lib. Land. 113, 114.

Gouyn aoruc idi ae hihi oed yn peru hynny. Mab. ii. 34.

Ac wynn adeuthant, ac wynt awelynt. Ib. i. 22, 27.

Katwent huinteu. Laws, ii. 10. 2.

Hywel a meredydd a nhw. Iolo MSS. p. 20.

§ 838. It is supposed that the original state of the third person singular was in Welsh as it is in Erse, *se*, and, the initial being softened, *he*, which was afterwards written *e*. Nevertheless, the negative import of the letter itself would seem to render it a proper representative of what is past, gone, or distant—that which is neither I nor thou, but he or it.

§ 839. *E, ef, fe, fo*, are sometimes employed as auxiliary agents, in an affirmative proposition, performing or undergoing the action described, without meaning to discriminate the person, or the subject, which in general is added after the verb.

Ev a gair gynghor gan ywyd. Myv. Arch. iii. 155.

Ev a ddaw hâv i gi. Ib.

E vynai y gath bysgod, ond ni vynai wlychu ei thraed. Ib.

§ 840. *Hi* is often put in a neuter sense, as in the Hebrew tongue, and stands either as the subject of a verb descriptive of the weather, circumstances, &c., or else in an absolute state; as,

Y mae hi yn dyddhau.

Yr ail ddiwarnod a *hŷlau* yn des cadarn. Iolo MSS. 162.

The pronoun may be regarded here as the personification of "anian" or nature.

§ 841. It may be observed in regard to all the personal pronouns in the Celtic dialects, that they consist of the very same elements, and these but slightly modified, which pervade all, or nearly all, the other languages referred to the Indo-European class.

SECTION LIII.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 842.

Singular

My, fy, ym, *my*, (Corn. ow; Arm. ma)

Mau (meu), *mine*

Eiddof, *mine*

Ty, dy, yth, eith, *thy*, (Corn. the, thy; Armor. da)

Tau (teu), *thine*

Eiddot, eiddyt, *thine own*

Ei, e, y, *his*, (Corn. y; Armor. e)

Ei, i, y, *her*, (Armor. he)

Eiddaw, eiddo, *his, its*

Eiddi, *hers*.

Plural.

Ein, an, yn, *our*, (Corn. agan; Armor. hon)

Ny, *ours*

Einom, einym, *our own*

Eich, ach, ych, *your*

Awch, *your*, (Corn. agis; Armor. hoz)

Eiddoch, eiddych, eiddawch, *your own*

Eu, u, *their*, (Corn. aga; Armor. ho)

Eiddynt (eidunt), *their*

Eiddu, *their*

Eiddydd, *their*.

§ 843. The following are examples;

Y parchell byw bid *vau*. Adage.

A rhyfedd bod *dy* ddodrefn

F'ŷ gylch, *a'ŷ* dy ar *eih* gefn. L. Morris.

Ymauel herwyd gwallt *y* ben. Ymauel herwyd gwallt *y* phen. Mab. ii. 247.

Kymmeraud *an* Duu *an* diheuyd,

Kanyf *of a'n* goruc *ac an* gueryt. M. ab Gwalchmai.

Dyro *tau* tra *vo tau*, wedi *tau* nid ti a biau. Y Bardd Glas.

Dwe uendith dau ar *einym* gennyt. Mab. ii. 236.

A wyrda padarpar yw yr *einwoch* ohwi yna. Ib. ii. 62.

Ys *teu di* wlad nef. Taliesin.

Kymerwch *ych* bwyt. a byrrywoch *aucl* blinder y arnawch. a chyn *ych* myned ymeith attob a goffoch. Mab. ii. 29.

Aucl rotaf arawd orawen gyffes;

Aucl rotes *aucl* reen

Wrth *aucl* bot *aucl* bod yn llawen

Wrth *aucl* bryd *aucl* breint ueigen. Cynddelw.

§ 844. *Ill* (=illi), is joined to numerals, and most commonly to no more than two or three individuals; as,

Ys adwaen y maen y maent *ell* dev. G. Brycheiniog.

Fal hynny cawsant hwy lywodraeth y Deau *ell* dau. Iolo MSS. 20.

This applies to the third person only; for when we speak in the first, we say *ein dau*, *ein tri*; and in the second person, *eich dau*, *eich tri*.

§ 845. The pronouns *ym*, *ein*, *yth*, *eich*, very frequently suffer an elision of their vowels; and in the dialect of North Wales *ei* becomes *i*, and after the preposition *i*, it irregularly changes into *w*, making *i'w* instead of *iddet*; thus,

Thomas yn *ei* guras gwyn

Ai talawdd hwnt *i'w* elyn. L. Glyn Cothi.

Anciently *wy* was often used.

SECTION LIV.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 846. The demonstrative pronouns of the Welsh language, are divided into six classes, and make a discrimination of persons and situation, for which the English of *this* and *that* are not equivalent.

Sing.	1st Class.	Plur.
Hwnn (hun,) m.	}	Hynn, y rhai hynn, m. f. (c. y rhai'n)
Honn, f.		} <i>these</i>
Hynn, c.		

§ 847. Hynn is but seldom used in North Wales in the singular number, except abstractedly, as,

Ymlynwn rad provadwy

Ymhenn y maes am *hynn* mwy. Rhys Goch o Eryri.

whereas it is almost invariably put for both the others in the Dimetian dialect.

Sing.	2nd Class.	Plur.
§ 848. Hwnnyma, m.	}	Hynnyma, m. f.
Honnnyma, f.		} <i>these here</i>
Hynnyma, c.		

	Sing.	3rd Class.	Plur.	
§ 849.	Hwnna, m.	} <i>that there</i>	Y rhai hynna, m. f.	} <i>those there</i>
	Honna, f.		Y rhai yna, m. f.	
	Hynna, c.			

Speaking of the second person, or of an object under cognizance.

	Sing.	4th Class.	Plur.	
§ 850.	Hwnnyna, m.	} <i>that there</i>	Y rhai hynnyna	} <i>those there</i>
	Honnyna, f.			
	Hynnyna, c.			

Speaking of the second person, or of an object near or present.

	Sing.	5th Class.	Plur.	
§ 851.	Hwnnaccw, m.	} <i>that yonder</i>	Y rhai hynnaccw	} <i>those yonder</i>
	Honnaccw, f.		Y rhai accw	
	Hynnaccw, c.			

	Sing.	6th Class.	Plur.	
§ 852.	Hwnnw, m.	} <i>that out of sight</i>	Y rhai hynny	} <i>those out of sight</i>
	Honno, f.		(c. y rhei'ny)	
	Hynny, c.			

Speaking of the third person, that is distinct, or not under cognizance.

Gwyr y byt *hwnn.* Mab. i. 6.

En yr amser glan *hwnnu.* Welsh Laws, preface.

§ 853. *Yma, yna, accw,* are strictly adverbs of place, and perhaps ought always to be considered as such, especially when they are separated from the pronoun.

SECTION LV.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

§ 854. The indefinite pronouns are these ;

Sing.

Ambell, *some few*, speaking of number

Rhyw, (riu,) *some*, speaking of kind. Rhyw beth, *some thing*

Arall, *other, another.* Un ac arall, *one and another*

Pob, *every, each*

Llall, *other ; the latter of two.* Hwn a'r llall, *this and the other*

Naill, (neill,) *either ; one, the former of two.* Y naill ben, *the one end*

Neb, (nep,) *none, any.* Nid oes neb, *there is none*

Nebawd, *none*

Nebun, *no one ; any one*

Un, *one.* Ni bu yma un, *there has not been one here*

Rhywun, *some one*

Cyfryw, *such*

Unrhyw, *any ; the same.*

Sometimes, *naill* is considered as plural, having *nall* for its singular ; as,

Lle ydd atebont y *naill* i'r llall, a'r *nall* i'r llall. Cyf. y Beirdd, 160.

Plur.

Amryw, *several*

Rhai, (rei,) *some, speaking of number*

Amrai, *several*

Arallion, eraill, *others. Ni ac eraill, we and others*

Pawb, (paup,) *everybody, all*

Lleill, *others*

Holl, oll, *all. Doant oll yno, they will all come there*

Rhywrai, *some ones*

Sawl, *many. Pa sawl gwaith? How many times? Y sawl, who-soever.*

Y sawl is sometimes considered as singular :

Y sawl ni rodia dedwydd yw. Ed. Prys.

Mwy ategach oed honno nor rei ereill oll. Mab. lii. 264.

Ni ellir damwain na fo da i rai. Adage.

Arallion gamweithredoedd. D. Ddu o Hiraddug.

Rai yn drud, eraill yn doethyon. Ll. P. y Moch.

Nid oes ond dim rhwng y *naill* a'r *llall*. Adage.

Ni ddigonir *nebawd*

Heb gyfoeth y Drindawd. Taliesin.

Cynghor da ni thyr ben *nebun*. Adage.

Pei canffai *bawd* a'u dyddysgai,

Ni cheffid annysg yn *neb rhai*. Adage.

Na llwia i *neb* moi dynged ;

Heb fai nid *neb* ar aned. Merddin.

§ 855. These may be classified, moreover, into pronominal substantives, and pronominal adjectives.

§ 856. The pronominal substantives are *rhai, rhyw, pawb, llall, lleill, nebawd, nebun, rhywun, rhywrai*.

§ 857. The pronominal adjectives are *ambell, arall, arallion, pob, naill, neb, un, holl*.

§ 858. Nevertheless it is difficult in some cases to draw the line of demarcation, especially as under certain circumstances the words would seem to change their natural character.

§ 859. *Un* is properly a numeral.

SECTION LVI.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 860. The relative pronouns are of two kinds ; those that answer to an antecedent, and such as denote an indefinite relation, and interrogation.

§ 861. The first class consists of demonstrative and indefinite pronouns, having their forms changed to the relative by the addition of the articles. The following is a list ;

- Yr hwnn, m. *he that, whoso, who ; which*
 Yr honn, f. *she that, whose, who*
 Yr hynn, c. *it that, that which, that*
 Yr hwonna, m. *he that, who is present, or in cognizance*
 Yr honna, f. *she that, who is present*
 Yr hynna, c. *it there, that, it that is present*
 Yr hwnnw, m. *he that, whoso, who that is absent*
 Yr honno, f. *she that, who that is absent*
 Yr hynny, c. *it that, or that which is absent*
 Yr un, *the one, whoso, who, which*
 Y neb, *that which, whoso*
 Y sawl, *whoso, which*
 Y rhai, *those, such ones*
 Y llall, *the other*
 Y lleill, *the others*
 Y naill, *the one ; either*
 Y rhai hynn, *these here, these*
 Y rhai hynna, *those there, those present*
 Y rhai hynny, *those absent*
 Y rhai yma, *these here ; these*
 Y rhai yna, *those present*
 Y rhai yno, *those absent*
 Y rhai accw, *those yonder*
 Y rhai ereill, *the other ones, the others*
 Y naill rai, *the other party, the other ones.*

Cas yr hwnn y delo iddo lawer, ac ni roddo ddim. Adage.

Dysg hyd angau ; ac angau i'r sawl na ddyago. Adage.

Y naill wenwyn a ladd y llall. Adage.

§ 862. The pronouns of indefinite relation and interrogation are the following ;

Pwy, (puy,) (= Corn. pu ; Armor. piu,) *what one ; what person, who ; pwy bynnag, whosoever.*

Pa, *which ; pa un, which one ; pa yr un, which the one ; pa rai, which ones ; pa sawl ? how many ?*

Py, *what*; py beth? *what thing?* *what?*

Puy de keghaus di? Laws ii. 11. 15.

Yna tyngu a wnai'r calchwyr y llogaint hwy ef yn yr odyn pei gwpynt *py* ydoedd. Iolo MSS. 169.

Niddawr dedwydd *pa* addef, Adage

Py ryw ormes yw hwnnw? Mab. i. 293.

Py goreu medd-dawd

O fedd a bragawd? Taliesin

*Ap*awy *byn*nac aallei y rydhau penn clot y byt a gaffei. Mab. i. 284.

*A*ph*y* ymadrawd *byn*nac adywetti ei yr un. Mab. iii. 300.

A *ph*ynag heb ddyg a wneler yn dwyn rhith daloni o ansawdd anivel y daw. Y Bardd Glas.

§ 863. *Py* is very much used by Taliesin.

SECTION LVII.

REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 864. Reflexive pronouns are formed by adding to the possessive pronouns, *my*, *fy*, *ty*, *dy*, *yth*, *eith*, *ei*, and their plurals *ein*, *an*, *yn*, *eich* *ach*, *ych*, *eu*, *u*, the word *hun*, or *hunan*, self, *hun* or *hunain*, selves.

Sing.

1. Fy hun or hunan, *myself*
2. Fy hun or hunan, *thyself*
3. Ei hun or hunan, *himself, &c.*

Plur.

1. Ein hun or hunain, *ourselves*
2. Eich hun or hunain, *yourselves*
3. Eu hun or hunain, *themselves.*

Pwy aerschis itti eisted yna. *my*hun heb ynteu. Mab. ii. 65.

Lawn i bawb gadw *ei* hun. Adage.

Cas y dyn a farno ar arall am y bai a fo arno *ei* hunan. Adage.

Dywedut yryngtunt *et*unain. Mab. ii. 39.

SECTION LVIII.

RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS.

§ 865. Reciprocal pronouns are formed by adding *gilydd*, (ciliid) —one another, to the said plural possessives.

1. Ein gilydd
2. Eich gilydd
3. Eu gilydd.

Dir carnou fin tref peren or earn *di cilid* diguaret bet imor hafren. Lib. Land. 226.

O drwo *y gilyd* y kaffat y grib. Mab. ii. 246.

Nyt attebei yr un mwy *nos gilyd*. Mab. i. 258.

§ 866. *One another* is expressed also by *y naill y llall*—*the one, the other*; in this case two distinct persons or parties are spoken of.

SECTION LIX.

SUFFIX PRONOUNS.

§ 867. These are personal pronouns, which are joined to other words; and in that state are considerably modified.

§ 868. The following are the forms in which they appear when coming after the preposition *at*.

		Sing.				
Mi or fi	}	is changed into	af	as attaf, to me		
Ti or di			at	attat, to thee		
Efo ^e			av, (au.) and o	attaw, (attau) atto	}	to him
Hi			i, (ei)	atti, (attei)		

		Plur.		
Ni	}	becomes	om, (am)	as attom, (attam,) to us
Chwi			och,	attoch, to you
Hwynt			ynt, (unt)	attynt, (attunt), to them

§ 869. The preposition *tan* changes them in a similar manner; as,

- | | |
|----|---|
| | Sing. |
| 1. | Tanaf, <i>under me</i> |
| 2. | Tanat, <i>under thee</i> |
| 3. | Tano, and tani, <i>under him, her, or it.</i> |
| | Plur. |
| 1. | Tanom, (tanam,) <i>under us</i> |
| 2. | Tanoch, <i>under you</i> |
| 3. | Tanynt, <i>under them.</i> |

§ 870. Under this class comes the old form *ohonaf*, from *me*, though it is now generally written *o honaf*. The preposition *ar*, also, affects the pronouns in like manner, the letter *n* intervening; as *arnaf*.

§ 871. *Rhwng* changes them as follows;

- | | |
|----|---|
| | Sing. |
| 1. | Rhyngof, <i>between me</i> |
| 2. | Rhyngot, <i>between thee</i> |
| 3. | { Rhyngddo, <i>between him or it</i>
Rhyngddi, <i>between her.</i> |
| | Plur. |
| 1. | Rhyngom, <i>between us</i> |
| 2. | Rhyngoch, <i>between you</i> |
| 3. | Rhyngddynt, or rhyngthynt, <i>between them.</i> |

§ 872. *Yn* changes them thus ;

Sing.

1. *Ynof, in me*
2. *Ynot, in thee*
3. { *Ynddo, or* } *in him or it*
 { *Yntho,* }
 { *Ynddi, or* } *in her.*
 { *Ynthi,* }

Plur.

1. *Ynom, in us*
2. *Ynoch, in you*
3. *Ynddynt, or ynthynt, in them.*

§ 873. *Trwy* alters them thus ;

Sing.

1. *Trwyof, through me*
2. *Trwyot, through thee*
3. { *Trwyddo, through him or it*
 { *Trwyddi, through her.*

Plur.

1. *Trwyom, through us*
2. *Trwyoch, through you*
3. *Trwyddynt, through them.*

Sometimes the *dd* is inserted in the first and second persons, as *trwyddof, trwyddot, trwyddom, trwyddoch*. It is omitted in the third person in *Iiber Land*. thus *trio, truo*.

§ 874. *Wrth*, thus ;

Sing.

1. *Wrthyf, by me*
2. *Wrthyt, by thee*
3. { *Wrtho, by him or it*
 { *Wrthi, by her.*

Plur.

1. *Wrthym, by us*
2. *Wrthych, by you*
3. *Wrthynt, by them.*

§ 875. The preposition *gan* changes into *gen* in the first and second persons ; as,

Sing.

1. *Gennyf, by me*
2. *Gennyt, by thee*
3. { *Ganddo, by him or it*
 { *Ganddi, by her.*

Plur.

1. *Gennym, by us*
2. *Gennych, by you*
3. *Ganddynt, by them.*

Anciently also in the third person singular, feminine, as *kenthy*, *Laws*, i. 41. *Genthi*, *Mab*. i. 26.

§ 876. The preceding are all very analogous ; but another form occurs in the combination of the pronouns with the preposition *i*, of which it is important to take notice.

Sing.

1. Im' or ym', *to me*
2. It', or yt', *to thee*
3. { Iddo, (*idaw*.) *to him or it*
Iddi, *to her*.

Plur.

1. In', or yn', *to us*
2. Iwch, *to you*
3. Iddynt, *to them*.

§ 877. Nor are these mutations of the personal pronouns confined to the instance of their combinations with prepositions. They are thus compounded with the possessive pronoun *eiddo*;

Sing.

1. Eiddof, *my own*
2. Eiddot, *thy own*
3. { Eiddo, *his, or its own*
Eiddo, *her own*.

Plur.

1. Eiddom, *our own*
2. Eiddoch, *your own*
3. Eiddont, *eiddynt, their own*.

§ 878. Also with verba, forming the active gobenyddiau, as we have already seen.

§ 879. The Welsh grammarians deduce analytically the following series of forms under which the personal pronouns occur when thus modified by the preceding words.

Mi	}	becomes	Af, of, yf, or m'
Ti			At, ot, yt, or t'
Efo			Aw, o, or ddo
Hi			I or ddi
Ni			Om, ym, or n'
Chwi			Och, ych, or ch
Hwynt			Ynt, <i>sometimes</i> ddynt.

§ 880. More on this subject shall appear when we come to treat of the Prepositions.

§ 881. All nouns and pronouns are of the third person, except the four pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *ni*, and *chwi*.

SECTION LX.

PARTICLES.

§ 882. Other words, not being of those two parts of speech, a noun or pronoun, and a causative, and which denote sorrow, as *och*, or joy, as *oi*, are not perfect parts of speech, but serve only to augment or modify the sentence.

SECTION LXI.

THE ARTICLE, (*Nod bannog*.)

§ 883. Einion Offeiriad names *e*, *y*, *er*, *yr*, *ys*, as the articles, and says, "they are bannogion, and are indispensable in Cymraeg to precede other parts of the sentence."

§ 884. Dafydd Ddu likewise gives the same list, with the exception of *ys*, which he omits. According to him, "they are called nodau bannog, because they are like prominences or hills between mountains, connecting and joining together different parts of the sentences."

§ 885. *E* and *er* are but the old forms of *y* and *yr*, which are now universally used. *Ys* is not properly an article, but a verb.

§ 886. These articles are both of them definite; that is, they serve to discriminate a definite noun, in various forms of construction, from one that is indefinite, which is always without an article.

§ 887. *Y* is used before a consonant, and before the letter *w*, when the latter has lost its proper power; as *y gwr*, *y wraig*. The Dime-tians, moreover, use it before *t*, when the said letter constitutes a part of a diphthong, as *y iaith*, for *yr iaith*.

Bydded nerth a nwyf serch ag anserch yn *y iaith* i'r myfyrdod. *Cyf. y Beirdd*, 41.

§ 888. *Yr* is always put before a vowel and the letter *h*; as *yr awr*, *yr haul*.

§ 889. When a word ending in a vowel precedes the article, the contracted form *'r* is frequently used, whether the following word begins with a vowel or a consonant; as,

Mae yn rhaid *t'r* adar man gael bwyd. Adage.

Mwy y braw *no'r* briw. Adage.

§ 890. In our oldest documents, *ir* was the only form used under all circumstances; as,

Irtinetic oceenn gulan. Oxford Glosses.

Irpimphet eterin. Oxford Notes.

Ir bis blchan. Ib.

Maliduc *ir* claud. Lib. Land. 216.

In *irham*; in *irgaem*. Lichfield Cod.

§ 891. It is singular that *r* should be the root of the Cymric article, when the Cornish, Armoric, and Erse, all have *n*.

SECTION LXII.

ADVERBS.

§ 892. Adverbs may be divided into *simple* and *compound*. By simple adverbs we mean such as express the notion of an adverb by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary in point of etymology; as *yna*, *yma*, *allan*, *ymaith*. By compound adverbs are meant such as express the notion of an adverb by two or more words; as *i waered*, *o hynn allan*.

§ 893. The formation of compound adverbs is not confined to any particular parts of speech, but embraces all indiscriminately; as *yn dda*, *yn y fan*, *o'r neilldu*, *ef allai*.

§ 894. Indeed, some of those which we have called *simple*, when resolved into their component parts, will be found of equal extension; as *weithian* (*y waith honn*), *malpai* (*mal pe bai*), *ysgatfydd* (*ys gad bydd*).

SECTION LXIII.

FORMATIVE ADVERBS.

§ 895. Formative adverbs are certain particles of an adverbial character, which, being put in the immediate vicinity of other words, render them compound adverbs of quality. The following is a list;

Can, *equally*
Go, *in a degree, rather*
Iawn, *rightly, or very*
Mor, *so, as*
Ni, *na, no, not*
Pur, *purely, or very*
Rhy, *too, or over*
Yn, *in the state of.*

§ 896. All these precede the words which they qualify, except *iawn*, which follows them, most generally.

§ 897. The frequent use of *yn* constitutes one of the peculiarities of the Cymraeg. Before a substantive, it is somewhat equivalent to the Latin *ut*, or the Greek *ὡς*; as,

Hic map di iob (*ut Jovius filius*). Oxford Glosses.

The expression in which it thus occurs may be taken adverbially; as,

Ef adele bod en uab yr brenya. Laws, i. 7. 1.

When it is put before a verb, as already seen, it gives it a participial character.

§ 898. Adverbial adjectives retain in that state their original capability of comparison ;

Gwell y tyn merch no rhaff. Adage.

Goreu y celid peth nis gwyppid. Adage.

SECTION XLIV.

ADVERBS OF NUMBER.

§ 899. These are formed by affixing *gwaith*, *tro*, or *plyg*, as a termination to any proposed numeral ; as,

Unwaith, *once*

Dwywaith, *twice*

Canwaith, *a hundred times*

Milcanwaith, *a hundred thousand times*

Untro, *in one turn*

Deudro, *in two turns*

Trithro, *in three turns*

Unplyg, *in one fold*

Deublyg, *in two folds*

Triplyg, *in three folds.*

See Section xxxii.

Bob *cilwrs* y rhed y cwn. Adage.

Pryn hen, pryn *cilwaith*. Adage.

SECTION XLV.

ADVERBS OF ORDER.

§ 900. These are formed by setting *yn* before ordinal numbers, and the usual terms of succession ;

Yn gyntaf, *first*

Yn ail, *secondly*

Yn olaf, *lastly*

Yn ddiweddaf, *finally.*

SECTION LXVI.

ADVERBS OF PLACE.

§ 901. The adverbs of place are numerous, consisting both of simple and compound words, made up, for the most part, of prepositions and nouns substantive. The following is a list :

Accw, (=εκεῖ) *yonder*

Adref, *home*

Allan, *out*

Bry, fry, *above*

Cw, *where*

- Cwdd**, *where*
Dacew, *yonder*
Draw, *yonder*
Hyd, (sub.) *as far as*
Hwnt, *away*
Isa, *below*
Isod, *below*
Llwrw, *towards*
Lledled, *broader and broader*
Maes, (sub.) *out*
Mann, (sub.) *where*
Menn, (sub. modification of mann) *where*
Mewn, (prep.) *within*
Mynn, (sub. plural of mann) *where*
Obentu, o, (prep.) pae, (sub.) tu, (sub.) *from about*
Obry, *below*
Oco, *yonder*
Oddiamgylch, oddi, (prep.) am, (prep.) cylch, (sub.) *from about*
Oddiar, oddi, (prep.) ar, (prep.) *from off*
Oddiacw, oddi, (prep.) accw, *from yonder*
Oddicartref, oddi, (prep.) cartref, (sub.) *from home*
Oddidraw, oddi, (prep.) draw, *from yonder*
Oddidref, oddi, (prep.) tref, (sub.) *from home*
Oddidros, oddi, (prep.) dros, (prep.) *from beyond*
Oddieithr, oddi, (prep.) eithr, (c.) *from the external*
Oddifaea, oddi, (prep.) maea, (sub.) *from without*
Oddifry, oddi, (prep.) bry, *from above*
Oddifynu, oddi, (prep.) fynu, *from above*
Oddifynydd, oddi, (prep.) mynydd, (sub.) *from above*
Oddigan, oddi, (prep.) gan, (prep.) *from being with*
Oddiger, oddi, (prep.) ger, (prep.) *from by*
Oddigylchen, oddi, (prep.) cylchen, (sub.) *from round about*
Oddihwnt, oddi, (prep.) hwnt, *from the farther side*
Oddirhwng, oddi, (prep.) rhwng, (prep.) *from between*
Oddiwaered, oddi, (prep.) gwaered, (sub.) *from below*
Oddeutu, o, (prep.) dau, (num.) tu, (sub.) *from about*
Odditan, oddi, (prep.) tan, (prep.) *from under*
Oddiwrth, oddi, (prep.) wrth, (prep.) *from by*
Oddiyma, oddi, (prep.) yma, *from here*
Oddiyna, oddi, (prep.) yna, *from there*
Oddiyno, oddi, (prep.) yno, *from thence*
Odducho, odd, (prep.) ucho, *from above*
Odduchod, odd, (prep.) uchod, *from above*
Oddyma, odd, (prep.) yma, *from here*
Oddyman, odd, (prep.) yman, *from hence*
Oddyna, odd, (prep.) yna, *thenceforth*
Oddyno, odd, (prep.) yno, *from such a place*

- Pell, *far*
 Pellach, *further*
 Penben, pen, (sub.) pen, (sub.) *cheek by jowl*
 Pendraphen, pen, (sub.) tra, (prep.) pen, (sub.) *head over head*
 Pendramwnwgl, pen, (sub.) tra, (prep.) mwnwgl, (sub.) *topsy-turvy*
 Pendrosben, pen, (sub.) tros, (prep.) pen, (sub.) *topsy-turvy*
 Peutu, pae, (sub.) tu, (sub.) *on both sides*
 Rhacco, *yonder*
 Ucho, *above*
 Uchod, *above*
 Wng, *hard by*
 Wnc, *hard by*
 Yma, *here, hither*
 Yman, q. d. y man, *ὁ τόπος, here*
 Yna, *there, thither*
 Yno, *there, in such a place*
 Ymaith, *hence*
 Yny, yn, (prep.) y, (art.) *where*
 Yngo, *hard by*
 Yngod, *hard by.*
 Ar wahan, (prep. adj.) *apart*
 Ar neilltu, ar, (prep.) naill, (pron.) tu, (sub.) *aside*
 Hyd at, (prep.) *as far as to*
 Hyd yma, *as far as here*
 Hyd yna, *as far as there*
 I ba le, i ble, (prep. pron. sub.) *to what place, whither*
 I faes, (prep. sub.) *outward*
 I lawr, (prep. sub.) *downward*
 I fyny, (prep. adv.) *upward*
 I waered, (prep. sub.) *downward*
 I mewn, (prep. adv.) *to within*
 I ba le bynnag, (prep. pron. sub. pron.) *to what place so ever*
 Neb le, (pron. sub.) *any where*
 O ba le, (prep. pron. sub.) *from what place*
 O ba le bynnag, (prep. pron. sub. pron.) *from what place so ever*
 O faes, (prep. sub.) *from without*
 O fewn, (prep. adv.) *from within*
 O hynn, (prep. pron.) *from this*
 O hynna, (prep. pron.) *from that*
 O hynn allan, (prep. pron. adv.) *from henceforth*
 O hynny allan, (prep. pron. adv.) *from thenceforth*
 Pen yn erfid, (sub. prep. sub.) *topsy-turvy*
 Pen o draed, (sub. prep. sub.) *head by feet*
 Rhyw fan, (pron. sub.) *somewhere*
 Rhyw le, (pron. sub.) *somewhere*
 Yn unlle, yn, (prep.) un, (num.) lle, (sub.) *any where, no where.*
 A wddosti cwdd fydd
 Nos yn aros dydd? Taliesin.

Yd kwytnt pennawr *ben o draed* Cynddelw.

Cylch Prydain bo
Fflemyched *yngo*
Draig nid ymgelo. Taliessin.

Men yd las Trahaiarn yn Gharn fynyt. Meilir.

Dyweddi o *wac*, galanas o *bell*. Adage.

Llys Owain hael—
Fny mae yued, heb neued, heb nac. Cynddelw.

Ysglyfion ysglyfyt *llwrw* bar. Ll. P. Moch.

Pell *oddyman* Aber Llyw. Ll. Hen.

•Golchodd Taf *oddigylchen*
Dan ei bais. Lang. Lewys.

Hwyl *raccw* 'm mrwydr hil Riccert. Iolo.

Yman ddyd i'r man ydd wyf. D. ab Gwilym.

Mae *yngo* gledd ym mwng gwlad. S. Keri.

Os ydyw'r dur *ym maes* mae'r gair *ym mewn*. Iolo MSS. 157.

Docco lle mae ar fon prysgollen a weli di yn union o'th faen *occo*. Iolo MSS. 156.

Na vynycha *oddigartref*. G. Fardd Glas.

§ 902. Many of those classed above as simple adverbs, may be formed into separate words, and thereby become compounds; as *pendraphen*, *pen dra phen*; *pendrosben*, *pen dros ben*. The tendency of the ancients was to connect such words; that of modern writers is to disjoin them.

SECTION LXVII.

ADVERBS OF TIME.

§ 903. These are likewise numerous, and are for the most part more purely adverbial than the preceding, as will appear from the following list:

Anaml, *seldom*
Byth, *for ever*
Cyd, *as long as*
Cyn, *sooner*
Cynt, *heretofore*
Diannod, di, (part.) annod, (sub.) *immediately*
Doe, *yesterday*
Echdoe, *the day before yesterday*
Echwng, *just now*
Eisioes, *already*
Eisus, *already*
Eleni, *this year*
Erioed, *ever, the past*
Erllynedd, er, (prep.) llynedd, (sub.) *last year*

Ermoed, er, (prep.) ym, (pron.) oed, (sub.) *in all my life*
 Etto, *again*
 Etton, *again*
 Ettwa, *again*
 Ettwaeth, *again*
 Gwedi, *afterwards*
 Gwrthreynydd, gwrth, (prep.) trenydd, (sub.) *the third day hence*
 Hagen, *yet, still, however*
 Haisch, *instantly*
 Halachen, *instantly*
 Heddyw, *to day*
 Heno, *to night*
 Henoeth, *to night*
 Hwyl, *longer*
 Hyd, *as long as*
 Moch, *soon*
 Nes, *until*
 Oddiyna, oddi, (prep.) yna, *thereafter*
 Oddiynaeth, oddi, (prep.) ynaeth, *thereafter*
 Oni, *until, so that*
 Onid, *until*
 Onis, *until*
 Pan, *when*
 Panyw, pan, yw, (v.) *when, whence, since; from*
 Pellach, *further*
 Peunoeth, pae, (sub.) noeth, (sub.) *nightly*
 Peunos, pae, (sub.) nos, (sub.) *nightly*
 Peunydd, pae, (sub.) dydd, (sub.) *daily*
 Pryd, *when*
 Pyth, *ever*
 Rhagllaw, rhag, (prep.) llaw, (sub.) *hereafter*
 Toc, *presently*
 Tra, *whilst*
 Tradwy, tra, (prep.) dwy, (num.) *fourth day hence*
 Trannoeth, tra, (prep.) noeth, (sub.) *the next morning*
 Trenydd, tra, (prep.) dydd, (sub.) *the second day hence*
 Weithian, waith, (sub.) honn, (pron.) *at length*
 Weithiau, (sub.) *sometimes*
 Weithion, waith, (sub.) honn, (pron.) *now, at this time*
 Yfory, y, (art.) mory, (sub.) *to morrow*
 Yna, *after this*
 Ynaeth, *thereafter*
 Yni, *until*
 Ambell dro, (pron. sub.) *sometimes*
 Ambell waith, (pron. sub.) *sometimes*
 Ar dro, (prep. sub.) *on a time*
 Ar droion, (prep. sub.) *at times*
 Ar fyr, (prep. adj.) *shortly*

Er ys ennyd, (prep. v. sub.) *long since*
 Er ys talm, (prep. v. sub.) *long ago*
 Gwedi hynn, (prep. pron.) *after this*
 Gwedi hynny, (prep. pron.) *after that*
 Hyd hynn, (prep. pron.) *hitherto*
 Hyd oni, *until that*
 Hyd onid, *until that*
 Llawer tro, (adj. sub.) *oftentimes*
 O hynn allan, (prep. pron. adv.) *from henceforth*
 Pob amser, (pron. sub.) *all times, always*
 Toc a da, (adv. conj. adj.) *presently and in good time*
 Y bore, (art. sub.) *in the morning*
 Yn aml, (prep. adj.) *often*
 Yn awr, (prep. sub.) *now, at this time*
 Yn ddiannod, *immediately*
 Yn fore, (prep. sub.) *early*
 Yn fynych, *frequently*
 Yn hwyr, (prep. sub.) *late*
 Yn uniawn, (prep. adj.) *directly*
 Yn uniawn deg, (prep. adj. adj.) *immediately*
 Yn y lle, (prep. art. sub.) *immediately*
 Yn y man, (prep. art. sub.) *by and by*
 Y pryd hynn, (art. sub. pron.) *this time*
 Yr awr honn, (art. sub. pron.) *this time*
 Y tro yma, (art. sub. adv.) *for this time*

Moes yna cyfraith. Adage.

Pan laddo Duw y lladd yn drwm. Adage.

A vo maru ny moct uelir. Llefoed.

Ny theweis *ermoed* oe moli mal drud. Cynddelw.

Yd gilyei pob llwfyf yny llated. Cynddelw.

A *clat* lledesynt wy lladassan. Aneurin.

Carwn pei caffwn *etwaeth*. Llywarch Hen.

Puy a wledych *odynaeth*? Myrddin.

Pa bennaeth *ynaeth* a fyd? Ib.

A'r awr hon *etton* Duw Ren attad
 Rhedwn. Ll. Goch ab M. Hen.

Nos fydd *fyth* yn ynys Fon. Iolo Goch.

Nywun awyt iach iawn *etwa*. Mab. ii. 56.

Hi hen—*aleni* y ganed. Ll. Hen.

Diannot y glot y glutvan. Aneurin.

Pewnaeth doeth dethol gynran

Pewnyd y ryd ac y ran. E. Wan.

Yn ei dadl *echdos*'n d'wedyd;

Ddos yn vyw iach, *keddyw*'n vud. L. G. Cothi.

Ei henw a saiv, hyn sy uvydd,

Tra vo byw adar, *tra* vo bedydd. L. G. Cothi.

SECTION LXVIII.

ADVERBS OF COMPARISON.

§ 904. Most of these adverbs are adjectives also, without having undergone any change of their original structure. The following is a list of them :

- Ail, *second to, like*
 Amgenach, *more otherwise*
 Cyn or can, *as*
 Chwaethach, *much less*
 Da, *well*
 Delw, (sub.) *in the manner*
 Drwg, *badly*
 Echre, *rather*
 Felly, *in that manner, so*
 Go, *rather*
 Goreu, *of the best*
 Gwaethach, *worse*
 Gwaethaf, *worst*
 Gwell, *better*
 Llai, *less*
 Lleiaf, *least*
 Llawn, *fully, completely*
 Lled, *rather*
 Mad, *well*
 Mal, *like*
 Megys, *like, as*
 Mor, *as*
 Mwy, *more*
 Mwyach, *any more*
 Mwyaf, *most*
 Po, (=quo) *by how much*
 Pur, *very*
 Rhy, *too*
 Ymron, yn, (prep.) bron, (sub.) *almost*
 Mal hynn, (conj. pron.) *in this manner*
 Mal hynna, (conj. pron.) *in that manner*
 Mal hynny, (conj. pron.) *in such a manner*
 O yr eithaf, (prep. art. sub. or adj.) *at the most*
 Yn hytrach, *rather*
 Yr un fath, (art. num. sub.) *of the same sort.*
- Ef dihytyl y eur yn arfed frawt veirt,
 Ual frwyth coed llawn adued. Ll. P. Moch.
- Delw ym peirch a meirch mygyrhydeith. Cynddelw.
- Ny mat wanpwynt ygwyt. Aneurin.
- Gwodi Owein, Mon mor ddiobaith cyrdd. Seiryll.

Megys saethau yn llaw meddiannusion.
Felly meibion ysgydwedigion. D. Ddu.

Kanys mwy egyptyot y kereys y ty dy noc wyntwy a thytheu ym karu ynheu yn
lley noc wyntwy. G. ab Arthur.

Po mwyav vo y llanw mwyav vydd y trai. Adage.

Can wyned a'r eira. Adage.

SECTION LXIX.

ADVERBS OF QUANTITY.

§ 905. This class, like the preceding one, consists mainly of adjectives assuming the character of adverbs in construction.

Achlan, wholly
Agaws, nearly
Aml, abundantly, frequently
Bach, little
Braidd, scarcely
Bychan, little
Bychydig, little
Cymmaint, as much
Digon, sufficiently
Gormodd, too much
Llawer, much
Lleilai, less and less
Mawr, greatly
Mwyfwy, more and more
Odid, scarcely
Peth, some
Prin, scarcely
Pynnag, soever
Syrn, a good deal
Tran, pretty much
Ychydig, a little
Ynghyd, yn, (prep.) cyd, (conj.) altogether
I gyd, wholly
Pa faint, (pron. sub.) how much
Pa gymmaint, (pron. adj.) how great.

Odid urddas o drais. Adage.

Tra phery'r haf *aml* y cyrohaf. Rhys Goch ap Rhiccart.

Po iawnvav y gwaith iawnvav *i gyd* y diwedd. Myv. Arch. iii. 59.

Rhwyf ner, by archer *bynnag*

Nid rhyw i'm ner rhoddi nag. Einion Wan.

Nead wyf hoed *fwyfwy* drwy drueni. Bleddyn Fardd.

Nid rhy *sach* ydd ymddiriedir i'r Byd. Myv. Arch. iii. 17.

A breidd fu o diengs neb o naddunt or frwydyr i eu gwlad eu hun. Hanes
 G. ab Cynan.

SECTION LXX.

ADVERBS OF DOUBTING.

§ 906. Verbs and conjunctions seem to have a considerable share in the formation of these adverbs.

Agatfydd, a, (conj.) gad, (verb) fydd, (verb) *peradventure*

Beth? *what?*

Gallai, (verb) *possibly*

Hwyrach, *perhaps*

Malpai, mal, (conj.) pe, (conj.) bai, (verb) *as if*

Odid, *it is a chance*

Osid, os (conj.) *if there is*

Padyw? pa, (pron.) yd, (par.) yw, (verb) *what is it that?*

Pyr, *if that, so that*

Ygatfydd, ys, (verb) gad, (verb) fydd, (verb) *peradventure.*

Fe allai, (pron. verb) *it might possibly, possibly*

Nid hwyrach, *perhaps*

O ddamwain (prep. sub.) *perchance*

Ond odid, (conj. adv.) *perchance.*

Osid uch ym mhant,
Neud Urien ai gwant? Taliesin.

Odid a rydd ateb. Adage.

Amwyn Duw trindawd,
Pyr i traethwn i draethawd
Namyn o honawd. Taliesin.

Gwyn ei fyd! *padis* Duw yd ragwy. Gwalohmai.

Beth o daw attom lynges drom droch? M. Dwygraig.

SECTION LXXI.

INTERROGATIVE ADVERBS.

§ 907. This class is chiefly made up of pronouns joined to nouns; and a few consist of two adverbs, one governing the other.

A? an interrogative agent

Adolwg? (verb) *I pray you?*

Ai! *is it?*

Attolwg? (verb) *I pray you?*

Cw? *where?*

Mae? (verb) *where is?*

Neu? *or otherwise? were not?*

Neud? *is it otherwise?*

Neur? *is there not?*

Neus? *is it otherwise?*

Ond? *is it not?*

Oni ? *what not ?*

Onid ? *what not ?*

Onis ? *what not ?*

Pa ? *what ?*

Paham ? pa, (pron.) am, (prep.) *wherefore ?*

Pam ? pa, (pron.) am, (prep.) *wherefore ?*

Piau ? (verb) *whose ?*

Pond ? py ond, *is it not ?*

Poni ? py oni, (Hib. cani) *why is it not ?*

Ponid ? py onid, *why is it not ?*

Py ? (=πῆ) *why ? what ?*

Sut ? (sub.) *how ?*

Ai ie ? *is it so ?*

Ai nid ? *is it not ?*

Am ba achaws ? (prep. pron. sub.) *for what reason ?*

Am ba beth ? (prep. pron. sub.) *for what ?*

A yw ? a ydyw ? (par. verb) *is it ?*

Er dolwg ? dy, (pron.) olwg, (sub.) *by your, leave ?*

Pa beth ? (pron. sub.) *what thing ?*

Pa ddelw ? (pron. sub.) *what form ?*

Pa fodd ? (pron. sub.) *what manner ?*

Pa le ? (pron. sub.) *where ?*

Pa sut ? (pron. sub.) *what state ?*

Pa wedd ? (pron. sub.) pawed (Mab.) *what manner ?*

Pa yr un ? (pron. art. num.) *whether ?*

A ddwg da drwg gynghor ? Adage.

Ai da gogan, ai addas ? Myv. Arch. iii. 144.

Neud llauar adar, neud gwar gweilgi. E. ab Gwalchmai.

Neur digerais a garaf ? Ll. Hen.

Pony wydut ti nat edewis y gawat hediw na dyn na llwdyn yu vvw ? Mab. i. 9.

Piau y bet hwn, bet hun, a hun ? Eng. y Bedden.

Pam ? heb y cath, ponti roddaist ti dy gred ar ddyfod attaf fi pan harchwyf it ? Iolo MSS. 166.

Ponid gwan truan trynder pechadur ? G. ab yr Ynad Coch.

Cw mae eu cenhedloedd, py fro pan ddaethant ? Golyddan.

Dart arglwydd Herbart baham na thores ? L. Glyn Cothi.

B'le mae un wlad yn Lladin ?

B'le val mab Ailvyw am win ? Ib.

SECTION LXXII.

AFFIRMATIVE ADVERBS.

§ 906. The most general adverbs of affirmation are given in the following list ; but we have none that is universal, like *yes* in English; for the affirmation is made by an expression, that, as it were, echoes or preserves some of the characteristic form of the questions asked.

Ceugant, (sub.) *certainly*
 Diammeu, di, (part.) ammeu, (sub.) *undoubtedly*
 Diau, di, (part.) gau, (sub.) *undoubtedly*
 Do, *it is done ; yes*
 Gwir, *truly*
 Ie, *yea, it is*
 Myn, *by ; as Myn gafr*
 Neur, *verily so*
 Oedd, (v.) *there was ; yes*
 Oea, (v.) *there is ; yes*
 Purion, pur, (adj.) iawn, (adj.) *very well*
 Sef, yssef, ya, (v.) ef, (pron.) *that is, namely*
 Ydyw, yd, (part.) yw, (v.) *it is*
 Ys, (v.) *is*
 Ysid, ya, (v.) id, (pron.) *there is*
 Yssy, ya, (v.) sy, (v.) *there is*
 Yssydd, ys, (v.) sydd, (v.) *there is*
 Can hynny, (conj. pron.) *therefore*
 Nid amgen, *not otherwise*
 Yn ddiammen, *undoubtedly*
 Yn ddiau, *undoubtedly*
 Yn gerth, (adj.) *certainly*
 Yn geugant, *certainly*
 Yn wir, (sub.) *indeed*
 Ys ef *that is.*

Ae gwr y arthur wyt ti heb ef. *Ie myn* vygkret heb y peredur. Mab i. 244.

A ymwelas ef athi heb hi *do* neb ef. Mab. ii. 24.

Ysid escob llary uch alloreu dewi. G. Brycheiniog.

Ysyn argluyd gurd gordivung y var. Cynnddelw.

Sef aoruc yr amherawdr glas owenu. Mab. ii. 377.

Mae un o'i gwraidd, *myn* y grog. L. G. Cothi.

Agheu pob rieu *dileu* y daw. Bleddyn Fardd.

E fu amser *neur* derw. D. ab Gwilym.

Ked archwyf ym llyw y lloergant yn rot
 Ef am ryt *yn geugant*. Ll. P. Moch.

SECTION LXXIII.

NEGATIVE ADVERBS.

§ 909. The radical signs of negation are *ni* (*ny*) and *na*. The former is a direct negative, and is therefore appropriated to verbs of the indicative mood. The latter adverb implies generally a condition, or a contingency; and on that account it is the negative with verbs of the optative and conditional moods. The following is a list of them;

Dim, an auxiliary negative
 Mo, an auxiliary negative
 Na, *not, that not, no*
 Nad, *not, that not*
 Nag, *that not*
 Nas, *not, that not*
 Ni, *not*
 Nid, *not*
 Nis, *not*
 Nwy, *that will not*
 Nyw, *that will not*
 Nad oedd, (v.) *that there was not*
 Nad oes, (v.) *that there is not*
 Nad yw, (v.) *nad ydyw, (v.) that is not*
 Na ddo, *naddo, not done*
 Nag e, *nage, (nag-ie) not it*
 Nag oedd, (v.) *there was not*
 Nag oes, (v.) *there is not*
 Nag ydyw, (v.) *it is not*
 Nag yw, (v.) *it is not*
 Nid oedd, (v.) *there was not*
 Nid yw, (v.) *is not, it is not.*

Na choll dy henffordd er dy ffordd newydd. Adage.

Nag ymddiried i estron. Adage.

Gloew ei gylchwy;
Ny ry weleis tec nwy ry gwelwy. Cynddelw.

Tlawd pawb nwy gwel eu digon. Myv. Arch. iii. 99.

Dim oc awch da nys mynnaf. Mab. i. 272.

Mi nwy dirmygaf. Taliesin.

Ryued yw gennyfi nam atwaenost. Mab. ii. 7.

Ny at yr aruen estronawl mawr racco welet nae wyneb of nae bryt,
 Mab. ii. 10.

Na werth mo'th iar ar y gwlaw. Myv. Arch. iii. 187.

SECTION LXXIV.

CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 910. Conjunctions are those parts of speech, which express the relations in which propositions, whether single words or not, stand to each other. They are usually divided into the two principal classes of *conjunctives* and *disjunctives*. These again are capable of subdivisions, of which the following are the most important.

SECTION LXXV.

COPULATIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 911. Copulatives are such as join all sentences, though they may be incongruous as to meaning ; these are

A, <i>and</i>	Etto, <i>yet, again</i>
Ac, <i>and</i>	Hagen, (Armor. hogen,) <i>however</i>
Drachefn, <i>besides, again</i>	Hefyd, (Armor. euez, <i>hodie ivez</i>) <i>also</i> .
Eilchwyl, <i>again</i>	

Addaw mawr a rhodd fechan. Adage.

Addaw mach ac addaw mab. Adage.

Ac enryuedodeu erill *heuyt* awelaist yno. Mab. i. 283.

Nyt oed yr vn porthawr. Glewiwyt gauaelawr oed yno *hagen* ar ureint porthawr. Mab. i. 1.

Llygaid Gwaun Llwg wyd i gyd,
Llaw a Llyfr y lleill *hefyd*. Gutto'r Glyn.

§ 912. A and ac were anciently written *ha* and *hac* ; as,

Bryeint eocllys Teliau o Launtaf a rodes breenhined hinn *ha* thouymogion cymry yn tryeygydaul dy eocllys Teliau *hac* dir escip oll gueti ef. Lib. Land. p. 113.

Such also are their Cornish and Armoric forms.

SECTION LXXVI.

SUPPOSITIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 913. These denote connection, but not actual existence ; the following is a list :

O, od, or, os, *if*
Pe, ped, pes, pei, *if*
Oni, onid, onis, *if ... not, except*
Oddieithr, *except*
Oddigerth, *except*.

O down ni ni a ddown. Adage.

Oni heuir ni fedir. Adage.

Os gwr mawr cawr, os gwr bychan cor. Adage.

B'le cai'r un a á'i 'n ei ol,
Pe bai esgob pob ysgol? L. G. Cothi.

Ae or byd da gennyt ti arglwyd miui aaf y edrych. Mab. i. 259.

SECTION LXXVII.

CAUSAL CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 914. These subjoin causes to effects.

Achaws, (sub.) *because*
Am, *because*
Can, gan, *since*
Cany, can ys, (v.) *for*
Herwydd, (prep.) *because*
Mai, *that*
Oblegyd, *because*
Oblaid, *because*
Taw, (*Dimetian*) *that*
O achaws, *because*
O herwydd, *because*
O waith, (prep. sub.) *because*
O ethryb, (prep. sub.) *because*
Yn gymmaint ag, (prep. adj. prep.) *inasmuch as*.

Y nef ai synia yn ddiau canys o'i arch ef y rhed. Elucidarius.

Llyma vy nghyngor iti
Can nid teg imi dewi. Myv. Arch. iii. 144.

Cydnebydd di dy hun; achos tri goruchavion doethineb y rhoddes Duw i ddyn. Geraint Fardd Glas.

Gwelir mai heb ystyr heb ddim. Myv. Arch. iii. 130.

Heb ystyr y gwynfyd dau myfi yw twysog yr adar. Iolo MSS. 175.

Penllynig fy nghof y'nglyntefn
Yn ethryb caru caerwyd febin. Gwalchmai.

SECTION LXXVIII.

ILLATIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 915. Illatives subjoin effects to causes; such are the following:

A, ag, *as*
Can, *as*
Mal, *so that, so*
Megys, *so, so that*
Mor, *so*
Oddyna, *then*
Oddyno, *then*
Yna, *then*

PARTS OF SPEECH.

Yno, *then, therefore*
 Ynte, *then*
 Achaws hynn, (sub. pron.) *because of this*
 Achaws hynny, *therefore*
 Am hynn, *for this*
 Am hynny, *therefore*
 Can hynn, *with this*
 Can hynny, *therefore*
 Herwydd hynn, *on this account*
 Herwydd hynny, *therefore*
 Wrth hynn, *by this*
 Wrth hynny, *by that, therefore.*

Pan ballai ereill o'r cyfeillion
 Yno y rhoddai yn aur rhuddion. D. ab Ieuan Ddu.

Ymdrech ac ef ebe Taliesin *mal* y gorffer cyn y bo dyn cyfan. Iolo MSS. 165.

Brwysg oeddwn i yna, ac *am hynny* ni chynhaliaf fi ammod yr awr honn.
 Iolo MSS. 166.

SECTION LXXIX.

DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 916. Disjunctives are such as disjoin words or sentences. The following is a list :

Ai, *neu, ynte, or*
 Na, *nag, nor*
 Chwaith, *neither, either*
 Naill, *either*
 Pa un, *pa yr un, whether.*

Ni wna *na* byw *na* marw. Myv. Arch. iii. 186.

Naill ai mammaeth *ai* gwraig o'i chov. Ib.

SECTION LXXX.

ADVERSATIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 917. These have the faculty both of disjoining, and of making an opposition ; and they are of a two-fold division ; the absolute and the comparative, the adequate and the inadequate.

SECTION LXXXI.

ABSOLUTE ADVERSATIVES.

§ 918. The absolute adversatives are the following :

Ond, <i>but</i>	Eithr, <i>except, but</i>
Namyn, <i>save</i>	Oddieithr, <i>except.</i>
Oddigerth, <i>except</i>	

Nid bod ond angen, nid angen ond Duw. Adage.

Nid derwydd eithr o enwawd. Adage.

Ni wyr yn llwyr namyn llyvyr. Myv. Arch. iii. 169.

SECTION LXXXII.

COMPARATIVE ADVERSATIVES.

§ 919. The following are the comparative adversatives :

No, nog, noc, *than.*

Hwy pery clod no golud. Adage.

Neb cyn nog ef nid aeth iddi. Taliesin.

SECTION LXXXIII.

ADEQUATE ADVERSATIVES.

§ 920. The adversative conjunctions termed adequate are these :

Oni, onid, onis, *unless.*

Beth yna a dal cyffes ac edifarwoh oni ddileir pechawd ? Elucidarius.

SECTION LXXXIV.

INADEQUATE ADVERSATIVES.

§ 921. The inadequate adversatives are these :

Er, *for, though*

Eisoes, *yet, notwithstanding, nevertheless*

Cyd, *although*

Er hynny, *notwithstanding that.*

Er na wnei ddrwg na wna debyg. Adage.

Cyd gwichio y ven hi a ddrwg ei llwyth. Myv. Arch. iii. 151.

SECTION LXXXV.

TEMPORAL CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 922. Sometimes these are termed conjunctival adverbs, on the ground that they combine the notion of both an adverb and of a conjunction. In the sentence "Coll medd y fran pan gaffo ddigon," (Adage,) the word *pan* includes the notion of an adverb, as it refers to a *point of time*; but it includes also the notion of a conjunction, as it connects the clause "pan gaffo ddigon" with the preceding "coll medd y fran."

Gwedi, wedi, *after*
 Hyd, *until*
 Nes, *until*
 Pan, *when*
 Pryd, *when*
 Tan, *until*
 Tra, *whilst*.
 Ar ol, *after*
 Cyd ag, *as long as*
 Cyhyd ag, *as long as*
 Cyn gynted ag, *as soon as*
 Er pan, *since*
 Gynted ag, *as soon as*
 Hyd nes, *until*
 Hyd oni, (onid, onis) *until*,
 Pryd bynnag, *whenever*
 Yn ol, *after*.

Na wrthawd dy barch *pan* y cynnycier. Myv. Arch. iii. 165.

Ni wyddis eisio y fynnon *onid* el yn hesp. Ib. 169.

Dyrnawd arodes y marchawc y walchmei *hwt pan* troes yr helym y ar y wyneb. Mab. i. 25

Pyderw ytti *pryd* nat atteppych y neb heddiw. Mab. i. 18.

Mynvygret ny chyagaf hun lonyd *nes* gwybot chwedyl. Mab. i. 284.

Tra mor *tra* Brython. Taliesin.

SECTION LXXXVI.

PREPOSITIONS.

§ 923. Prepositions are words which express the relations in which nouns stand to each other or to verbs. They are distributed into three main classes—the simple, the compound, and the pronominal; these again are capable of subdivisions.

SECTION LXXXVII.

SIMPLE PREPOSITIONS.

§ 924. Simple prepositions are such as express the notion of a preposition by one term, without being necessarily simple and elementary as to etymology. These are of two kinds, prepositions proper, and substantive prepositions.

SECTION LXXXVIII.

PREPOSITIONS PROPER.

§ 925. Prepositions proper are such as seem to have the greatest claim to such a name, in opposition to nouns used prepositionally by an ellipsis of a particle. The following is a list :

- Ach, (=Hibern. oc) *by, hard, close upon*
 Am, (=Hibern. imm, imme ; Gall. ambi) *round about ; for, on account of*
 Ar, *on, upon ; of*
 At, *to, close to*
 Can, gan, (=Corn. gan ; Armor. gant) *with*
 Cer, ger, *by*
 Cerfydd, gerfydd, *by*
 Cyd, gyd, *with*
 Cyferbyn, *over against*
 Cyn, (=Corn. kyns, kens ; Armor. cent) *before*
 Er, (yr) *for*
 Erbyn, *against*
 Erys, *from, since*
 Gerwydd, *in presence of*
 Gerbron, *in presence of, before*
 Gerllaw, *at hand, near*
 Gerwyneb, *in presence of*
 Gogyfer, *over against*
 Gor, *over*
 Goris, *below*
 Goruch, goruwch, *above*
 Goruwchben, *overhead*
 Gwedi, (guetig, gueti=Arm. goude) *after*
 Gwrth, *in opposition*
 Heb, (hep) *without*
 Heblaw, *besides*
 Heibio, *by, past*
 I, (di, y) *to, into ; for*
 Iar, *off, about, upon*
 Idd, *to, into*
 Is, (=Hibern. is) *below*

- Islaw, *below*
 Med, *till, towards*
 Mewn, *within*
 O, *out, out of; from*
 Oe, *out, out of; from*
 Odd, *out of; from*
 Oddi, *out of; from*
 Obeutu, *about*
 Oblegid, obloid, *because of*
 Oddeutu, *about*
 Oddiallan, *from without*
 Oddiam, *from about*
 Oddiamgylch, *from about*
 Oddiar, *from off; above*
 Oddifewn, *from within*
 Ofewn, *from within*
 Peuparth, *on both sides*
 Peutu, *about*
 Rhag, (rac) *before, against*
 Rhagbron, *in presence of*
 Rhagwyneb, *in presence of*
 Rhwng, *between*
 Tan, *under*
 Tra, *beyond*
 Trach, *beside, hard by*
 Trag, *by, in succession*
 Traw, *beyond*
 Tros, *over; for*
 Trwy, (troi, trui=Erse, tre, tri; Corn. Arm. tre) *through*
 Tua, *toward*
 Tuag, *toward*
 Tuagat, *toward*
 Uch, uwch, (=Hib. os, uas) *above*
 Uwchben, *overhead, above*
 Uwchlaw, =*overhand; above*
 Wrth, *by, towards*
 Yn, (in) *in; at*
 Ynghylch, =*in a circle; about*
 Ymhlith, *among*
 Ymmysg, *among*
 Yngwydd, *in the presence of; before.*

Oer yw fy nghwyn am wawr addwyn. Rh. Goch ab Rhiccert.

Heb gwsig y nos, heb gof agos. Ib.

Gnawd rhygas wedi rhyserch. Adage.

Hael yw meinwen wrth bob angen. Rh. Goch ab Rhiccert.

Cawn wenau serch gan dawelferch. Ib.

Mewn nev bu *mewn* y bydd *mewn* y mae etwa. Taliesin.

Y wendyd y dynedaf
Oes *tragoes* disgoganaf
Wedi kadualadyr cyndaf. Myrddin.

Gwir *tros* byth *yn* yr unman. Adage.

Gwellt, aeed *uch* eu pennau ac *is* eu traed. Mab. ii. 374.

Yr auon uchot hyt ym *ach* mur kaerloyw. Mab. ii. 234.

O aper gungleis is taf maliduc ar i hyt *bet* i blaen. Lib. Land. 247.

§ 926. *I*, in our oldest documents, is written *dí*, (=Hibern. di ;) thus "hin mab *dí* iob," (Oxf. Gloss.) would now be written "yn fab i Iou."

Aper catfrut in guy ar i hyt *dúinid* (*i* fynydd) *bet* penn ar ciueir hadrech dindir *dir* (*i'r*) alt *dúinid* (*i* fynydd) *dí* (*i*) drec dindir o drec dindir *díguaret* (*i* waered) *dí* (*i*) guy. Lib. Land. 200.

SECTION LXXXIX.

SUBSTANTIVE PREPOSITIONS.

§ 927. These are really and in themselves nouns substantive; but from their position, use, and meaning, they may be regarded as prepositions. The following is a list:

Achos, (=Lat. *causâ*.) on account of

Amgylch, about

Cylch, about

Gwaith, because of: Cf. *'ápyw*, ergo

Herwydd, (erwydd) because of

Hyd, (hyt) as far as, to, along; over

Maes, out

Parth, as to

Parthed, as to

Plegid, because of

Traws, over

Tuedd, towards.

E hudai honn, adar gwylltion

Achos ei thwyll. Rhys Goch ab Rhiecert.

Cariad dan wydd *herwydd* hiraeth. Ib.

Gorwen ton *tuedd* Porth wyddno. Ph. Brydydd.

O dywedeisy eir ar wekrei heb porth

Parth eurgolofyn kymry. Ph. Brydydd.

SECTION XC.

COMPOUND PREPOSITIONS.

§ 928. Compound prepositions are such as express the notion of a preposition by two or more words ; which words are either simple prepositions, as *tuagat am*, or prepositions and substantives, as *ar led*, *tu cefn i*.

§ 929. Some of these end with a preposition, and some with a substantive ; they are hence divisible into two classes.

SECTION XCI.

COMPOUNDS ENDING WITH A PREPOSITION.

- § 930. *Am dan*, *about*
Ar gyfer i, *opposite to*
Ar gyferyd i, *opposite to*
A dan, *under, from under*
Cyferbyn â, *opposite to*
Cyfarwyneb â, *opposite to*
Gwydderbyn â, *opposite to*
Hyd at, *as far as*
Hyd ar, *as far as*
Hyd yn, *as far as*
I erbyn, *against*
I mewn, *within*
I wrth, *in opposition*
Oddi maes i, *from without*
Oddiallan i, *from without*
Oddimewn i, *from within, within*
O fewn, *within*
O dan, *under*
Oddiam dan, *from about*
Parth â, *towards*
Parth ag at, *towards*
Tuagat am, *as to*
Tu blaen i, *before*
Tu cefn i, *behind*
Tu maes i, *outside*
Tu allan i, *outside*
Tu draw i, *beyond*
Tu hwnt i, *beyond*
Tu isaf i, *below*
Tu ol i, *behind*
Tu yu ol i, *behind*

Tu mewn i, *within*
 Tu uchaf i, *above*
 Tu yma i, *this side*
 Tu yna i, *that side.*

SECTION XCII.

COMPOUNDS ENDING WITH A SUBSTANTIVE.

§ 931. Am ben=*about the head ; on ; at*
 Ar ben=*on the head ; on ; at*
 Ar hyd, *along*
 Ar led, *over*
 Ar draws, *over*
 Ar ol, *after, behind*
 Ar warthaf, *upon*
 Er mwyn, *for the sake of*
 O achos,=*from the cause of ; because of*
 O herwydd, *because of*
 O erwydd, *because of*
 O gylch, *about*
 O amgylch, *about*
 O barth, *as to*
 O barthed, *as to*
 O gwmpas, *about*
 O ran, *as for*
 I blith,=*to among ; among*
 Wrth law,=*by the hand of ; besides*
 Yn ol, *behind*
 Yn ymyl,=*at the side of ; close to.*

Auon regedawc ar hyl y glynn. Mab. i. 3.

Fa ymyl y ffynawn y mae llech. Ib. i. 8.

Yn y del y iarll am penn y lle hwinn. Ib. i. 252.

Gwas melyn yn dygwytaf ar penn y lin geyr bron peredur. Ib. i. 295.

Vyggkarcharu yd ydys oachaws marchawc. Ib. i. 81.

Fa ol y twrwl y daw kawat. Ib. i. 8.

Ymherfedd cell gwneuthum babel
 Er mwyn bun deg elain waneg. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

SECTION XCIII.

PRONOMINAL PREPOSITIONS, (*Rhagemau cynglyn.*)

§ 932. Pronominal prepositions are such as enter into combination with personal pronouns.

§ 933. The prepositions that undergo such a combination are these ;

Simple : *Am, amdan, ar, at, can* or *gan, dar, er, heb, hyd, i, idd, han* or *hon, o, odd, oddiamdan, oddiar, oddigan, odditan* or *dan, oddirhwng, oddirhag, ohan* or *ohon, rhag, rhwng, tan* or *dan, dros* or *tros, trwy* or *drwy, wrth, yn.*

Compound : *Hyd yn, hyd ar, hyd at, parth ag at.*

§ 934. When personal pronouns are suffixed to these particles, they suffer their vowels to be changed and inverted, to render the words more harmonious, and to give a greater variety.

§ 935. The following table exhibits the various forms which each personal pronoun assumes :

Sing.		Plur.
1. Af, of, (or wyf,) yf, from fi	Om, ym, (cognate with Gr. ἡμεῖς)	
2. At, ot, yt	... ti	Och, ych, from chwi
3. { O	... o=6	Ynt
{ I	... hi.	... hwynt.

§ 936. These pronominals are classified under four distinct heads, distinguished by the termination of the first person singular.

§ 937.

Sing.	First Class, Af.	Plur.
1. Attaf, (at-fi) to me		Attom, (at-ἡμεῖς) to us
2. Attat, (at-ti,) to thee		Attoch, (at-chwi) to you
3. { Atto, (at-o) to him		Attynt, (at-hwynt) to them.
{ Atti, (at-hi) to her.		

§ 938. The following come under this class :

Arnaf, upon me
Darnaf, upon me
Amdanaf, about me
Odanaf, under me
Oddiamdanaf, from about me
Oddiarnaf, from off me
Odditanaf, from under me
Ohonaf, out of me
Tanaf, under me.

§ 939. There are several variations in the personal terminations of some of these, as will appear from the following examples :

Cnud a chnud a fud ymdanadud. Gwalchmai.
Eirioes y perthaist parth ac atan. Cynddelw.
A roti rut wisc am danan. Ib.

Hiraeth a'm dug *amdenyw*. D. ab Gwilym.

Yn diagyrnu
Danned *arnu*. G. ab yr Ynad Coch.

Nid af *attaddynt* ganhynt ni byddaf. Taliesin.

Ractal eur am y phenn. agwisc o bali melyn *ymdanci*. Mab. i. 14.

A Iarll Caerllion a *danaw* ynteu, a gair yw ei air ef *ar naddynt* hwy. Iolo MSS. p. 74.

Brwydr a chrwydyr a chryd *arnadut*. Cynddelw

§ 940.

Second Class, *Of*.

Sing.

Plur.

- | | |
|------------------------------------|---|
| 1. Erof, (er-fi,) <i>for me</i> | Erom or erddoun, (er- <i>ῥμεῖν</i> ,) <i>for us</i> |
| 2. Erot, (er-ti,) <i>for thee</i> | Eroch or erddoch, (er-chwi,) <i>for you</i> |
| 3. { Erddo, (er-o,) <i>for him</i> | Erddynt, (er-hwynt,) <i>for them</i> . |
| { Erddi, (er-hi,) <i>for her</i> . | |

§ 941. The following belong to this class :

Canof, *with me*
 Canthof, cantof, canddof, *with me*
 Hebddof, *without me*
 Hebof, *without me*
 Honof, *of me, from me*
 Hydof, *over me*
 Hyd-ddof, *over me*
 Oddiganof, *from my possession*
 Oddiganthof, *from my possession*
 Oddirhyngof, *from between me*
 Odduchtof, *from over me*
 Oddiwrthof, *from by me*
 Ohanof, *out of me*
 Ohonof, *out of me*
 Rhagof, *before or from me*
 Rhyngof, *between me*
 Trosof, *over or for me*
 Trostof, *over or for me*
 Trwyof, *through me*
 Trwyddof, *through me*
 Ynof, *in me*
 Ynddof, ynthof, yntof, *in me*.

Ti *hebof* nyd hebu oet teu,
 Mi *hebod* ny hebaſ uisheu. Cynddelw.

Gwyth ygor tra mor tra menai
 Gwyd elfyd elwais o *honai*. Cynddelw.

Ethiw hael *hebofy* athwyf *hrplaw*. Ib.

Gwych yt aeth traws bennaeth *trostut*. Ib.

Y

A'r ffynnawn ffrwythlawn ysydd *odduchtî*
Ys wgegach nor gwin gwyn y llyn *yndi*. Taliesin.

Llu *racdaw* a llaw ar llumman. Ll. P. y Moch.

Pop dadel auo *ereythu* ehun eneyt or clas adele barnu udunt. Laws, ii. p. 10.

§ 942.

Third Class, *Yf*.

	Sing.	Plur.
1.	Gennyf, (gan-fi,) <i>with me</i>	Gennym, (gan- <i>ḡmeis</i> ,) <i>with us</i>
2.	Gennyt, (gan-ti,) <i>with thee</i>	Gennych, (gan-chwi,) <i>with you</i>
3.	{ Ganddo, (gan-o,) <i>with him</i> Ganddi, (gan-hi,) <i>with her</i> .	Ganddynt, (gan-hwynt,) <i>with them</i> .

§ 943. The following belong to this class :

Oddiwrthyf, *from besides me ; from me*

Oddigennyf, *from with me ; from me*

Wrthyf, *to me ; by me*.

Teyrn dreio a dragon *wrthaw*. Cynddelw.

Llawer cof *canthudd* a ddichwain. Seissyll.

Gennyd ri Celi culwydd cywir mawr,
Caffwyf nef. Dafydd y Coed.

Gwrthyf ny bo trist crist creadur. Ll. P. y Moch.

§ 944.

Fourth Class.

This only consists of the preposition *i* joined to the several persons ; as,

1	Imi, <i>to me</i>	Ini, <i>to us</i>	
2	Itti, <i>to thee</i>	Ichwi, <i>to you</i>	
3	{ Iddo, <i>to him or it</i> Iddi, <i>to her</i> .	{ Iddynt, <i>iddudd</i> , Iddu,	} <i>to them</i> .

Beth a roi *imy* er dy ryddhau a'th dynnu oddiyna ? Iolo MSS. 165.

Mŷneich dychnud fab bleiddawr
O gyfranc *uddydd* ai gwyddyanhawr. Taliesin.

Ac untau ai bu a their mam *uddu*
O *naddu* y doeth rhad. Ib.

§ 945. The first and second persons, in both numbers, are often contracted thus, *im'*, *it'*, *in'*, *ich*, or *iwch*.

Moes *in* gusan. Rhys Goch ab Rhiccert.

Gwae a nych *ym*, gwenn ni chaf. Ib.

Poni roddaist ti dy gred ar ddyfod attaf fi pan harchwyf *it'* ? Iolo MSS. 166.

Gelwob ar Cryst hyt pan vo ef a rodo glewder *ywch*. G. ab Arthur.

SECTION XCIV.

INTERJECTIONS.

§ 946. Interjections are sounds or words, uttered under the impulse of strong emotion.

§ 947. Many of them are, in reality, verbs of the imperative mood, both in their form and abstract meaning, and mostly of the second person. Thus, *aro!* stop, is the imperative of *aros*, to stop; *wela* or *wela!* behold, the imperative of *gwled*, to see or behold; *taw!* hush, the imperative of *tawi*, to be silent.

§ 948. Some are nouns substantive and adjective out of construction; as *ffwrdd!* avaunt; *huw!* alas; *syndod!* wonder; *dyn!* dear me; *dyn byw!* man alive; *druan!* poor thing; *druan bach!* poor little thing.

§ 949. Some are adverbs; as *dyma!* here is; *daccw!* yonder; *dyna!* there; *hwnt!* avaunt; *llyma!* lo here; *llyna!* lo there; *ymaih!* avaunt, away.

§ 950. A phrase, or a clause with a portion left out, will frequently constitute an interjection; as *gwyn ei fyd!* would to heaven; *ysywaeth!* (=which is worse,) the more the pity.

§ 951. Others are mere ejaculations which cannot well be derived from any of the more substantial parts of speech, except from elementary nouns, as is the case with all other words, (see § 380.) Such are *bw!* boh; *dyt!* hold; *hai!* hey; *och!* alas; *twt!* pshaw.

§ 952. The following is a list of interjections, of all kinds, that are most generally used:

Aro! stop
Bw! boh
Daccw! yonder
Dyma! here is
Dyn! man dear
Dyna! there so
Dyna dyna! there there
Dyn byw! man alive
Dyn dyn, man man; dear dear
Dyt; avast
Dyt dyt! hold hold
Ffi! fie
Ffw! off
Ffwrdd! away
Gwae! woe
Gwaed dyn! zounds
Gwaed dyn ai gilydd! zounds man alive
Gwaed dyn byw! zounds man alive
Gwyn ei fyd! would to heaven
Ha! hah

PARTS OF SPEECH.

Ha ha ! *hah hah*
 Hai ! *hei*
 Hai how ! *heigh ho*
 Hai wchw ! *murder*
 Hai whw ! *murder*
 He ! *hey*
 Heng ! *hie*
 Ho ! *ho*
 Ho ho ! *ho ho*
 Holo ! *halloo*
 How ! *alack*
 How heno ! *alack-a-day*
 Hu ! *alas*
 Huw ! *alas*
 Hwi ! *hie*
 Hwnt ! *avant*
 Hwt ! *off*
 Hyss ! *hiss*
 Llyma ! *lo here*
 Llyna ! *lo there*
 Nycha ! *see there*
 O ! *oh*
 Och ! *alas*
 Ochafi ! *ah me*
 Ochafinnau ! *ah me*
 Ochan ! *alack*
 Ocho druan ! *ah poor thing*
 O dyn ! *oh dear*
 Oia ! *oh pray*
 Oio ! *hear me*
 Ow ! *oh*
 O yr anwyl ! *oh dear*
 O yr unig ! *oh heavens*
 Pw ! *pook*
 Siow ! *shoo*
 Si siow ! *shoo*
 Teg teg ! *fairly fairly*
 Truan ! *poor thing*
 Truan bach ! *poor little thing*
 Truan hynny ! *poor thing that it was*
 Twt ! *pshaw*
 Ust ! *hush*
 W ! *oh*
 Waw ! *heigh*
 Wb ! *alack-a-day*
 Wban ! *alack*
 Wbwb ! *alack alack*
 Wchw ! *murder*

Wela! *well*
 Wela wela! *well well*
 Weldaccw! *lo yonder now*
 Weldyma! *lo here now*
 Weldyna! *lo there now*
 Wew! *hey*
 Wfft! *shame*
 Whw! *murder*
 Wi! *hey*
 Wichwach! *heigh*
 Ymaith! *away*
 Ys hu! *alas*
 Ysywaeth! *the more the pity.*

Erehi y vedyth awnaeth. *Och a truan heb ef ny dylyy gaffel lendyth.*
 Mab. i. 127.

Oia wr pa le yd ymordiwedawd ef athi? Ib. ii. 24.

Gormodd—*bw!* ar ebawl. Adage.

Gwae a gâr ni garant. Adage.

Hylaw heliaf haul haelion;
 Hai! hai! hai! ai hai yw hon? D. ab Edmwnt.

Hwi! gyda'r ci; hai! gyda'r geinach. Adage.

Hwt! hwt! dos ysgwt is gil. Rh. Nanmor.

Wb! o'r hin, o'r wybr heno. D. ab Gwilym.

Wel, dyna weled anhawdd! Ib.

Wfft i'r dyn a wfftio bawb heb wybod mwy am dano. Adage.

W'i! o'r grefft yw ar ei gryd;
 W'i! o'r lliw ar y llewys! D. ab Gwilym.

Ystebwl? bobl ansyberw ydych. Ib.

SYNTAX.

SECTION XCV.

SENTENCES.

§ 953. From the words which are called parts of speech, is a sentence formed; hence it is necessary that we should know what a sentence is, and how sentences are distinguished.

§ 954. A sentence is an assemblage of words.

§ 955. There are two kinds of sentences; a perfect sentence, and an imperfect sentence.

SECTION XCVI.

PERFECT SENTENCE.

§ 956. That is a perfect sentence, in which a noun and a verb are placed properly together; as, *Ieuan a gar Gwenlliant*.

§ 957. It may thus be regarded as consisting of three main elements; the subject, the predicate or object, and the copula or verb.

§ 958. The position of words in a sentence depends on the emphasis intended to be laid on them. In Cymraeg the most important word takes precedence. In ordinary discourse, when no particular emphasis is intended to be expressed, or where the verb, as being the main part of the clause, may be regarded as emphatic, the order will stand thus; verb, subject, predicate or object; as,

Gwnaethpwyd Dyfrig sant yn Archagob yn Llandaf. Iolo MSS. 44.

Anuones Gortheyrn kenhiadau. G. ab Arthur.

Ni chel grudd gystudd calon. Adage.

§ 959. When the verb, thus, begins an affirmative sentence, the auxiliary *e, ef, fe, fo*, is generally put before it; as

E wnaeth y fran ei nyth fry. Apud Dr. Davies. See § 839.

§ 960. Some clauses will always have this order, whether they be simple or emphatic ; such as,

1. Those whose verbs are in the imperative mood ; as,

Molod pawb y rhyd mal y caffo. Adage.

2. Interrogative clauses made by *a* ;

A glywaist ti chwedl Cattwg ? Iolo MSS. p. 252.

3. Subjunctive clauses, especially those of time and motive ; as,

Pan dywyso y dall ddall arall, y ddau a ddygyydd i'r pwll. Myv. Arch. iii. 170.

Yr honn a ddylyon ni ei chadwa'i harfer yn ddilediaith ac ymarfer a phob gwybodau a champau a deddfau daionus *fal ydd ennilom ni fodd Duw a chlod gan ddynion.* Iolo MSS. 29.

§ 961. Very frequently, in old writings, an auxiliary is employed with the principal verb at the beginning of a sentence ; as,

Achysgu aoruc yr amherawdwr. Mab. i. 2.

Adnabot awnaeth y gwr. Ib. i. 6.

§ 962. Generally, however, when the verb is periphrastic, and the verb substantive be used, the subject intervenes between the auxiliary and the principal part ; as,

Mae Annes yn damuno, (L. G. Cothi ;)

or between the first and second auxiliaries ; as, *mae Annes yn medru damuno.*

§ 963. When the subject of the clause is to receive emphasis, the order of construction will be, subject, verb, predicate or object ; as,

Cadair a ddengys awdurdawd a barn. Iolo MSS. 217.

Holl gelfyddydau byd sy'n byddinaw i'm brn. Taliesin.

Dyn a ddywaïd Duw a farn. Maer Glas.

§ 964. Many of the mediæval writers usually adopt this order, irrespective of emphasis ; as,

Peredur a gychwynnwyd raddaw. Mab. i. 244.

Mihangel wrth orchymyn Duw a ddangoses i Bawl Abostol boenau uffern mewn gweledigaeth. Iolo MSS. 190.

Pop perchenauc tir llan adeilant deuot ar pop brenin newid adel ydatkanu ydau efeu breint ac eu delect. Laws, ii. 10. 2.

§ 965. When the emphasis falls on the predicate or the object of the verb, the clause will be thus arranged ; predicate or object, verb, subject.

Ytorrynnau y gelsoid y llythyrennau ym mhrif amseroedd cenedl y Cymry.
Iolo MSS. 204.

Brenin coronog fydd ef heb ammau. Ib. 266.

Gwalchmei ym gelfwir i. Mab. i. 261.

§ 966. Some clauses will always be arranged according to the order in the two preceding rules, irrespective of emphasis ; such are,

1. Relative clauses ;

Edgar Brenin y Saeson, *yr hwnn a wnaethai Fonachlog* Bangor fawr. Brut y Tywysogion.

Yr honn ddull ag arfer o ganu a feddylwyd ag a ddechreuwyd gyntaf gann Enos ap Sedd, ap Addaf, y gwr cyntaf. Cyf. y Beirdd, 7.

2. Discriminative interrogatives made by *ai* and *onid*;

Ai mor a ddugyn ? Taliessin.

Ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti ? Mab. i. 248.

3. Nominal interrogatives made by *pw*y, &c.

Pwy wyt ti ? Mab. i. 31.

Pwy a gân serch i ferch fain ? Iorwerth Fynglwyd.

Pwy a ddifenwaist ti, ao a gblaist ? 2 Bren. xix. 22.

§ 967. For the sake of still greater emphasis and vivacity, a sentence may be thus arranged ; subject, predicate or object, verb ; or verb, predicate or object, subject ; or we may completely transpose the conventional order, and have predicate or object, subject, verb.

Dy wleddau rif dail oeddynt. Goronwy Owen.

Cyfolant honn adar gwyltion. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Y Benywiaid mi au cadwaf yn ddefaid mammogion. Iolo MSS. 181.

Gafal dyn Duw ai gweryd. Myv. Arch. i. 547.

§ 968. Thus, in accordance with the foregoing observations on position, the same sentence may be arranged in six different ways ;

1. Gwnaeth Gwenn imi a welch chwi. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.
2. Gwenn a wnaeth imi a welch chwi.
3. A welch chwi a wnaeth Gwenn imi.
4. Gwenn a welch chwi a wnaeth imi.
5. A welch chwi Gwenn a wnaeth imi.
6. Gwnaeth a welch chwi Gwenn i mi.

§ 969. In respect of the *goreiriau* or particles which may be in a clause, it will be subject to still greater changes in proportion. Two or more clauses even may be interwoven together, and thus alter the arrangement of the words in a great many ways ; as,

Mawr erysi a fydd ym Mhrydain, ac ni'm dorbi. Myrddin.

Mawr erysi ym Mhrydain a fydd, ac ni'm dorbi.

Mawr erysi, ac ni'm dorbi, a fydd ym Mhrydain.

Mawr erysi, ac ni'm dorbi, ym Mhrydain a fydd.

Ym Mhrydain y bydd mawr erysi, ac ni'm dorbi.

Ym Mhrydain, ac ni'm dorbi, y bydd mawr erysi.

Ym Mhrydain, ac ni'm dorbi, mawr erysi a fydd.

Ym Mhrydain, mawr erysi a fydd, ac ni'm dorbi.

Ym Mhrydain, mawr erysi, ac ni'm dorbi, a fydd.
 Bydd ym Mhrydain, ac ni'm dorbi, mawr erysi.
 Bydd ym Mhrydain mawr erysi, ac ni'm dorbi.
 Ac ni'm dorbi, bydd ym Mhrydain mawr erysi.
 Ac ni'm dorbi, mawr erysi a fydd ym Mhrydain.
 Ac ni'm dorbi, mawr erysi ym Mhrydain a fydd.
 Ac ni'm dorbi, ym Mhrydain y bydd mawr erysi.
 Ac ni'm dorbi, ym Mhrydain mawr erysi a fydd.
 Erysi mawr, &c. sixteen times again !

SECTION XCVII.

IMPERFECT SENTENCE.

§ 970. An imperfect sentence is that in which two or three names occur without a causative, as *gwr*, *gwraig*, *merch* ; or two or three verbs unaccompanied by a name, as *caru*, *canu*, *dysgu*.

§ 971. There are several pithy sayings or adages that in themselves come under this class, having their full meaning supplied only by the circumstances or statements to which they are applied. Such are

Dirwest ody ;	Lladd y gwirion yng nghysod yr euog ;
Ergyd ar gais ;	Gormod caws mewn maidd ;
Enw heb senw ;	Mal ysgubor offeiriad ;
Trannoeth wedi y dygwyl ;	Unpryd yr iâr yn yr ysgubor, (Myv. Arch. iii. ;)

and the like.

§ 972. Many have their copula or verb understood ; as,

Nid da rhy o ddim, (Myv. Arch. iii. 186. ;)

that is, nid da *yw* rhy o ddim.

Gwell arver nog athraw, (Myv. Arch. iii. 159. ;)

that is, gwell *ydyw* arver nog athraw.

Trydydd troed i hen ei fon, (Ib. 177. ;)

that is, trydydd troed i hen *yw* ei fon.

§ 973. There are two kinds of a perfect sentence ; a proper perfect sentence, and an improper perfect sentence.

SECTION XCVIII.

A PROPER PERFECT SENTENCE.

§ 974. That is a proper perfect sentence in which a name and a causative agree together both in number and person, so that a singular be not found with a plural, a present with an absent, a masculine with a feminine; and where a weak name accords with a strong name in number and gender; as,

Coronog Faban a gyfyd lynges. Iolo MSS. p. 268.

A'r geiriau hynny a ddaethant i glyw Caradawc ap Bran ai wyr. Iolo MSS. 185.

Cymmer y ffon wenn hon i'th law. Iolo MSS. 177.

Bronnau gwynion tlysau glwynion. Rh. G. ab Rhiccart.

SECTION XCIX.

AN IMPROPER PERFECT SENTENCE.

§ 975. If such be not the case, the sentence will be incorrect and faulty.

§ 976. But not altogether in regard to the verb, when it precedes its subject. When the latter is of the third person, whether singular or plural, the verb is usually put in the third person singular only; as,

A phan doeth Dauyd yno, y kyuodes yr holl seint yn y erbyn. Lives of Cam. British Saints, p. 112.

§ 977. But even in regard to this position of the verb, Edeyrn's rule holds good to some extent, and more so in mediæval writings than in those of the present day.

§ 978. For exceptions in respect of the Names, see section xxviii.

SECTION C.

SINGULAR NOUNS.

§ 979. Two singular names are equivalent to one plural name; as, *Rhys ac Einiawn a garant Wenlliant.*

§ 980. Sometimes, however, the verb which follows them is put in the singular number; as,

Moses ac Elias a ymddangosodd iddynt. St. Matth. xvii. 3.

§ 981. Strictly speaking, the verb should not be put in the singular, except when the assertion is true of the subjects taken severally.

Moses ac Elias a ymddangosodd=*Moses a ymddangosodd*, and *Elias a ymddangosodd*.

SECTION CI.

NOUNS OF MULTITUDE.

§ 982. One singular aggregate name is equivalent to two singular individual names ; as, *y bobl a folant Ddyddgu* ; and in like manner, one plural aggregate name is equivalent to two singular individual names.

§ 983. Sometimes, indeed, it is followed by a singular verb ; as,

Haid heb vodrydav hy bydd. Ll. Hen.

SECTION CII.

FORMS OF SPEECH.

§ 984. There are three forms or figures in a sentence, to distinguish a correct sentence, and to excuse an incorrect sentence.

§ 985. A figure is the colour or form of speech.

§ 986. One of these is called, “the bringing together of a part and the whole ;” and it takes place when a part and the whole occur in the sentence, having between them a weak name, significative of praise or reproach, which is due to the whole and not to the part ; as, *gwr gwynn ei law ; gwraig wenn ei throed* ; since the *llaw* (hand) is feminine, and *gwynn* (white) is masculine, the said white is not attributed to the hand, which is a part of the man, but to the man, who is the whole. In like manner, since the *troed* (foot) is masculine, and *gwynn* (white) is feminine, it is not predicated of the foot, but of the woman. Thus an excuse is made for the juxta-position of a masculine and a feminine in the same sentence.

§ 987. The other figure or form is called, “the denoting of praise or reproach.” It takes place when the whole is singular, and the parts plural, with a weak name between them, indicative of praise or disparagement, which likewise ought to belong to the whole

and not to the part; as, *gwr du ei lygaid; gwraig wenn ei dwylaw*. Such a form will excuse the existence of a singular and a plural in the same sentence.

§ 988. The third form is called, "seeking." It occurs when there are several persons together in the sentence; as in the following Englyn;—

Mi yw'r gwas gweddeiddglas glan,
A fydd o fodd ei galon,
Dwys gawdd bryd i ddisgwyl brýnn
O dawl is gwawl yn oes gwenn.

The first or second person calls upon the third; but the third cannot call upon either of the others. This form excuses the existence of present and absent in the sentence.

§ 989. The preceding are thus called forms.

§ 990. These are described in "Cyfrinach y Beirdd" as being the figures severally called *sylllepsis*, *synecdoche* and *evocatio*. See further in Prosody.

§ 991. Occasionally the preposition *o* intervenes between the adjective and the part or object, as *gwr teg o bryd*; and sometimes, by modern writers, the adjective is made to agree with the quality of the object described; as, *gwr o olwg hyfryd*.

§ 992. With the above may be compared the Greek idiom;

Πόδας ὠκῆς Ἀχιλλεύς=Achilles swift (as to) feet,
Καλὸς τῆν Ψυχῆν=beautiful (as to) soul;

which has been copied also by the Latins;

Os humerosque Deo similia.

§ 993. Having in this part of our syntax followed the arrangement laid down by Edeyrn, we now purpose to recommence, and to proceed with more system, according to the order indicated in the division which treats of the "Parts of Speech."

SECTION CIII.

STRONG NAMES.

§ 994. The various relations and connections of one thing to another are expressed, in Cymraeg, by the collocation of substantives: in the first place without any other aid; then, with the addition of a definite article; and lastly, with prepositions in addition to both the other forms.

§ 995. The substantives undergo no changes, or inflections, to denote such relations; therefore, the Cymric language is a stranger to those declensions which occur in many others under the name of cases.

§ 996. Instead of these, however, the initials of the words undergo certain changes, according to their position in a sentence.

§ 997. The general law on the subject is, that the more important word retains its radical form, which is indicative of strength; while that which is subordinate has its initial softened. The principle of euphony, also, has much to do with these mutations.

§ 998. To illustrate this law we will take the sentence,

Duw a rydd i ddedwydd dda. G. ap D. ap Tudur.

The first word in the sentence, which is here the subject, being the most emphatic, retains its radical form; whilst the verb and the object, inasmuch as they occupy subordinate positions, (see § 958,) have both their initials softened. Should the verb, however, be deemed the most important word, the sentence will be thus written,

Rhydd Duw i ddedwydd dda;

where *rhydd* appears in its original form. But if stress is to be laid on the object, *dda* will take the precedence, and the whole clause will assume this form,

Da a rydd Duw i ddedwydd.

§ 999. It is necessary to add that the effects of this law become less apparent in proportion to the antiquity of our records. See § 153, &c.

§ 1000. The simply *indefinite substantive*, or that which stands alone, without reference to any other object, is expressed in its radical form, as Pen, *head, a head.*

§ 1001. A *definite substantive*, without connection, is preceded by the article *y* (ir) when it has a consonant initial, and *yr* (ir) when it has a vowel; and may precede any word except another substantive. If it be of the masculine gender its initial is unchanged, as *y dyn*; but if it be of the feminine gender it assumes the soft form, as *y ddynes*, though not in the plural, which retains its radical form, *y dynesau*. Our oldest words are not thus affected; thus, *irdigatma*, (Gl. Area.)

§ 1002. By the collocation of two indefinite substantives is expressed the simple state of property or possession, in which the former stands to the latter; as *sail tŷ*, (a, the,) foundation of a house. Several nouns may be put together in this manner; as, *sail tŷ mab brenhin Lloegr*, the foundation of the house of the son of the king of England. The word expressive of possession is placed first, as being the emphatic subject of discourse.

§ 1003. Except when the two words coalesce, in which case the possessive is put first; as,

Cu adar-dy coed ir-deg. Myv. Arch. iii. 188.

Ni ddylly hundy hendwyll. T. Penllyn.

§ 1004. Names of parishes are an exception; such as Llanfair, Llangynhafal, Llanbedr. These ought to be resolved into their components, and written Llan fair, &c. the initial of the possessive being softened according to § 1007.

§ 1005. The article can never be used with the former of the two nouns. The whole will be definite or indefinite, according as the latter noun is so or not. Thus, for instance, when we render into Welsh, "the top of the mountain," the presence of the article with the whole "the mountain" is considered sufficient to make it unnecessary with a part "the top," and we accordingly say *Pen y mynydd*, and not *y pen y mynydd*. And in cases where the second noun is unaccompanied by an article, but is from the nature of the discourse definite, the former noun will still reject it; thus, *tŷ fy nhad*.

§ 1006. The initials of both retain their radical form, except when the article or pronoun requires a change in that of the latter.

§ 1007. Nevertheless, after *teyrnas*, *templ*, *tŷ*, *eglwys*, &c., the word *Duw*, generally, but not necessarily, takes the soft sound. So also do several proper names.

A mwy no hynny i eglwys Fangor. Hanes G. ab Cynan.

I dy Dduw o'i dy ydd af. Apud Dr. Davies.

Nai ap brawd yw hwn i'r pren

A fuasai yn llaw Foesen. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1008. In some instances, the latter of two substantives is equivalent to an adjective, and is dealt with accordingly; that is, if the first be masculine, the other retains the radical; but if it be feminine, and of the singular number, the second noun takes the soft sound. If definite, also, the article precedes the entire phrase. This adjectival character especially belongs to the possessive when it denotes age, price, material, occupation, and habitation.

§ 1009. Age, or size; as *bachgen dwyflwydd*, *merch ddwyflwydd*, *y gwr canmlwydd*, *y wraig bedwar ugain*;

Mab teirblwyd. Mab. iii. 32.

Ynis teireru. Lib. Land. 149.

§ 1010. Price; as *ceffyl punt*, *menig swllt*, *y dalaith ddeg-punt*.

Pam i rhoed y pymwyr hen

Wrth holl allu 'n werth Ullen? R. ap Rhys Brydydd.

§ 1011. Material; as *tŷ coed*, *ysgubor gerryg*, *y noe bres*.

Bwyall arian a bioedd. Ll. M. y Pantri.

§ 1012. Occupation; as *saer coed*, *saer maen*, *gof aur*, *gwr march*, *y gwyr traed*, *teiliwr brethyn*, *gwr gwobr* a *gwerth*.

Cyd bwyf *gwr gweryd*, *bwyf gwr gwared*. Ll. Faridd.

§ 1013. Habitation or place; as *gwyr Mowddwy*, *gwragedd Llundain*, *esgidiau Amwythig*, *cyllyll Caerangon*. Under this rule may

be classed also those titles or cognomens which are borrowed from localities; as Owain Gwynedd, Lewys Glyn Cothi, Lewis Mon.

Iarll Penfro evo rydd vach. L. G. Cothi.

Merch hael o Ruffydd Maelawr. Ib.

§ 1014. Not unfrequently the infinitive mood of a verb is treated as a possessive noun; as *amser hau*, *amser medsi*;

Dirgelvan garu. Deio Maelienydd.

Yn awr y mae amser canu gyda ni. Iolo MSS. 156.

§ 1015. If two substantives come together, relating to the same person or thing, the latter is said to be in apposition to the former and generally retains the radical sound of its initial letter; as,

Kynnifyeid bleinyeid bleidyen arnes cad. Ll. P. Moch.

§ 1016. Occasionally, however, the initial is softened; as,

Balch y beirdd bobl heirdd hardded Hu ysgwr. Madawg Dwygraig.

§ 1017. If an article or a possessive pronoun intervene, the apposition word will, of course, be governed by it; as, *Buddug y frenhines*, *Arthur fy nhad*.

§ 1018. If one be a proper, and the other a common noun, they may stand in one of the following three positions;

Y Cawr Idris

Idris y Cawr

Idris Gawr.

In the last phrase, *Gawr* has its initial softened, inasmuch as the word is an attributive of *Idris*, and therefore a subordinate term.

Adda Fardd a'i ddau Verddin,

Iddo wyv heno vy hun. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1019. The relations of substantives, both definite and indefinite, are, in the next place, expressed by prepositions;

Indefinite.	Mutation.	Definite.
I dŷ	s.	I y tŷ, i'r tŷ
At dŷ	s.	At y tŷ
O dŷ	s.	O y tŷ, o'r tŷ
Tua thŷ	a.	Tua y tŷ, tua'r tŷ
Am dŷ	s.	Am y tŷ
Er tŷ	r.	Er y tŷ
Yn nhŷ	n.	Yn y tŷ
Wrth dŷ	s.	Wrth y tŷ
Ar dŷ	s.	Ar y tŷ
Tan dŷ	s.	Tan y tŷ
Is tŷ	r.	Is y tŷ
Uwch tŷ	r.	Uwch y tŷ
Trwy dŷ	s.	Trwy y tŷ
Tros dŷ	s.	Tros y tŷ
Mewn tŷ	r.	Mewn y tŷ

Ieuangc mewn swydd. Myv. Arch. iii. 127.

Gwr heb gelyddyd. Ib.

O'r ddaear y cnawd. Ib. p. 132.

§ 1020. Both possession and apposition may be expressed, also, by means of a preposition ; thus,

1. Possession ; by the preposition *i*, as *car i mi*, *bachgen i Hywel*, *gwr i Dduw*.

Psalm i Asaph=*Psalm Asaph*. Title of *Psalm lxxv*.

Ae gwr y arthur wyt ti heb ef=*gwr arthur*. *Mab. i. 244*.

By the preposition *rhag* ; as *ofn rhag y gelyn*=*ofn y gelyn*.

By the preposition *o* ; as *ty o goed*, *ty o faen*.

Gwain o goed ac yn gadarn=*gwain goed*. *Apud Dr. Davies*.

2. Apposition ; by the preposition *o* ; as

Gwr o saer a gerais i=*gwr, saer*. *Apud Dr. Davies*.

This form is used when the one noun describes the character, occupation, &c. of the other ; and when one of them may be converted into an adjective, or, in fact, frequently omitted.

Gwr o brophwyd=*gwr prophwydol*=*prophwyd*.

By the preposition *gan* ; as *y sant gan Bedr*, *y milwr gan Arthur*.

Yr alarch gan Syr William=*yr alarch, Syr William*. *Apud Dr. Davies*.

The definite article is always placed before the first noun when this idiom is adopted.

By the preposition *yn* ; as,

Gweirwr yn dorwr dewrwyeh=*Gweirwr, torrwr*. *T. Sion Lewys*.

SECTION CIV.

WEAK NAMES.

§ 1021. The agreement of weak names with strong names in gender and number, is partial. See on this subject section xxviii.

§ 1022. The weak name, or adjective, as being, in accordance with its appellation, of minor importance, usually follows the strong name, or substantive ; thus,

Dwyllaw gwynion

Bysedd meinion

Ymmod luan

Ar we sidan. *Rhys G. ab Rhiccert*.

§ 1023. If, however, the adjective be emphatic, it will stand first, and in that case the substantive, becoming subordinate, will yield to it ; as

Coronog Faban a gaiff maver urddas. *Iolo MSS. 267*.

§ 1024. Even in our oldest documents this position is recognised ; thus,

A mein funion ; a hir etem ; creaticaul plant ; dir arpeteticion ceintiru. *Oxford Glosses*.

§ 1025. But an adjective cannot well precede a substantive if at all modified by an adverb ; in this case it generally follows it ; as, *dyn go dda*.

§ 1026. Several adjectives may come together, either before or after the substantive to which they belong ; or one may precede and another follow it, according to the writer's taste.

Erbyn fy *marwawl ddiweddwyl* dydd. Ll. Goch ab M. Hen.

Talcen *gwastadloyw hoyw hardd kyfryd*. R. G. ab Rhiccort.

§ 1027. More singular substantives than one will require a plural adjective ; thus, *gwr a gwraig mwynion*.

§ 1028. Adjectives, in a state of comparison, are so adapted that they may be optionally made to precede or to follow the substantive ; as,

Gorau ympryd ympryd Wener. Myv. Arch. iii. 158.

Gwan y gormes mwyaŷ gerbron y glewder lleiaŷ. Adage.

Ymadrawd mor warthaedic a hwnnw. Mab. i. 2.

Wrth glywed dahed tyghed dewi. G. Brycheiniog.

§ 1029. An adjective, joined to a substantive to form a compound, generally takes the precedence ;

Trasawl cariadawl croydwf trddail. Rhyb G. ab Rhicoert.

§ 1030. Nevertheless, there are several exceptions ;

Coedfron blagurlawn dawn dadeni. Rh. ab G. Rhiccort.

A chiw bronfraith buriaith beraidd. Ib.

A moes er mair gair gobeithwŷch. Ib.

§ 1031. When a common adjective in the positive state precedes, the substantive, whether singular or plural, masculine or feminine, has its initial changed into the soft sound ; as,

Coronog Faban medd Taliesin. Iolo MSS. 271.

Gwyrddion defyll. Rh. G. ab Rhiccort.

§ 1032. But if an adjective of the equal or comparative degree precede, the substantive retains its radical form ; as,

A thecced llun meingorph gwenfun

A thecced gwedd gwawr rhanedd. Rh. G. ab Rhiccort.

Teccach meinwar na ffrw toniar. Ib.

Gwynnach gwenfron hoen ewyndon. Ib.

§ 1033. Should the definite article precede the comparative, the following noun may be softened ; as, *y dlysach ferch*.

But if the article goes before the substantive, it governs it as usual ; as, *tlysach y ferch* ; *dewrach y gwr*.

Gwell y wialen a blygo no'r hon a doru. Adage.

Here, however, the adjective is a predicate ; the verb *yw* being understood in connection with the sentence.

§ 1034. Adjectives of the superlative degree, when they qualify indefinite words, generally govern the radical sound ; as,

A thecca merch dan haul ydoedd. Iolo MSS. 163.

Cadarnav gwr yw Davydd. L. G. Cothi.

Digriva gwrda o'r gwyr

Yw i vyd val hen Vedwyr. Ib.

§ 1036. When they are preceded by the article, they govern the soft sound ; as, *y mwynaf ŵer* ; *y fwynaf ferch*.

§ 1036. Adjectives of the equal, comparative, and superlative degrees have no plurals.

§ 1037. When the adjective follows a masculine substantive, it retains the radical ; when it follows a feminine substantive, singular, it is changed into the soft sound, whether the phrase be definite or not ; as,

Y gwr teg, a'r gweywyr tân. L. G. Cothi.

Pren per, a philer, a pharch. Ib.

Ni ddov vyth o'i neuadd ŵalch. Ib.

This softer modulation of the voice in connection with words of the feminine gender, would seem to refer to the idea of subordination which they naturally imply ; unless, indeed, it may be regarded as a compliment to the fair sex.

§ 1038. *Pobl* governs the soft sound ;

Gado'r moch a'r bobl feddwon. Vicar Prichard.

§ 1039. When the adjective follows a plural substantive, masculine or feminine, it retains the radical form ; as,

Glyn Ebron i'r dynion da. L. G. Cothi.

Brenau per, barnau parod. Ib.

§ 1040. When it follows a proper substantive of either gender, as an epithet or agnomen, its initial consonant assumes the soft form ; as,

Owain Fyohan vy iechyd. L. G. Cothi.

Lan wledd Elen Lueddawg. Ib.

This sign of subordination is owing to the attributive character of the adjective.

§ 1041. In the same way, when the substantive is not a proper name, and the adjective does not add any thing to the description of it, but only defines it in point of quantity, number, &c., it will have its initial softened ; as, *bwyd ddigon, da lawer, defaid rai*.

Cybydd a leinw ei gist ag aur ddigon. Myv. Arch. iii. 94.

Ond byth, ni roddwn hyder ddigon. Canwyll y Cymry, 276.

Such words may be regarded also as partaking more of the character of a substantive than of an adjective, and to have their initials softened on the same principle as *gawr* in § 1018. To them may be added *enllyn beth, gwyr fagad*, which are more especially substantives.

§ 1042. In Cymraeg, as well as in Hebrew, an adjectival idea is expressed periphrastically, by means of a preposition and a substantive.

Fy etifeddiaeth sydd i mi megis llew yn y coed=coediog. Jer. xii. 8.

Y baedd o'r coed a'i turia=coediog. Pa. lxxx. 13.

Traethaf ddampgion o'r cynfyd=cynfydawl. Pa. lxxviii. 2.

§ 1043. Sometimes an adverb is used adjectively ; as,

Rhwng yr awyr fry
Ar ddaear obry. D. Ddu o Hiraddug.

The Greeks also have this idiom ;

Τῶν πάλαι ἀμαρτιῶν αὐτοῦ. Mark vi. 56.

And the Latins ;

Neque enim ignari sumus ante malorum. Æn. i.

§ 1044. An adjective of the equal degree, when it refers to any standard of equality in particular, is generally preceded by *mor*, *cun* or *cyn*, and followed by a, ag, (ac)=*quam*, *tam*, or *æque*, *ac*, in Latin.

Mor ddiles á halen i'r iar. Adage.

C'an wyned a'r eira. Ib.

Bod dynion cyn ynfyted ag addoli anifeiliaid. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1045. When it refers to a result or consequence, the subjoined clause is introduced by *mal ag*, *fal ag*, *fel ag*, or simply *mal*, *fal*, *fel*, or *ag*.

Pa hurtyn cyn ynfyted ag y dysgwyliai beth mor ddichlyn brydferth oddi wrth ddamwain ? Ed. Samuel.

Cyn is sometimes, in one of its various forms, prefixed to the adjective ;

Niuer kyhardet a hwnnw. Mab. i. 16.

Achyntristet oedynt ac agheu. Ib. i. 36.

§ 1046. *Er* is sometimes answered by *etto*, in the second clause ; as, *Er* maint, *er* cryfed, ac *er* dichlyned yw'r mawr hwn, *etto* mae yn yr ystryd fach acw uu sy fwy nag yntau. Y Bardd Cwag.

§ 1047. The other particles which sometimes precede the equal, *rhag*, *gan*, *o*, *och*, are not answered by any particular word in another limb of the sentence ;

Rhag glaned yw'r calonau. Apud Dr. Davies.

Och oered i'w chwiorydd. Ib.

Morfran rhag ei hacced. Myv. ii. 18.

Cas yw pechawd gan Dduw *er* bychaned y bo. G. Fardd Glas.

Sandde gan ei laned ai decced ni chododd neb law yn ei erbyn. Myv. ii. 18

Efa elwid Ithel ddu gan ddued ei wallt a'i farf. Iolo MSS. 15.

§ 1048. All the preceding particles govern the soft sound, except *er*, which governs the radical. When the adjective is put absolutely, its initial assumes the soft form ; as,

Duw cadw Rys decced ei rodd. D. Nanmor.

§ 1049. The comparative degree is construed with *no*, *noc*, or *na*, *nag*.

Gwell eniwed, ffordfed ffug,

Ná sorri 'n ddyful sarrug. D. ab Gwilym.

Hwy elod no golud. Myv. Arch. iii. 162.

Trech gwlad noc Arglwydd. Ib. p. 177.

§ 1050. The superlative is followed by *o*; as,

Gorau o'r brethyn y cochav. Myv. Arch. iii. 157.

§ 1051. Proportionate equality is expressed by two superlatives, the particle *po*, (=L. *quo*), or *pa* preceding the former; as,

Po ddyrnaf y mor, diogelaf vydd i'r llong. Myv. Arch. iii. 157.

Pa gyvyngav gan ddyn ehangav gan Dduw. Ib. p. 57.

§ 1052. The words *yn y byd*, *byth*, *oll*, or *i gyd*, are often placed after the latter superlative, to strengthen the assertion.

Pa ddyrnaf yr avon lleiaf oll ei thrwst. Myv. Arch. iii. 58.

Pa decav y chware goreu vyth ei adael. Ib. 59.

Pa iawnav y gwaith iawnav i gyd y diwedd. Ib.

§ 1053. The two clauses are frequently inverted, especially when there is an ellipsis of one or of the two verbs; as, *Goreu po gyntaf.*

§ 1054. When a progressive comparative is formed by the repetition of the ordinary or simple comparative, the latter assumes the soft sound, whether the phrase be compound or not; as,

*Gwellhoell Duw o'i addoli,
Gwaethnaeth y diawl o'i berohi.* Cattwg Ddoeth.

The Hebrews have a similar idiom, *יותר יותר*; also the Latins, *minus et minus*, Horace Ep. i. 17. 51. *procul et procul*, Ep. ii. 2. 199.

§ 1055. Adjectives are frequently compounded with substantives, and occupy sometimes the first, sometimes the last position.

§ 1056. When the adjective is put first, it governs the soft sound; as,

Bun deg dawelddawn ysgawn wsgi.

§ 1057. When it occupies the last position, it assumes either the radical or the soft sound;

*Dywet ti, pam nad wyd da?
Dy ddewr-dad di oedd wrda.* Gutto'r Glyn.

Celliog bronfraith. Rh. Goch ab Rhiccert.

When the substantive ends, and the adjective begins, with *b*, *d*, or *g*, those letters are hardened; as,

Ai chusanu Bun lygeittu. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

§ 1058. When a compound is made of two adjectives, the latter assumes the soft form; as,

*A mân ddannedd a gwedd hoywgoeth
Amlwg ymhenn gwenn gymhenddoeth.* Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

§ 1069. This rule, however, has its exceptions ; as,

Modd llæs hirlæs Iarlles odliw. Ib.

SECTION CV.

NUMERALS.

§ 1060. Cardinals have no distinction of gender, except *dau*, *tri*, and *pedhoar*, which have *dwyl*, *tair*, and *pedair*, for the feminine ;

Athorri y *deu* baladyr a orugant. Mab. i. 18.

Di *dwi* scuid ir alt. Lib. Land. 216.

Tri chantref. Mab. iii. 36.

Vn or *teir* gwyl arbennic. Ib. ii. 6.

Pedguar hanther scribl. Ox. Gl.

Un or *pedeyr* kolouen. Laws, i. 7. 21.

The Cornish and Armoric dialects are similar to the Cymraeg in this respect.

§ 1061. Cardinals have no plural number, except when they are used substantively, as *degau*, *ugeiniau*, *cannoedd*.

Y sawl *vilioed*. Mab. i. 279.

§ 1062. Being, except *un*, competent to denote plurality in themselves, the substantives which accompany them are generally of the singular number, as above.

§ 1063. The exceptions, however, are numerous, especially when the numeral and its substantive coalesce so as to form but one word.

Tri dieu. Laws, ii. 11. 9.

Pedwar meirch aphedwar arueu. Mab. ii. 38.

Seithmeib soed idaw. Ib. i. 285.

Er nad oedd dim i'm *trimeirch*

Ni bu'n fyw i gyfryw geirch. Bedo Ph. Bach.

§ 1064. Not that all such compounds assume the same form, for many still retain their singular character ;

Dyn fel y *nawwyn* uniawn. Gutto'r Glyn.

Mab *chwelwyd*. Mab. iii. 32.

§ 1065. Cardinals precede their substantives, which may follow either immediately, or with the intervention of the preposition *o*. When *o* is introduced, the noun is invariably put in the plural number ; as,

A thalu y bu, cyn y bedd,

Drugain a dwy o *wragod*, (L. Glyn Cothi ;)

q. d. from among women.

§ 1066. *Mil*, *myrdd*, and their compounds, are always followed by the preposition *o* ; as,

Ti awely mil o annieileit gwyllt yn pori. Mab. i. 6.

O achaws ynteu gwneuthur y gaer o vryd o wyr y gelwit kaer vyrdin. Mab. iii. 272.

§ 1067. When a noun is joined to a periphrastic numeral, it usually takes its place immediately after the first mentioned numeral ; as,

Deudec breinia ar hugeint. Mab. iii. 263.

§ 1068. See an exception under § 1065.

§ 1069. Cardinals govern initials in a very irregular manner, more by euphony than according to any grammatical principle.

§ 1070. In general, they are followed by the radical sound ; as,

Un ceiliog o Nicolas. L. Glyn Cothi.

Pedair gwragedd bucheddol. Ib.

§ 1071. But *un* feminine governs the soft ;

Yr un serch orau yn vyw. L. G. Cothi.

Un feminine before *ll* and *rh*, however, generally governs the radical ; as,

Unllaw aur o Ieuan Llwyd. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1072. *Dau* and *dwy* govern the soft sound ;

I'w dau gorph gras Duw a gaid. L. Glyn Cothi.

A dwy wal yw eu dwy lya. Ib.

§ 1073. *Tri* and *chwe'* govern the aspirate of the first class, and the radical of the second and third ;

Tripheth ; tri chantref. Mab. iii. 33, 36.

Tri man, tair lluman, tri llu. L. G. Cothi.

A chwe thorth o vara cann. Ib. i. 251.

§ 1074. The words *blynedd*, *blwydd*, and *diwrnod*, often take the nasal sound after several of the numerals ;

Seith mlyned. Mab. ii. 198.

Nau niau. Laws, ii. 11. 7.

Diluw caem, mewn adail cau,

A ddyg Noe ddeugain niau. L. Glyn Cothi.

§ 1075. The mutations, when numerals are put in composition with substantives, are likewise irregular ; as,

Dyn fel y nawayn uniawn=naw dyn. Gutto'r Glyn.

§ 1076. A singular noun, preceded by a numeral, is equivalent to a plural, and is followed by a plural verb ; as,

Trinant a redant o wirodydd. L. G. Cothi.

Pedwar clo ynt, pedwar cloedd. Ib.

§ 1077. Sometimes the verb is put in the singular number ; as,

Dau Frenin a fu gynt yn Ynys Prydain. Iolo MSS. 193.

Trimeib yw'r tyrau ymwan. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1078. When a numeral is followed by a substantive and an adjective, the adjective will be singular ; as,

Can' trev eaur, can tyrva vaoh. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1079. The demonstratives *hwnn, hwnno, &c.* are put in the plural ; as,

Beth a wnaethum i ti, pan darewaist fi y tair gwaith hyn? Num. xxii. 28.

§ 1080. The adjective pronoun *arall* is sometimes put in the singular, and sometimes in the plural ; thus, *y ddau ddyn arall* ; *y saith niwr-nod ereill*.

§ 1081. Ordinals have no distinction of gender, except *trydydd* and *pedwerydd*, which have *trydedd* and *pedwaredd* in the feminine ; as,

Ar trydyd dyd of a glywei dyrnawt mawr. Mab. i. 279.

Ar dryded weith y kyffelyb dyrnawt atrewis. Ib. 247.

Ar pedweryd dyd arofun awnaeth peredur y ymdeith. Ib. 238.

Petguared part. Oxf. Glos.

§ 1082. Ordinals, except *cyntaf*, precede their nouns ; and the nouns, if masculine, retain the radical ; if feminine, they are changed into the soft sound ; as,

*Ev a gyrchodd yn uvydd
Y tir y deugeinved dydd.* L. G. Cothi.

Ar dryded weith y kyffelyb dyrnawt atrewis. Mab. i. 247.

Ar vn ryw ymadrawd gantud ac a daethoed gan y marchawc kyntaf. Ib. 244.

§ 1083. *Ail*, however, is followed by the soft sound, even when the noun is masculine ; as,

A'r ail fann o'r cwpl cyntaf yn unodli a'r ail fann o'r ail gwpl. Cyf. y Beirdd.

§ 1084. But not always ; thus,

Yr ail modd yw gwneuthur y rhann gyntaf o'r ail fann yn groesgynganedd a'r gair toddaid. Cyf. y Beirdd.

§ 1085. The poets occasionally reverse the order of position ; as,

Ar tradoeth gyfod y pryd trydydd. Ll. Goch.

SECTION CVI.

VERBS.

§ 1086. As to the general agreement of verbs with nouns, see section xlix.

§ 1087. When several verbs are coupled together, and the subject of the first is the subject of all the others, though the first verb be singular with a plural subject, the subject being known, all the other verbs will be plural; as,

Yn yr un flwyddyn y troes Pendefigion Môn yn erbyn eu Tywysog cyflawn, as a ddodasant eu hunain yn nawdd Huw Iarll Caerllion ac arglwydd Aberleiniawc. Brut y Tywysogion.

§ 1088. When the subject is a pronoun, whether preceding or following the verb, the verb will agree with it in number and person; as,

Ev a dâl crystal ag wyth. L. G. Cothi.

Myfi a rannas y bwyt ar ll y n n. ab. i. 251.

Aphan welas ef y niver hwnnw. Ib. i. 247.

Ar bore trannoeth wynt aglywynt twryf anveitrawl. Ib. i. 84.

§ 1089. When pronouns of different persons, or pronouns and substantives, are coupled together by copulative conjunctions, the verb, if following, will be in the plural number, and refer to the nominative of the most worthy person. *Myfi a thydi a awn. Tydi ac efe a euch.*

1090. If the verb precede its subject, it will be made to agree in number and person with the one next to it; as, *Aethym i a thydi. Aethost ti ac efe. Aethom ni a chwi.*

§ 1091. Sometimes, however, the third person singular is used, though the pronouns be of other persons; as,

Ni fydd pellach ynghyd tydi a mi. Iolo MSS. 162.

§ 1092. When antithesis or opposition is implied in the subject, the verb, following it, is put in the third person singular, for all numbers and persons; as, *Ai ti ynte dy frawd a aeth ?=yw yr hwn a aeth.*

Mi a eirch yt y march hwn=yw yr hwn a eirch. Ienan Tew.

Minneu a'm gwawd tafawd da

Am ei escair a'i mysga=yw yr hwn a'i mysga. Apud Dr. Davies.

Di a gynnull yn deg uniawn=yw'r hwn a gynnull. G. Glynn.

§ 1093. Similarly, words connected by disjunctive conjunctions are followed by the third person singular of the verb, for all numbers and persons; as, *Naill ai tydi ai myfi a ddynododd hyn. See § 988.*

§ 1094. The subject of a verb may be a noun, a verb, a sentence, or even an adverbial proposition; thus,

Gan bwyll a gyrhaedd ymhell. Adage.

§ 1095. When the subject occupies the first place in the clause, or immediately follows its verb, it retains the radical form ; as,

Duw cadarn a farn pob iawn. Iolo MSS 256.

Ni chwag Duw pan ry wared. Ib. 255.

§ 1096. When it follows the verb, and is separated from it by an adverb, or a phrase, its initial letter is changed into the soft sound ; as, *Daeth yno ddynion dewr.*

§ 1097. *Mi, ti,* and their compounds, take the soft sound ; as,

Hynny a wnaf fi yn llawen heb y Llygoden. Iolo MSS. 165.

Awely di y medyant ysyd ymi? Mab. i. 7.

Nyth ellyngir di y mewn. Ib. ii. 202.

Ha vnben heb y ronabwy paystyr yth elwir dithen velly? Ib. ii. 375.

§ 1098. Some tenses of the verb *bod*, and especially *oes*, when preceded by a negative adverb, are occasionally followed by their subject in the soft sound ; as,

Nid oes wyledd rhag anverthedd. Myv. iii. 171.

§ 1099. A finite verb governs its object in the soft ; an infinitive verb governs its object in the radical sound ; as,

Erlynais ferch ar las lannerch. Rh. Goch ab Rhiccert.

Torri calon a fu ffyddlon. Ib.

§ 1100. But when the infinitive is separated from its object by an adverb or a phrase, its initial is changed into the soft sound ; as,

Tynnu ymaith bechodau'r byd. St. John i. 29.

§ 1101. The pronoun *ti*, and its compounds, are softened after the infinitive ; as,

Ti a wyddost fy mod i yn dy garu Di. St. John xxi. 17.

§ 1102. An infinitive verb, heading a transitive clause, that is, a sentence which stands in apposition to a subject or an object, expressed or understood, in the principal sentence, (= *that* with a finite verb,) is put in the soft sound, whether the verb on which it depends be finite or infinite.

Gan fod Plato yn ysgrifenu ddarfod adfywiocau un Eris o Armenia. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1103. There are exceptions to this rule, in which the radical is retained ; as,

Elen hevyd a weles

Marw ei llew, yn drwm er ei lles. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1104. The verb *bod*, however, when it occupies that position, either retains the radical, or assumes the soft form ; as,

Dywedut aorugum inneu bot ynda gennyfi kaffel aymdaianei ami. Mab. i. 5.

Traddododd yr Aiphthaid hefyd fod dyn yn y dechreuad yn byw yn ddysyml ac yn ddiniwaid. Ed. Samuel.

Mae Maimonides yn mynegu fod Hanes Adda ac Efa a'r pren gwaharddedig, a'r sarff ym mblith yr Indiaid eilunaddolgar yn ei amser ef. Ib.

§ 1105. The object, like the subject of a verb, may be any or several parts of speech.

§ 1106. If the object, following the verb, be separated from it by an intervenient word or phrase, it will be put in the soft sound ; as,

Gorug Hywel fab Cadell

Hynaf Rodri Ystafell

Ddosparth Brawd a defawd gwell. Iolo MSS. 264.

§ 1107. There are several exceptions, in which the radical is retained ; as,

Duw a wnaeth ar draeth dirus

Dyn a phob peth daionus. S. Tudur.

This is more especially the case when the object is far removed from the verb.

§ 1108. If a word, which of its own nature requires another form, comes between the object and the verb, the object will take that form which this word requires ; as,

Ti a ennillaiſt *fy* mhen eber erthyl. Iolo MSS. 165.

Pawb a geisiant *y* gwir. Ib. 164.

§ 1109. The object is sometimes put absolutely at the beginning of the clause, a corresponding personal pronoun following the verb. This is done when particular attention is called.

Y Recordiwyd, tefiwch *hwy* yr awron i *fyg* y Maelwyr. Bardd Cwag.

§ 1110. Nouns denoting duration and point of time, distance of place, and measure, are put absolutely. If they stand foremost in the sentence, they usually retain their radical form ; but if they follow the verb, their initial consonant is changed into the soft ; as,

Mi a fum *dri* chynod yn ngharchar arianrod. Mab. iii. 339.

Diu llun hyt benn clun gwaetlun gwelet. Gododin.

Llawer dyd yth rygerais. Mab. ii. 218.

SECTION CVII.

AUXILIARY AFFIRMATIVE PARTICLES.

§ 1111. *A* is used before the verb, when the subject or object of the verb precedes, and governs the soft sound ; as,

Duw a *ddi*chon roi gwared. Maer Glas.

Ei nyth *fry* a wnaeth y fran. Apud Dr. Davies.

§ 1112. *Sydd* never takes *a* before it ;

Gwybod oll a fu, *y* sydd, ac a fydd. Iolo MSS. 203.

The reason seems to be, that the *y* generally placed before it is in fact but the verb *ys*, and not a particle at all. The proper way of writing the expression would be, *a y sydd* or *a'r sydd*.

§ 1113. *Y*, *yr*, *yd* and *ydd*, are used when the subject and object, or predicate, follow the verb ; but some other part of the sentence precedes it ; as,

O gywirdeb *y* galon *y* dywaid *y* gwirion. Myv. Arch. iii. 74.

Ar ol cymmylau

Y'r a'r wybren yn olau. Ib. iii. 148.

Bas dwfr men *yd* lefeir. Myv. Arch. i. 551.

A gasgler ar varch Malen tan ei dor *ydd* âa. Ib. iii. 147.

The subject of some of the above verbs is a pronoun understood ; as is the case also in such expressions as

Car cywir yn yr ing *y* gwelir = gwelir ef. Myv. Arch. iii. 150.

Y is used before a consonant, and followed by the radical ; *yr* and *ydd* are put before vowels. *Yd* may go before a vowel or a consonant ; in the latter case it governs the soft sound.

§ 1114. Some portions of the verb substantive do not require any words to precede ; thus,

Y mae ar fy mwa i

Ei liw iawn a'i oleuni. L. G. Cothi.

Ydd oedd Twm ab Ifan ab Rhys yn wr duwiol a da iawn. Iolo MSS. 203.

Mae never has *a* before it.

§ 1115. Sometimes these particles are omitted altogether, especially before the verb substantive *bod* ; as,

Lunet wyfi llawuorwyn iarllles *y* ffynnawn. Mab. i. 31.

Llawenach uuwyt *y* nos honno nor nos gynt. Ib. 10.

*Y*ntau *roes* ym, nid trwy sor,

Ei thrigwerth a pheth rhagor. L. G. Cothi.

*Y*no *cevais* gan' cyvarch,

*Y*no *y* bu i ni *y* barch. Ib.

§ 1116. In the Dimetian dialect, as before observed, *y* is not unfrequently put for *a*.

Ni thal dim *y* vyddin *y* llywio pob dyn drwyddo ei hun. Myv. Arch. iii. 31.

§ 1117. Sometimes, also, *a* is put for *y* ; as,

Ac *yr* hyn *a* dywawd Elphin yn *y* modd yma. Mab. iii. 333.

Ir neb *a* dangoses ef. Ib.

§ 1118. The particle *a* prevails not only over the initial vowel of an introductory pronoun, but also over a vowel preposition ; as,

Dolur gormodd *a*'m doddyw = *a* i'm doddyw

Ceiniau *a*'m rhoddes, lles ni'm llysir = *a* i'm rhoddes. Ll. B. Hođnant.

Car *a*'m oedd, ni'm oes = *a* i'm oedd. G. ab Meilir.

SECTION CVIII.

INTRODUCTORY PRONOUNS.

1119. These are possessive pronouns which, being set before verbs, sometimes serve as harbingers, indicating that another pronoun is to follow; and sometimes they reflect on a word that has gone before in the sentence. In some places they are apparently redundant; but when they are employed in a certain case before the infinitive mood, they perform an important office, namely, that of converting active verbs and active participles into passive.

§ 1120. These pronouns, when placed before verbs, generally suffer an elision according to the orthography of the present day, and are thus written;

	Sing.		Plur.
1.	'm	for ym	'n for ein
2.	'th	... yth	'ch ... eich
3.	'i (or 'w, as i'w,)	... ei.	'u (or 'w, as i'w) ... eu.

§ 1121. The ancients employed no apostrophes.

§ 1122. When the subject precedes an inflected verb, having a personal pronoun for its object, a corresponding possessive is placed immediately before the verb, indicating that a personal pronoun is to follow; as,

Athydi amgwely *i*. Mab. i. 14.

Un ohonawch chwi am kymero *i*. Ib. i. 21.

Myn y gwr angwnaeth ni ar y delw honn. Ib. ii. 242.

Myn vygret minneu ath garaf *di*. Ib. i. 268.

Awydost ti arglwyd pwy *ae* lladawd *ef*? Ib. i. 291.

Dan un, hollsaint nev oll *a'i* nertha *ev*. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1123 When no particular emphasis is intended, the personal pronoun is usually omitted; as,

Ny wnaeth y gwr ymdanafi ovawred kymmeint am karcharu. Mab. i. 10.

Aeth *ei* ovn i eithavoedd. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1124. If the reflexive *hun* or *hunan* be the object of the verb, the introductory possessive may be either employed or omitted; as,

A dwyllo arall efe a dwylla *ei hunan* yn fwy. Iolo MSS. 164.

Fal hyn y llosgodd cynfigen eu *hunan*. Ib. 171.

Ymwrolodd rhai dinasoedd ereill *i'w* hamddiffyn *eu hunain*. Ch. Edwards.

§ 1125. When the particles *y*, *yr*, *ydd*, or *ydd* precede the verb, (in which case the subject follows the verb,) the possessive pronoun may

or may not be used. When it is expressed, the objective personal pronoun is generally omitted; when it is not, the personal pronoun is always expressed; as,

Ony wney dy hynny, yth adawn yth olynnyon. Mab. i. 252.

Dymunaf eich enw, syr, ebe fi, fel y'ch atebwyf yn gymhwysach. Bardd Cwag.

Pan edrychom arno, ni bydd pryd fel y dymunem Ef. Eesaih liii. 2.

§ 1126. The same rule is applicable to a negative sentence, when the subject follows the verb; as,

Myn vygret nyth gredaf. Mab i. 240.

Ny welwyfi dydi. Ib. i. 14.

§ 1127. But the third person is an exception, the possessive being never placed before it in a negative proposition; as,

Nyt adwaeney neb or teulu ewo. Mab. i. 267.

§ 1128. Most commonly in this case *mono* and *monynt* are employed; as,

Ni buasai neb yn agos i'w hwyl yn coelio monynt. Ed. Samuel.

And whenever this pronominal form is used in respect of the other persons, the introductory possessive is in like manner omitted.

§ 1129. A possessive pronoun always precedes an infinitive verb, provided it has a personal pronoun for its object; as,

Gwell dy grogi di gei. Mab. i. 11.

§ 1130. When the object of the infinitive takes precedence in the clause, a possessive pronoun will be inserted immediately before the infinitive. In this case, the object may be a noun or a verb, as well as a personal pronoun.

§ 1131. The possessive pronoun agrees with the preceding objective in number and gender; but the third person is always used; as,

Os Myfi yr ydych yn ei geisio=yw yr Hwn yr ydych yn ei geisio. St. John xviii. 8.

In this case, the possessive does not indicate that a personal pronoun is to follow.

§ 1132. The verb substantive, and other intransitive verbs, when used in the infinitive as the main verb of a clause, are often followed by their subject; and if, in this case, the subject be a personal pronoun, the infinitive will always be preceded by a corresponding possessive; as,

*Dywed wylan wrth liw'r od man,
Fy mod wen gu yn ei charu.* Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Cyn y dyuot ef. Mab. i. 240.

Gwedy eu diffiannu wy. Ib. i. 273.

§ 1133. The introductory possessives are placed before passive verbs, when these verbs precede their subjects, and are themselves preceded by other words ; as,

A Rheged ai gelwid. Iolo MSS. 70.

Peredur uab efrawe ym gelwir i. Mab. i. 261.

§ 1134. Sometimes when the personal pronoun is expressed, the possessive is omitted ; as,

Gystal ag y gwnaed ef yn farchog aurdafodawe o'r ford gronn. Iolo MSS. 79.

§ 1135. If the governing verb be intransitive, the infinitive will be preceded by a possessive pronoun corresponding to the subject of the governing verb ; as,

Yr wyf yn sefyll i'm barnu. Act. xxvi. 6.

§ 1136. If the governing verb be transitive, the infinitive will be preceded by a possessive pronoun, corresponding to the object of the governing verb ; as,

Am y ceisbyllaid, gedwch lwy yn rhyddion, i bryfeta, ac i'w gyru i'r byd i geunentydd a pherthi. Bardd Cwsg.

§ 1137. When no personal pronoun comes after an infinitive of this kind, it acquires a passive signification.

§ 1138. Nevertheless, the personal pronoun may be omitted after an active infinitive, when the object shall have been previously made known ; thus, whilst Daeth i'w ddysgu, passively, would signify *he came to be taught* ; in an active sense, its meaning would be *he, came to teach him*, that is, the person spoken of before.

§ 1139. The auxiliary *cael* is very often borrowed to express the infinitive passive, with the view of rendering the meaning stronger and clearer ; as, Daethym i gael fy nysgu.

SECTION CIX.

THE VERB SUBSTANTIVE BOD.

§ 1140. The Cymric language has four different forms to express the third person indicative of *Bod* ; namely, *yw* or *ydyw*, *sydd* or *yssydd*, *y mae*, and *oes*. Each form has its own place and import ; so that one cannot be employed optionally for the other, without altering the construction of the sentence, and in most cases, giving it a different signification.

§ 1141. *Ydyw* is none other than *yw*, with the particle *yd* prefixed =id est. Sometimes, indeed, we find the particle put before it, even in its compound state ; as,

Ac yd yttoed yn troi yny gaer wedy bwyd. Mab. i. 262.

But this has evidently arisen from the habit of regarding *ydwy* as a simple word.

§ 1142. In affirmative sentences, *yw* is used when the emphasis is to be laid on the predicate ; and by thus particularising it to the subject, as capable of being asserted of it under all circumstances, it gives the proposition the character of an universal truth.

Da yw y maen gyda'r evengyl. Myv. Arch. iii. 153.

Hence it is preceded by the predicate, and followed by the subject.

§ 1143. In the following example, however, the verb is put between the adverb and the adjective which it qualifies ;

A thair rhan y myr
Mor *ynt* amrygyr. Taliesin.

§ 1144. According to the usual arrangement, the particle *yn* never accompanies the predicate ; when *yn* is retained, the form *mae* is employed ; as,

Mae wedi myned yn abred gwyllt. Adage.

§ 1145. *Yn*, however, may accompany the predicate in all the other persons, though the same description of verb be used ; but here the predicate follows the verb, which again is for the most part preceded by one of the verbal particles ; as,

Hyt hediw ydwyfi yn darparu. Mab. i. 25.

§ 1146. If prepositions with their object, or adverbs of like import, or temporal conjunctions, precede, the copula should be *mae*, not *yw* ; as,

Apha le emaynt ? Laws ii. 11. 23.

§ 1147. There are, however, exceptions to this rule to be met with occasionally ; as,

Er pan ydwy hi wraig i mi. Mab. iii. 334.

Tra yr ydwy hi yn ddydd. St. Ioan ix. 4.

Pan yw fy nhad a'm mam yn fy ngwrthod. Psalm xxvii. 10.

§ 1148. In the following extracts, again, *mae* is placed where it would be more proper to employ *yw* ;

Y gwr hir racko mae Arthur. Mab. i. 241.

Mil a phedwar cant mae Ior.

A thrugain ac wyth rhagor. Apud Newcome's Hist. of Denbigh.

§ 1149. When the predicate is definite by being preceded by the article, or when in its own nature it is definite, it may interchange position with the subject ; as,

Y dillad yw'r dyn, (Adage.)

or

Y dyn yw'r dillad.

§ 1150. But if the subject precede, and the predicate be indefinite, *sydd*, not *yw*, must be used ;

Lewis *sy'n eu harwain.* L. G. Cothi.

§ 1151. Occasionally, when it is wished to put peculiar emphasis on the subject, it is placed foremost ; as,

Pob *anghyflawnder* pechod *yw.* 1 John v. 17.

But in this case, perhaps the subject may be a pronoun understood after *yw* ; q. d. *yw efe.*

§ 1152. We do find the verb placed last in the sentence, and preceded by its pronominal subject ; as,

Kynebrwydet ac awel wynt *wynt ynt.* Mab. ii. 227.

§ 1153. Also first ; as,

Ydyw corn heb *ygyvarn.* Myv. Arch. iii. 178.

§ 1154. It is sometimes, moreover, used impersonally ; as,

Myfi yw. St. John xviii. 5.

But in such expressions, the subject is evidently understood.

§ 1155. In a negative sentence, of which the copula is *yw*, or *ydyw*, the term to be negatived is usually the first, whether it be the predicate or the subject ; as,

Nyd etiveddiaeth yw gwasanaeth. Myv. Arch. iii. 187.

§ 1156. *Yw* will admit of being immediately preceded by a negative particle, and thus become destructive of both *mae* and *sydd*, which would be used in the affirmative sentence ;

Nid *ydyw* y byd ond bychydig. Adage.

§ 1157. *Yw* may also come immediately after the particles of supposition *od* and *os* ; as,

Od *ydyw* yn dawedog
Is y chwardd eos a chog. D. ab Edmwnd.

§ 1158. Likewise, after the interrogatives *a* and *onid* ; as,

Onid *yw* hyn yn gam cywilyddus ? Bardd Cwsg.

§ 1159. *Sydd*=*ys yd*, is used when the emphasis is thrown on the subject, and has strictly an antithetical or exceptional force, equivalent to the English *it is—that*. It often, however, loses its antithetical force, being used in sentences where the copula implies simply *is*.

§ 1160. *Sydd* is preceded by its subject, and followed by an indefinite word or predicate ; as,

Llywodraeth gwyr *sydd* annos. Merfyn Gwawdrwydd.

§ 1161. If the predicate following the verb be definite, *yw* will be substituted for *sydd* ; as,

Y dillad *yw'r* dyn. Adage.

§ 1162. If the subject of *sydd* be a relative pronoun, it will very often be left out ; as,

Iarll ienanc *yssyd* gymodawo idi. Mab. i. 28.

Ir heunrit *iesid* arifrut. Lib. Land. 70.

§ 1163. In a negative sentence with *sydd*, the subject which occupies the foremost part of it is usually the negated term, and this is preceded immediately by the particle of denial ;

Nid chwyehwi *sydd* yn dywedyd. St. Mark xiii. 2.

§ 1164. Sometimes, however, the copula is the negated term ; and as particles of negation ought immediately to precede the words intended to be negated, and *sydd* cannot be so preceded, the copula *yw* is substituted for it ; as,

Cariad nid *yw* yn censi genu. 1 Cor. xiii. 4.

§ 1165. Suppositions introduced by *od*, *oe*, and interrogatives by *a*, *onid*, &c., require the same construction as negative clauses.

§ 1166. The following conditional expression must be excepted ;

O si rann y mi oth uab di. Mab. ii. 208.

§ 1167. Among the ancients, *sydd* or *yssydd* not unfrequently commenced sentences ; as,

Yssydd Lanvor dra weilgi. Ll. Hen.

Ysid rad yny wlad a mad a meint. G. Brycheiniog.

Ysid gan vnbyn vnbarch dynolaeth. Ib.

Ysid escob llary uch alloreu dewi. Ib.

§ 1168. It is occasionally separated into its component parts, *ys yd* ; and sometimes the verbal element only is used ; as,

Ys id ar bawb ei bryder. Myv. Arch. iii. 179.

A wneler er ei ochel *ys* drwg. Adage.

§ 1169. *Mae* is used when the emphasis is on the deed or fact announced by it. It signifies *is* and *there is*.

§ 1170. *Mae*, signifying *is*, is connected with *yw* ; as may be proved by simply asking a question which commences with *a yw*, and answering it affirmatively ; as, *a yw y dyn yma ? Ydyw, y mae*.

§ 1171. *Mae* always precedes its subject, and is accompanied by an indefinite word or predicate. The particle *y* generally goes before it ; but it is frequently omitted ; as,

Y mae hi yn llosgi mil o eneidiau. Iolo MSS. 191.

Mae modvedd yn ddigon er dianc. Myv. Arch. iii. 186.

§ 1172. The predicate usually comes after the subject, as in the

foregoing examples ; but sometimes it intervenes between the copula and the subject ; as,

Mae'n rhyedd balchedd y byd. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1173. When *mae* is auxiliary, the accompanying participle and its dependents may precede it ; or the object of the participle may precede, and the participle itself follow the copula. In the former case, the particle *yn* is generally left out ; as,

Myned weithion maent waethwaeth. L. G. Cothi.

The other persons of the verb are in like manner capable of this position ; as,

Ymld ydwyf, ymlyn ei phlwyf. Rh. G. ab Rhicoert.

§ 1174. If prepositions and their object, or adverbs of similar import, or temporal conjunctions, begin a sentence which has *mae* for its copula, they are immediately followed by it ; as,

Arno mae pwys y ddwysir. L. G. Cothi.

B'le mae un wlad yn Lladin? Ib.

Lle mae 'm traserch. Rh. G. ab Rhicoert.

§ 1175. If a predicate, that is a substantive or an adjective, having the particle *yn* before it, precede the copula, *yn* is sometimes retained, and the copula will be *mae* ; but most usually *yn* is omitted, and then *yw* will be substituted for *mae* ; as, *yn frenhin y bwyd y mae y bara.*

Brenhin y bwyd yw y bara. Adage.

Here also is seen the mutual affinity which is between *mae*=is, and *yw*.

§ 1176. Sometimes the subject or the predicate, or both, are omitted in a sentence ; as,

Myned a wnaeth y goel honn ar gof a llafar gwlad ag y mae hyd heddyw.
Iolo MSS. 199.

§ 1177. *Mae* is never immediately preceded by a negative particle ; therefore, if in a negative proposition the copula is the term to be denied, its correlative *yw* will be substituted for it ; thus, were the following to be rendered negative ;

Mae'r bel, v'anwyl ! i'th ddwylaw,
Mae'r fon o linon i'th law, (L. G. Cothi.)

we should read,

Nid yw'r bel v'anwyl ! i'th ddwylaw,
Nid yw'r fon o linon i'th law.

§ 1178. Suppositions introduced by *od* and *os*, and interrogations introduced by *a* and *onid*, require the same construction ;

Os yw'r bel, &c.
Onid yw'r fon, &c.

§ 1179. The poets occasionally employ *mae* where *sydd* would be more appropriate ; as,

Rheoli llawer ar iawn gweryl,
Y *mae* i Edwart yn ammodawl. L. G. Cothi.

Vy mwyd, vy niawd, vy medd
Y *mae* yno a'm aunedd. Ib.

§ 1180. *Mae*, signifying *there is*, is connected with *oes* ; as may be ascertained by asking a question beginning with *a oes*, and answering it affirmatively ; as, *a oes yma neb ? Oes y mae*.

In like manner, negative clauses will prove the same thing.

Mae dechreu i bob peth, ond nid *oes* diwedd ond i ryw Beth. Myv. Arch. iii. 185.

Also suppositions introduced by *a* and *onid*.

§ 1181. *Mae* with the preposition *i*, governing a noun or pronoun, forms an expression similar to the *est mihi* of the Latins, and the *ἐμοί ἐστι* of the Greeks.

Y *mae* i Herbart roddi pardwn. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1182. Another construction of a similar meaning is formed by *mae* and the pronominal preposition *gennyf* ; as,

Mae gennyf ni gynnwysiad tan law'r Fab. Bardd Cwsg. . .

Y *mae gennyf* is used principally in North Wales ; *y mae i mi*, and *y mae gyda fi*, being preferred by the Dimetians and Silurians.

§ 1183. *Oes* is never used in positive sentences except as a particle of affirmation, in replies to questions made by *a oes*—*is there*. It is used in absolute negations preceded by *nid*, in the sense of *there is not* ; in conditional sentences preceded by *os*, *onid*, &c. ; and in interrogative sentences, *a oes*, answering to *y mae*—*there is*, in affirmative sentences. It thus refers to existence only, not to the quality of what exists, and includes both copula and predicate ; as,

Nid *oes* wyledd rhag anferthedd. Myv. Arch. iii. 171.

Atolygaf enw'r Ddinas fawr wallgofus hon, ebe fi, *os oes* arni well enw na Bedlam fawr. *Oes*, ob efe, hi a elwir y Ddinas Ddienydd. Bardd Cwsg.

Ni wn *oes* neb i'n *oes* ni,
Un havnos, yn eu hovni. L. G. Cothi.

Y dywawt y mab *oes* borthawr. *oes*. Mab. ii. 201.

SECTION CX.

APPOSITION VERBS.

§ 1184. In Welsh, as in all other languages, there are some verbs capable of taking two nominatives ; namely, a subject-nominative which must be a noun or pronoun, and a predicative-nominative, which

may be a substantive or adjective; two accusatives, the former a noun or pronoun, the latter a noun or adjective.

§ 1185. These are verbs of *being, becoming, seeming, calling, making, appointing, considering, thinking, choosing, &c.*

§ 1186. The second nominatives and second accusatives are preceded by the particle *yn*, which denotes *in* or *in the state of*. The said particle governs all the mutable consonants, except *ll* and *rh*, in the soft sound. *Ll* and *rh* generally retain the radical.

§ 1187. The apposition word that follows *yn* is an indefinite substantive or adjective; as,

Gwyr llyohlyn yw y rei hynny, a march ual meirohawn yn tywynawc arnadt.
Mab. ii. 880.

Yna'r Eryr a weles y galla ef ei phriodi ai chymmyrd attaw yn gywely.
Iolo MSS. 190.

§ 1188. An adjective of the equal degree, is not preceded by *yn*.

§ 1189. The apposition word is generally placed after the verb; as,

Hi a gymmerth arhi'r Lelanaeth, ag a aeth yn Santes. Iolo MSS. 84.

Duw a roes ddeuglawr Voesen
Yn ddelwau aur yn ddeuy len. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1190. Except when particular emphasis is to be laid on it, in in which case it is placed foremost in the sentence; as,

Yn hyn crwn i le nwi cred,
Dos Wynedd wedi Sioned. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1191. When the apposition word thus precedes the verb, the particle *yn* is sometimes omitted; as,

Mawr yw hadau yn Mhrydyn,
Mwy yw rhent y Cymry hyn. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1192. In connection with *bod*, it is often omitted even when the predicate follows the verb and its subject; but its governing influence for the most part still remains; as,

A vu ddyn aeth yn adyn. Myv. Arch. iii. 180.

A vo dda gan Dduw ystyrgar vydd. Ib.

§ 1193. But the infinitive of the verb substantive, and the indicative inflections *mas* and *maent*, do not admit of the omission of *yn*.

Bod yn glaf a marw eisys. Adage.

Mae y bêl mab i Wilym
Mewn ei law, mae yn eisw ym. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1194. Sometimes the predicate, when *yn* is omitted, resumes the radical sound; as,

A vo pen bid pont. Myv. Arch. iii. 146.

§ 1195. *Yn* is used to denote distribution ; as,

Anniweirion blant anwiredd a wnant,
Yn wyr ac yn wragedd. L. G. Cothi.

SECTION CXI.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

§ 1196. The infinitive mood may be found in any position competent for a noun to occupy. Thus it may be the subject of a discourse, or objective to the verb ; it may be followed by an adjective, or governed by a preposition.

As subject of a verb ;

Gwneuthur a gyrch dyben. Myv. Arch. iii. 113.

Dangos a bair ystyr. Ib. p. 112.

As possessive case ;

Dirgalvan *garu.* Ib. 126.

As object to a verb ;

Deall a bair *wybod.* Ib. 112.

Gwyllys a bair *gwneuthur.* Ib.

As object of a preposition ;

O voddas Duw y ceir gwynvyd tragywydd. Myv. Arch. iii. 110.

Byw *ar garu* y mae Dyddgu. Ib. 150.

With an adjective ;

Rhyw *ddygywyl ofnadwy.* Heb. x. 27.

§ 1197. Hence the reason why the infinitive mood has no inflection of tense, is, that it is treated more as a noun than a verb generally, and its time must be estimated in reference to the preceding verb. Thus,

Ti a welaist ddodi'r ffiol yn y goden. Iolo MSS. 172.

Now, *dodi'r ffiol yn y goden* is present with reference to the act of *gweled* or seeing, and therefore the present infinitive is used. When, however, the act in the infinitive is past with reference to the preceding verb, the past participle is used, or *ddarfod* ; thus,

Wedi danfon gair i Ddafydd bod Gruffudd *wedi marw.* Iolo MSS. 95.

Ir neb a ddangoses ef *ddarfod* iddo *lygru.* Mab. iii. 333.

Rhyw rai diddyg, disynwyr, a ddywedant *ddarfod* i'r leithoedd hynny *fen-tyccio* gan y Gymraeg. M. Kyffin.

§ 1198. But in old documents, the particle *rhŷ* put before the infinitive was used to denote the past time ;

Adnabot aoruc rygaffel dynawt. Mab. i. 13.

Gwedi clybot ryuarw. Ib. iii. 298.

§ 1199. A noun or pronoun under government of a preposition, often intervenes between the finite verb and the infinitive ; in which case the infinitive may be considered as both the object of the finite verb, and as the verb of the noun or pronoun in question ; as,

Gorfu helyd ar Ieuan ap Lleision fyned yn wr cel a chudd. Iolo MSS. 199.

A gorchymmys iddo wiled yn fanol ag yn ofalus arno nos a dydd. Ib. 202.

Aorchymynnwys yr kiwtawtwyr adeilat tei. Mab. iii. 298.

§ 1200. The preposition *i* is put before the infinitive when motive or purpose is to be expressed ; or when the preceding verb is followed by a noun or pronoun in the accusative ; as,

Ni wïw myned i brynu dwr gan llyswen. Adage.

Y fiwyddyn nesaf yr anogawydd Hywel ab Edwin lu o sseson i ddyfod i went.
Iolo MSS. 20.

§ 1201. After some transitive verbs, it is optional whether the preposition *i* comes between the finite verb and the noun or pronoun, or between the noun or pronoun and the infinitive ; thus we may say, *Dysgodd fi i ddarllen*, or *Dysgodd i mi ddarllen*. In the latter construction, the infinitive must be regarded more especially as a noun—the object of *dysgodd*.

§ 1202. *I* is not used when the infinitive is the nominative to a verb, or an apposition nominative.

Gwneuthur a gelvydd. Myv. Arch. iii. 113.

Bach yw gennym gadw ein gwlad ag amgen na chadernyd corph a chalon.
Iolo MSS. 185.

§ 1203. *Nor* is used when the infinitive is the object to a verb ; thus,

A Manawydan fab Llŷr yn gweled hynny a beris gynnwll yr awyru ynghyd.
Iolo MSS. 187.

§ 1204. Sometimes several infinitives, one depending on the other, are strung together in a sentence ; as,

Yna efe a ddeisyfes arni roi cennad iddo i fyned iw dy i gymmeryd a channu yn iach i Angharad ei wraig at fab Einion. Iolo MSS. 176.

§ 1205. When two or more verbs are coupled together, as dependent on the same conjunction, very frequently the first verb only is put in the inflected mood, whilst the second and following verbs are used in the infinitive forms ; as,

Ar pryd hynny y gwaeddodd y Capden Cadwgan foel ar y Cymry a deisyf arnyn gymmeryd Cenhinen yn eu helmau. Iolo MSS. 65.

A Chyneddaf wledig ag Urien fab Cynfarch au gorfyddawd, au *lladd* hyd ymhen y naw o honyt a *gyrru*'r lleill ir Mor. Iolo MSS. 78.

Tra yr elwyf a *gweddio*. Math. xxvi. 36.

§ 1206. Sometimes the preposition *o* with a noun or pronoun is added after the infinitive ; as,

Fel y derbynier ef i arch Eglwys Crist, a *gallu o hono* fordwyo. Com. Prayer.

§ 1207. If the subject be changed, it is always added with the preposition *o*, after the infinitive ; as,

Pan ddelych gyda ni, a *dyfod o'r daioni* hwnnw. Num. x. 32.

The preposition *o* with a noun or pronoun, is very frequently put after an infinitive in positive sentences, to express the past indicative, corresponding to *I loved, I had loved* ; or the subjunctive corresponding to *I should love* ;

Ac or diwed *tewi o honnunt*. Mab. i. 248.

Y mae yn dywedyd *siarad o honaw*. Ed. Samuel.

Chwennych yr ydym ni *gael o bawb* wybod ein hachos. M. Kyffin.

Damweiniodd *neittio a disgyn o dri defnyn*. Mab. iii. 322.

§ 1208. The sentence has the force of a subjunctive after words that imply *commanding, entreating, wishing, praying, &c.* ; in short, after verbs of the imperative and supplicative moods. Here, however, the infinitive is very often preceded by the preposition *ar* or *am*, to distinguish this from the other signification of the verb. Thus, *Dywedodd ar fyned o honaw*—he said *that he went* ; but *Dywedodd am fyned o honaw*—he said (or ordered) *that he should go*.

§ 1209. The connectives *o* and *o honaf* are sometimes omitted after a certain class of verbs ; as,

Hon yw y ddamnedigaeth *ddyfod goleuni* i'r byd, (for *dyfod o oleuni*.) St. John iii. 19.

Na thybiwch *fy nyfod* i dorri y gyfraith (for *dyfod o honaf*.) Math. v. 17.

§ 1210. The preposition *i* with a noun or pronoun, set before the infinitive, is also used to express the same meaning ; as,

Barn rhai yw, *i wrtheyrn wahodd* y Saeson. Theo. Evans.

Moes *i mi glywed*. Mab. iii. 328.

Yn y modd hwn i peris Taliesin *i'w feistres osod* y forwyn i eiste ar y ford. Ib. 332.

§ 1211. In such expressions as, *Gwelwch roi y defnydd* yn lle y peth a achoswyd, (Henri Perri ;) whilst *rhoi* is literally a verb transitive, having *defnydd* for its object ; both are here in construction, to be regarded as a noun, the accusative of *gwelwch*, whilst they should be translated as if *rhoi* were a finite verb passive, and *defnydd* its subject.

§ 1212. The infinitive, if immediately followed by its object, governs it in the radical sound ; but if an intervenient word or phrase separates the object from the infinitive, the object will be put in the soft sound ; as,

Goganu gwagedd eu cymodogion. Myv. Arch. iii. 115.

I roi is' glwyw ar ein gwlad. L. G. Cothi.

SECTION CXII.

PARTICIPLES.

§ 1213. About the formation of participles, see § 569, &c.

§ 1214. Properly speaking, those only are participles which have peculiar inflections ; the others are verbs of the infinitive mood, under the influence of prepositions and other words.

§ 1215. *Yn* with an infinitive forms the participle employed in periphrastic verbs,

Mae Annes yn damuno
I dir o vor ei droi vo. L. G. Cothi.

Bedo'n llavurio vy llaw
Y sydd. Ib.

Gan and *dan* can never be used in this circumstance.

§ 1216. *Yn* with an infinitive may stand in apposition to a noun or pronoun, whether it be nominative, possessive, or objective.

1. Nominative ;

A Manawydan fab Llyr yn gweled hynny a beris gynnul yr Esgyrn. Iolo MSS. 187.

2. Possessive ;

Llef un yn llafain yn y diffaethwch. Mark iv. 16.

3. Objective ;

Ef a welai ffwrn danlyd, a saith ddialedd yn dŵyn saith liw ynddi, a pechaduriaid yn poeni ynddynt. Iolo MSS. 190.

§ 1217. *Yn* may be also with an infinitive in an absolute sentence ; as,

A thros y bont y cwmpa y rhai drwg ffleision ynghanol y llif, a plawb yn boddi yn y llif hwnnw, yn ol eu gweithredoedd. Iolo MSS. 191.

§ 1218. *Yn* participial governs the radical sound ; as *yn dŵyn*, *yn boddi*, see above. But if an adverb intervene between it and the infinitive, the adverb will have its sound regulated by the participle, while the infinitive will be put in the soft sound.

§ 1219. *Gan* is used with the infinitive, when the act implied in another verb is to be explained ; as,

Pwy nis gwyr fod rhai yn yr amseroedd gynt a roent ogan, gan ddynwedyd fod oferedd yn yr Ysgrythyr Lan. M. Kyffin.

or, when simultaneous, though different acts are described; as,

Un troed a *feriodd* y goron oddi ar ben yr amberawdwr, *gan ddywedyd*, allu o hono ef wneuthur Amberodrau, a'u dadwneuthur hwynt. M. Kyffin.

Pan *weddiat* y Cristionigion cyntaf, ein Hynafaid ni, *gan droi* eu gwynebau tu a'r Dwyrain. Ib.

§ 1220. When intensity or certainty is to be expressed in past or future time, it is done by *gan* with an infinitive, accompanied by the same verb in a finite mood; as,

Gan ddyfod y daw, nid oeda. Heb. ii. 3.

Gan ddryllio yr ymddyrllyodd y ddaear, *gan rwygo* yr ymrwygodd y ddaear, *gan symmud* yr ymsymmudodd y ddaear. Es. xxiv. 19.

§ 1221. *Gan* with an infinitive, is for the most part, if not always, set in apposition to a noun or pronoun in the nominative case; as,

Ac y dryr y mab Fodrwy i'r Ferch, *gan ei dodi* ar y llyfr. Com. Prayer.

§ 1222. *Tan* or *dan* with the infinitive, implies that an act is continuous, extending over the space occupied by the finite verb; and like *gan*, it is set in apposition to the nominative; as,

Trwy eich cenad, ebe'r tafarnwr, *tan grynu*, ni haeddwn i ddim mo'r fath beth. Bardd Cwsg.

§ 1223. Other words, such as *wrth*, *gwedi*, *ar ol*, *yn ol*, *ar feidr*, *ar gael*, &c., when set before infinitives, impart to them a participial meaning corresponding to their own character; as,

A *gwedi holi* 'r Arglwyddes y cafwyd allan y gwir fal y bu. Iolo MSS. 171.

Ag *wrth ei torri* cafwyd ym mhob un or beddau esgyrn dyn. Ib. 172.

Ac *ar ol marw* trichanmlynedd yn darfod i'r ddaear. Ib. 189.

Nid hael hael *ar feidr cael* ced. W. Lleyn.

§ 1224. But participles proper are inflected; those of the present tense active ending in *ad* or *awd*, the perfect in *edig* and *awr*, and the future in *adwy*; those of the present passive, in *edig*, *adwy*, and *awg*; the perfect, *edig* and *otor*. These, like adjectives, accompany nouns substantive, sometimes preceding, and sometimes following them.

Ni bu oleuad
Cyn oeli *cread*. Taliesin.

Chwarddedig bryd wrth y gares. Adage.

Dysgogettawr perchen y wen ynys. Taliesin.

Caredig *caradwy* y glot. Aneurin.

There are several instances of the participle in *edig* (*atic*) in our oldest documents; as *dometic*, *tinetic*, *malgueretic*, *diguolouchetic*, Oxf. Gloss; *hantertoetic*, *dodocetic*, Lux. Gloss.

SECTION CXIII.

PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

§ 1225. Inasmuch as the personal terminations of verbs active consist of fragments of personal pronouns, it is not absolutely necessary that others should be employed ; thus,

Erlynais ferch ar las lannerch. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Ni wrendy 'nghwyn
Dan frig irlwyn. Ib.

§ 1226. Nevertheless, they are occasionally used, and more particularly when an emphasis is required on the pronoun ; as,

Mae mwyhaf gwreio agaraf yw hi. Mab. i. 17.

Awely di y medyant ysyd ymi? Ib. i. 7.

§ 1227. The usual position of the pronoun is after the verb ; but when particular emphasis is required, it may be put before the verb ; as,

Ac yna ti aglywey dwryf mawr. athi a tebygy ergrynu y nef ar dayar gan y twryf. Mab. i. 8.

Nyny aduedun eckeyll egur escar aby. Laws, ii. 1. 27.

§ 1228. The first and second persons singular are liable to a modification of their initials, according to their position in a sentence.

§ 1229. When the subject comes after the verb, the first person takes *fi* or *finnau*, if the verb ends in *f*, *r*, or *d* ; as,

Clwyfus wyf fi claf am dani. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Hualwyd fi yng ngrosyni. Ib.

§ 1230. If the verb ends in *n*, *m*, or *s*, the first person will suffer an elision of *f*, and take *i* or *innau* ; as,

A phan y gweleis i ef. Mab. i. 3.

Adyuot, adywedut aorugum innau. Ib. i. 5, 10.

This is regulated by the law of euphony, the letters *f*, *n*, *m*, at least, being mutually of a kindred character.

§ 1231. When the pronoun is the object, following the verb, the first person takes *fi* or *finnau*, if the subject also follows the verb ; as,

Nyt yspeilwys ynteu vi. Mab. i. 10.

Y bwriodd y Tylwyth Teg fi. Bardd Cwag.

§ 1232. When, however, a possessive pronoun precedes the verb, the force of the initial *is*, as it were, thrown back upon that pronoun, and the object becomes *i*, or *innau* ; as,

Un ohonawch chwi am kymero i. Mab. i. 14.

Am adaw ynneu yno. Ib. i. 10.

§ 1233. When the subject comes after the verb, the second person takes *di* or *dihau*, if the verb ends in *r*, *d*, or in a vowel, or if it is in the imperative mood ; as,

Peth aroydy emy, aroydy ymy. Laws, ii. 1. 26 ; ii. 4. 9.

Hwde di y votrwy honn. Mab. i. 14.

§ 1234. *Nerthiti*, in the Oxford Glosses, is an exception.

§ 1235. If the verb ends in *t*, the second person takes *ti* or *tihau*, the softer letter yielding to the more powerful, and being assimilated to it ; as,

Peredur deo coffa dy gret arodeist ti ymi. Mab. i. 282.

§ 1236. When a possessive pronoun precedes the verb, both the subject and the object will naturally have the soft sound, the force of the initial being thrown back upon the introductory pronoun ; as,

Ha vnbenn heb y ronabwy paystyr yth elwir *dihau* velly ? Mab. ii. 35.

§ 1237. The different persons of a verb are capable of two nominatives, one before and the other after the verb ; as, *mi garaf fi*, *ti geri di*, *fe gar efe*. The third person singular is the one now most generally used before a verb, being applied equally to the first and second persons, and employed merely as an auxiliary agent. See § 839 and § 959.

§ 1238. The particle *a* generally occurs between the auxiliary *e*, *ef*, *fe*, or *fo*, and the verb, in mediæval writings ; as,

Ev a geif dyn ddydg o'i vebyd hyd ei henaint. Myv. Arch. iii. 155.

Sometimes *y* occurs, being more especially a Dimetian usage ;

Ev *y* molir pawb wrth ei waith. Ib.

And sometimes both, the one and the other, are omitted ; as,

E vynai *y* gath a'r ddwy gynfon. Ib.

§ 1239. The emphatic forms of all persons and numbers, and the emphatic and conjunctive, generally precede their verbs ; as,

Myvi a rannaf. Mab. i. 251.

Nyny adeuedun. Laws, ii. 1. 70.

Hwyntwy wedi hynny adoethant. Mab. ii. 236.

§ 1240. Whilst the accent is usually placed on the last syllable in *myfi*, *tydi*, *nyni*, *chwychwi*, *hwyni-hwyy*, we yet find instances in the poets where it is placed on the penultimate ; as,

Myfi aydd yn ymafel,
Myfi aeth â mwy o fel.
Tydi, ai caeth y tidwyd ?
Tydi, ai goreu tad wyd ?
Efo pan ddelai i fan,
Ac efo a gwraig Ifan.

*Nyni oedd iawn i'n annos
 Nyni yn niau a nos.
 Chwychwi a ddylai chychwyn,
 Chwychwi a dynnwch y chwyn.
 Hwytwy a gaid yn untal,
 Hwynthwy i gyd yn un tál. Apud Dr. Davies.*

§ 1241. When the possessive pronoun is to be marked with a degree of emphasis, a corresponding personal pronoun is put after the noun ; as,

Ar penn vy yagwyd i. Mab. i. 15.

Gwell dy grogi di gei. Ib. i. 11.

Cyn y dyuot ef. Ib. i. 240.

Yduo hitheu esoyb y wneuthur y priodas hi ac Owein. Mab. i. 21.

Gwedy eu diffannu wy. Ib. i. 273.

En eu pen vinteu. Laws, ii. 11. 15.

§ 1242. The pronouns of the first and second persons singular, which alone are subject to variation, take the same forms after compound prepositions ending with a substantive, as those which they take after pure substantives ; thus, o'm herwydd *i* ; o'th ran *di*.

Oth achaws di ydoetham ni yman. Cam. Br. Saints, 212.

§ 1243. After pronominal prepositions, their initials become assimilated to the final letters of the said prepositions ; as,

A chystal y cei di'th fyd ac y mae arnaf finnau. Iolo MSS. 160.

Py wyneb ysyd arnat ti. Mab. i. 18.

§ 1244. Sometimes, the initial of *f* or *finnau* is altogether omitted ; as,

Ny dywat nar gwr nac vn or morynyon vn geir wrthf i hyt yna. Mab. i. 5.

This is the case more especially when the personal pronoun is suffixed to the preceding word, since doubling the letter *f* would alter its power ;

Llyma Owein gwedy goruot arnaf. Mab. i. 25.

Nevertheless, we meet with the other form occasionally ; thus,

Yna y gwybydaf dy dyfot titheu attaff. Mab. i. 15.

§ 1245. The government of words put in apposition with pronouns, depends on the force intended to be expressed by the apposition words. They are put either in the radical or the soft sound.

§ 1246. When a substantive, or an indefinite pronoun, is an attributive of a personal pronoun, its initial consonant is put in the soft sound ; as,

Nid anhybys i chwi, freuin galluocaf y dyfnder. Bardd Cwag.

§ 1247. When the second word is put in apposition to the personal pronoun, it retains its radical and strong form ; as, *chwi, pobl yr Eglwys*.

Pwy ni'th gar (di) pennaeth gwrol. Myv. Arch. iii. 138.

§ 1248. When one personal pronoun is put in apposition with another, the apposition pronoun generally retains the radical ; as,

Dos (di) allan o'r arch, ti a'th wraig. Gen. viii. 16.

SECTION CXIV.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 1249. Possessive pronouns, except *mau* and *tau*, precede the nouns, or the nouns and concomitants, to which they belong ; as,

Gwedy gwisgaw vy arven, ac adaw vy mendyth yno adyuot hyt vy llys vy hun. Mab. i. 10.

Gwell dy afles notâ les. Ib. i. 6.

Y gwr aladawd awcâ tat. Ib. i. 286.

Ac estwng eu pennau aorugant. Ib. i. 7.

§ 1250. When the possessive is required to be emphatic, a corresponding personal pronoun is placed after the noun ; as,

Ar penn vy ysgwyd i. Mab. i. 15.

Llyna an kyghor ni. Ib. iii. 268.

Apheri dy dehol dîheu mi ae gwnaf. Ib. 19.

Pa gyfryw wr yw awcâ tat chwi? Ib. i. 269.

Cynn y dyuot ef. Ib. 140.

En eu pen vinteu. Laws, ii. 11. 15.

§ 1251. Thus, unlike the Greek and Latin, the possessive is made to agree, not with the possessed, but with the possessor.

§ 1252. When still greater emphasis is required, the reflexive pronouns *fy hun, dy hun, &c.*, are placed after the noun, with or without the personal pronoun ; as,

Am dy agkembendawt dy hun. Mab. ii. 65.

Fâ person dy hunan. Ib. iii. 302.

Ny adwn ni drwc arnom ny hunain yr dyn nny byt. Ib. iii. 29.

§ 1253. *Mau* and *tau* are always placed after the noun to which they belong, the noun being preceded by the definite article ; as,

Rhemnant ydyw'r moliant mau. G. D. Llwyd.

Dioval ydyw'r tal tau. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1254. Sometimes the possessive *fy, dy, &c.*, is placed before the noun ; as,

Ymaith tyn fy anwiredd mau. Edm Prys.

§ 1255. *Mau* and *tau* are occasionally used as substantives ; as,

Bei well gennyt uy march i nor *tau* dy hun. Mab. ii. 16.

Tauawt llawnda yw y *tau* di. Ib. iii. 192.

Pa uedwl yw dy *tau* di. Ib. ii. 63.

Ar *fau* ffinau ar fanwyl. D. ab Gwilym.

§ 1256. The definite article generally precedes the possessives *eidd* and *ein* in their various forms ; as,

Pa ryw neges yw yr *eiddaw* of? Mab. iii. 38.

Nyt oedd olwc degach nor *eidi*. Ib. ii. 218.

Mynet y edrych panedwl yw yr *eidust*. Ib. iii. 82.

Dwc uendith duw ar *einym* gennyt. Ib. ii. 236.

A wyrda padarpar yw yr *einwck* chwi yna? Ib. ii. 62.

§ 1257. But there are several exceptions, especially when the said possessives are placed as the predicates of a clause ; as,

Os tydi agynhely y llambystaen yn *eiddi* hi dyret ragot y ymwan a miui.
Mab. ii. 17.

Y mae y breicheu hynn ar dwyuronn yn kolli clot a milwryaeth kymeint ac
soed *eidust*. Ib. ii. 35.

§ 1258. The possessives *fy*, *ym*, *dy*, *yth*, *ei*, *ein*, *eich*, *eu*, &c., are by a peculiar idiom employed before verbs, and between the component parts of certain compound prepositions ; as,

Ymbwyll ni'm daw. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Fe ddaeth Meinwar,
At fab *ei* car. Ib.

Clod i Dduw *fy* mod yn wadd. Iolo MSS. 154.

Docco lle mae *oŵ* flaen. Ib. 156.

Mod (bod) in the third example is to be taken substantively ; therefore the possessive before it is according to § 1249.

§ 1259. Many of the possessive pronouns, in construction, suffer an elision of their vowels, in consequence of their vowels going before them ; thus, *ym*, *yth*, *ei*, *ein*, *eich*, *eu*,

Before nouns	{	After the	{	a, na,	} are contracted into 'm, 'th, 'i, 'n, 'ch, 'u.
		conjunctions			
Before nouns	{	After the	{	o, i, a,	} into 'm, 'th, 'i, 'n, 'ch, u.
		prepositions			

Before verbs, and after
the particles { $\begin{matrix} a, \\ na, \\ y, \\ ni, \end{matrix}$ } are constructed into 'm, 'th, 'i,
'n, 'ch, 'u.

Dywel fy nghar *am* cyfaill y dderwen honn. Iolo MSS. 189.

Ffals ei air *a'* weithred. Ib. 191.

Moes *im* luoedd. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Dwg oll *o'm* cwyn. Ib.

Dod tithan'r gog
A'th Don serchog. Ib.

Moes fab *a'th* gar. Ib.

Dig pawb rhag *ai* car. Adage.

Na ddos i'r cynghor *na'th* elwir iddo yn gyntav. Geraint Fardd Glas.

§ 1260. When the preposition *i* comes before *ei* or *eu*, instead of contracting the words into *i'i* or *i'u*, which it would be difficult to pronounce, the expression takes the form of *i'w* in North Wales; whilst the Silurians and Dimetians fill up the hiatus by affixing *dd* to the preposition, or rather by inserting it between the preposition and the pronoun.

Da'r byd, *a'r* modd *i'w* harfer. Ed. Samuel.

A ddymuno ddrwg *i'w* gymodog iddo ei hun y daw. Iolo MSS. 170.

A ddymuno ddrwg *iddei* gymmydog iddo ei hunan y daw. Ib. 167.

Daethant y Cenhadon yn ol *iddeu* gwlad. Ib. 186.

§ 1261. Sometimes *f* in *fy* suffers an elision; as,

Claf fum lle clywaf ammod,
Closdy Mair, clywaist *y* mod. Iorwerth Fynglwyd.

Paraf, da iawn y pery,
Drwsio'n hardd gylch drws ynhy. Hywel Kilan.

Am *y* mod i ym mherigl *o'm* bywyd. Iolo MSS. 165.

§ 1262. *Ym*, *ein*, *eich*, and *eu*, are followed by the radical sound; as,

Byddwn a wnai bodd *am* carai. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Bach yw gennym gadw *ein* gwlad ag amgen na chadernyd corph a chalon.
Iolo MSS. 185.

A chadarn y byddwch heb alledigaeith i elyn o'r byd *eich* gwrthladd. Ib. 159.

A thal iddynt *eu* cyflog yn aur ac yn arian. Ib. 169.

§ 1263. *Dy*, *yth*, and *ei* masculine, by the soft; as,

Cymmer *dy* ben yn rhad. Iolo MSS. 165.

Mi a'th glywaf ebe Eidwyll ac yno tewi. Ib. 162.

Hawdd taftu'r mynydd i'r mor yn ol ei wahanu y naill garreg oddiwrth y llall. Ib. 159.

§ 1264. *Fy*, by the nasal or liquid sound ; as,

Dywel *fy* ngŷar am cyfhill y dderwen honn. Iolo MSS. 189.

§ 1265. *Ei* feminine, by the aspirate ; as,

Ni chlywais erioed gan un om ceraint y son lleiaf am gof ei phlanta hi. Ib. 189.

§ 1266. But when *ei* masculine and *ei* feminine are put before finite verbs, they are followed by the radical ; as,

A phan ai clywes Eidiol. Iolo MSS. 162.

Nid oedd neb ai gwelai'n hardd. Ib. 163.

§ 1267. Words beginning with a vowel have the aspirate *h* prefixed to them after the possessives *ym*, *ei* (fem.), *ein* and *eu* ; as,

Cerais ferch aml ei hannerob. Rh. G. ab Rhicert.

Dau wr gynt a'u henwau Eidiol ac Eidwyll. Iolo MSS. 151.

§ 1268. When *ei* (mas.) precedes a finite verb beginning with a vowel, the said verb is aspirated ; as,

Ei dad a'i henwodd ef Benjamin. Gen. xxxv. 18.

§ 1269. Though *yll* is most commonly joined to no more than two or three individuals, yet in fact it does occasionally exceed those numbers ; as,

Aphan oed dyd ydoedynt wynteu *yllpedwar* arglawd yn seuyll. Mab. ii. 16.
Agwledychu y wlat ac chyanneddu, ac rannu y ryngtunt *ell* pŷmp. Ib. iii. 102.

§ 1270. In old writings, it indiscriminately takes the forms *yll*, *ell*, *yll*, and is either joined to its noun, or separated from it.

SECTION CXV.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 1271. Demonstrative pronouns are used either by themselves, or in construction with nouns ; as,

Nac adeuawd dyn arnaw ehun chwedyl vethedigach no hwnn eiryoet. Mab. i. 10.

Ar chwedyl hwn a elwir chwedyl iarlles y ffynnawn. Mab. i. 38.

§ 1272. When joined to nouns, or nouns and their concomitants, they usually take the last place, and the nouns are always preceded by an article, or its equivalent ; as,

Gwyr y byt hwnn. Mab. i. 14.

§ 1273. A singular noun, with any numeral adjective above one, requires the demonstrative to be in the plural number ; as,

I gysylltu'r ddeuddyn *hyn* ynghyd mewn glan Briodas. Com. Prayer.

Y 3 *defny*n rhinweddol *hynny*. Mab. iii. 323.

§ 1274. The common singulars *hyn*, *hynny*, &c., are used colloquially in South Wales for all genders ; but in North Wales, as well as in written language generally, they are only employed when reference is made to a whole, or a part of a sentence, or simply when *peth* is indicated ; as,

A *hyn* adywedaf ytti gei vot *yn*tebic *gennyf* bot *yn*tegach yr hacraf onadunt *hwy* nor *vorwyn* decaf *aweleist* ti *eiryoet yn ynys* prydein. Mab. i. 4.

Ac yn orthrwm gan ei Dad *hynny*. Mab. iii. 324.

Yn nechreuaed Arthur a'r ford gron oedd *hynny*. Ib. iii. 322.

§ 1275. They are also used in connection with words expressive of time ; as,

O *hynny* allan i'r amhaeodd golud Elphin. Mab. iii. 329.

Ac ar *hynny* Caridwen yn dyfod i mywn. Ib. iii. 323.

§ 1276. Though not always ; thus,

Yn yr *amser* *hwnnw* yr oedd un mab i Wyddno. Ib. iii. 324.

§ 1277. These common demonstratives, when they are not accompanied by nouns, are regarded, in respect of government, &c., as masculine ;—*Hyn* sydd i'w *goelio* ; probably, because *peth* is understood.

§ 1278. The plural demonstratives, *y rhai hyn*, *y rhai hynny*, &c., are frequently contracted into *y rhai'n*, *y rhei'nny*, &c.

Y'r *hain* yr hyd yr *amser* yma a oeddent ym mhlas Elphin. Mab. iii. 335.

Llewod a'i rhydd lle daw'r *rhain*. O. ap Llew. ap y Moel.

Y fory 'n rhol 'r*hainny* 'n rhad. H. Dafydd ap Ie. ap Rhys.

Diau rhan Duw yw 'r*haini*. Apud Dr. Davies.

SECTION CXVI.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

§ 1279. *Arall* and *oll* follow the nouns which they qualify ; as,

Bet penn foss in hipant diuinid dir pant *arall*. Lib. Land. 150.

Argwraged *oll* is vy llaw inneu. Mab. i. 5.

§ 1280. Nevertheless we read,

Arbed i'th was am ei *arallion* gamweithredoedd, (D. Ddu Hiraddug.)

Ag *eraill* golofnau, (Cyf. y Beirdd, 98.)

where the pronoun precedes its noun.

§ 1281. All the others, which have nouns accompanying them, take the foremost position.

§ 1282. The following are accompanied by a noun or substantive word; *pob, ambell, rhyw, unrhyw*, (any,) *holl*; as,

Yn brin mewn ambell fan. Ed. Samuel.

Pob diarheb gwir, pob coel celwydd. Myv. Arch. iii. 157.

Ryw genedyl aelwit y coranneit. Mab. iii. 299.

A holl ddynion o holl ddoniau. Ieu. ap Rhydderch.

§ 1283. In the following, *un* would seem to be understood;

Myned a wnaethan i dorri pobei fedd. Iolo MSS. 172.

Er cael gan ambell arall. Ib. 180.

§ 1284. These admit of being employed with or without a noun; *amryw, amrai, cyfryw, y fath, llawer, oll, rhai, un, yr un, unrhyw*, (the same,) *y chydig, y naill, arall, sawl, dim, neb*.

§ 1285. *Ambell* is usually followed by a singular noun, or a substantive word; as above. Nevertheless, it is found sometimes with plural words, and in an unusual position; as,

Braidd un o bymtheg a fedr ddarlain ac ygrifenu Cymmraeg, ac o'r achaws hyn y mae, bod llyfrau Cymmraeg mor ambell. Sion Trefredyn.

§ 1286. *Amryw* and *amrai*=*aml ryw* and *aml rai*, take a plural noun; as,

Mwy o wirodydd amryw adar. L. G. Cothi.

But sometimes *amryw* is followed by a noun in the singular; as,

Amryw vwyd môr vydd mewn bro a mynydd. Ib.

§ 1287. *Cyfryw* and *y fath* take after them both singular and plural nouns; as, *y cyfryw ddyn, y cyfryw ddynion*; *y fath ddyn, y fath ddynion*. *Cyfryw* is properly an adjective; hence, after the article *y* denoting a feminine, it assumes the soft sound; as, *y gyfryw ddynes*. *Bath* is a substantive of the feminine gender, and hence it always takes the soft sound after *y*.

§ 1288. *Dim* has, primarily and for the most part, a positive meaning; as,

Nid da rhy o ddim. Adage.

Gouyn idaw awydyat of dim ywrth twrch trwyth. Mab. ii. 243.

When it is used negatively, it is preceded by a negative particle, as if the denial emanated wholly from it; thus,

Nid tebyg dim bod heb ddim. Adage.

Even in such expressions as *dim gwaith, dim yn y byd*, a negative particle is implied.

§ 1289. Nevertheless, it seems occasionally to involve a negative meaning, and to express a "nihil cogitabile," though not a "nihil purum;" as,

Nid dirgel ond *dim*,
 Nid *dim* ond anveidrol,
 Nid anveidrol ond Duw,
 Nid Duw ond *dim*,
 Nid *dim* ond dirgel,
 Nid dirgel ond Duw. Cattwg Ddoeth.

§ 1290. *Holl* and *oll* differ in that *holl* precedes, and *oll* follows, the noun. Each takes a singular or plural noun, according as it means every part of one whole, or every individual of one species.

Mae hi yn fwy na'r ddaiar *oll*, ac yn cynnyddu eto beunydd, ac yn gan erchyll-ach na *holl* uffern. Bardd Cwsg.

Argwaged *oll* is vy llaw inneu. Mab. i. 5.

Y byd ai *holl* wledydd a feddianan. Ieu Trwch y Daran.

Oll is sometimes used with an ellipsis of the substantive word with which it agrees; as,

Fally ef heb fall ofeg
 Am *oll* i ben diben deg. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

§ 1291. *Llawer*, when it refers to number, is followed by a singular noun; as,

Llawer dyn a wna cynnyg drwg dros dda. Adage.

Llawer rhai, however, is an exception.

§ 1292. When it is followed by the preposition *o*, it may refer to number or quantity; as,

Llawer o waith a wna *llawer o ddwyllaw*. Adage.

§ 1293. When it stands alone, it takes either a singular or a plural verb, according to the conditions of section xlix.

Llawer a sieryd llawer o wragedd. Adage.

Llawer a ddywedant wrthyl. Matth. vii. 22.

§ 1294. *Ychydig*, when it refers to quantity, &c., takes a singular noun, with or without the preposition *o*; as,

Ychydig laeth ac hyny yn enwyn. Myv. Arch. iii. 178.

Ychydig o wall, ac *ychydig o anghyriawnder*. Ib. 71.

§ 1295. When it refers to numerical objects, it takes a plural noun, with or without the preposition *o*; as,

Ac *ychydig ddynion* a adawyd. Es. xxiv. 6.

Ychydig o anwydau drwg. Myv. Arch. iii. 71.

§ 1296. *Ychydig*, when used by itself, takes a singular verb; as,

Ychydig yn aml a wna *llawer*. Adage.

§ 1297. *Naill* and *y llall*, or, according to the Gwentian dialect, *nall* and *y llall*, are correlatives; as,

Nid oes ond dim rhwng y naill a'r llall. Adage.

Y neill ohonunt yn was gwinen, ar llall yn was melyn. Mab i. 263.

Lle ydd atebont y naill i'r llall a'r nall i'r llall. Cyf. y Beirdd, 160.

§ 1298. When the substantive is expressed, *arall* takes the place of *y llall*; as,

Ar neill hanner a'r hanner arall. Mab. i. 274.

Yn y neill law ... ar y llaw arall. Ib. i. 271.

§ 1299. Sometimes, however, *llaill* is used; thus,

Goualus oed or *llaillparth* odebygu briaw gareint yn ymbwrd argwyr. Mab. ii. 89.

§ 1300. *Pob* is most usually followed by a noun in the singular; as,

Pob gwlad yn ei harfer. Adage.

§ 1301. But when it signifies every sort or kind, it has a plural noun after it; as,

Efe a gedwis lawer o bob anifeiliaid—o bob rhyw or math. Iolo MSS. 4.

§ 1302. *Pawb* is erroneously considered by Zeuss as another form of *pob*. It is never followed by a noun, and has a singular or a plural verb, as the act may be considered as that of individuals severally, or of the whole collectively; as,

Pawb a chwennych anrhydedd. Myv. Arch. iii. 157.

Pawb a'i ohwedl cantho. Ib.

*Yn ymyl nant
Pawb ai clywant.* Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

§ 1303. *Rhyw* takes a singular or plural noun; as,

Ryw genedyf nolwit y coranneit. Mab. iii. 299.

Ydywawt lleuelis wrth yvrawt yrodei ryw brywat. Ib. iii. 301.

§ 1304. *Rhai* is plural, and hence is followed by a plural noun, and plural verb; as,

Rhai eiriau ydynt unsain unsynawyr yn y Gymraeg a'r Saes'neg. Cyf. y Beirdd.

Rhai a ganant Groes a Thraws Gynghanedd ar baladr Toddaid Englyn. Cyf. y Beirdd, 140.

§ 1305. *Sawl*, when preceded by *pa*, expressed or understood, and followed by a noun, forms a question; as,

Pa sawl llyfr, pa sawl bedd, pa sawl clul, pa sawl clefyd, pa sawl cenad ac arwydd a welsoch? Bardd Cwag.

§ 1306. When preceded by *y*, and not followed by a noun, it is a relative pronoun, either singular or plural; more commonly the latter;

Y sawl ni rodia, dedwydd yw. Ed. Prys.

Y sawl ae gwelel kyflawn vydei oe serch. Mab. iii. 218.

Mae cyfraith Crist yn addaw cymmyrd gofal arbenig am y sawl a ufuddhant i'r gorchymynion hyny. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1307. Sometimes the article is omitted; as,

*Sawl a 'mddriedant yn Nuw Ion,
Byddant fel Seion fynydd.* Ed. Prys.

§ 1308. *Un*, as before stated, is properly a numeral, and is both used definitely and indefinitely.

§ 1309. When it is indefinite, it is generally, but not always, preceded by a negative; as,

Nid ellir na dywedyd na meddwl wa rheswm am hyny. Ed. Samuel.

Ai gwaeth finneu nag wadyd. Myv. Arch. i. 179.

§ 1310. When preceded by the article *yr*, it signifies the *one*; the *same*; *whosoever*; as,

Os bwrw dyn yr wa ergyd ganwaith ar ol eu gilydd. Ed. Samuel.

Ni welaf ddim o'th gollen na'th ffon cylch, ebe'r un. Iolo MSS. 156.

§ 1311. The article is sometimes put before *un*, when *un* signifies simply *one* or *any*; as,

*Ni thynav ddraen o droed yr un
A'i ddodi yn fy nhroed vy hun.* Myv. Arch. iii. 168.

Gellid gweled nas meddai yr un galon. Ellis Wynne.

§ 1312. *Unrhyw*, being compounded of *un* and *rhyw*, takes either a singular or plural noun after it; as,

A phob un yn cydgyfeirio megys at yr unrhyw ddyben. Ed. Samuel.

Yn canmol y llyfrau hyny wrth yr unrhyw enwau. Ib.

§ 1313. *Neb* is strictly a substantive pronoun, and hence stands by itself. It is generally used with a negative particle; as,

Nys atwaenat neb or llu ef. Mab. i. 24.

*Ni roe neb, ac ni rown i
Seren bren er ei sori.* Gr. Gryg.

§ 1314. When preceded by *y*, it forms a relative; as,

Y neb a saetho ar adrybedd a gyll ei saeth. Adage.

Fo a ddisymythodd Rhun i blas Elphin y neb a dderhyniwyd i mewn yn llawen. Mab. iii. 332.

Fo a aeth ar hys ar fodrwy amdanaw yn goelfain i'r Brenin i'r *neb* a dangoscs ef ddarfod iddo ef lygru. Ib. 333.

Ai dug ef odd yno gar bronny y Brenin, y *neb* a ofynodd iddo pa bethydoedd ef, ag o ba le i daethai ef? *neb* a atebawdd y Brenin ar wawd, fal y gweler yma. Ib. 339.

This definite use of *neb* is not very usual.

§ 1315. *Neb* is sometimes accompanied by a noun or substantive word, both in composition and separately; as,

Heb dywedut vngeir wrth *neb ryw* gristawn. Mab. i. 266.

Nid mor ddjarheb *nebn*
I'n gwlad ni a hi ei hun. D. ab Gwilym.

SECTION CXVII.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 1316. Though these pronouns are in section lvi. divided into two classes, viz., such as answer to an antecedent, and those that denote an indefinite relation, and interrogation; in other words, into simple and indefinite relatives; it should be added, moreover, that many of the former class are often employed to represent those of the latter.

§ 1317. The form *yr hwnn*, &c., agrees with its antecedent in gender and number; as,

Ai ferch ef Eurgain a briodes *Bendefg* o Rufeinwr *yr hwnn* a ddaeth gyda hi i Gymru. Iolo MSS. 7.

Estauell ebreynya *er hon* ebo en keacu endy. Laws, i. 11. 4.

§ 1318. *Yr hynn* usually refers to the word *peth*, expressed or understood; or to a whole or a part of a sentence, as its antecedent; as,

Ev avennyo fford itti ual y keffych *yr hynn* a geisiy. Mab. i. 6.

Divlas gan bob un *yr hyn* a gynnygir heb ei ovyn. Bardd Glas.

§ 1319. *Y neb*, and *yr un*, agree with their antecedent in number;

Fo a ddaeth i *Lys Maelgwn*, y *neb* a oedd yn ei frenhinol radd. Mab. iii. 337.

§ 1320. *Pwy bynnag* is indeclinable; but *pa bynnag* may be of any gender and number, according to the word that is placed between the two parts of the pronoun; as,

Vy mam heb y peredur aerchis ymi *pale bynnac* y gwelwn vwyt a diawt y gymryt. Mab. i. 239.

§ 1321. *Y sawl*, as a simple relative, generally refers to a plural antecedent, and is of all genders;

Chwychedi a ewoh drosodd yn arfogion o flaen eich brodyr, y *sawl ydych* godym o nerth. Joe. i. 14.

§ 1322. If the antecedent is a noun aggregate, the relative is sometimes singular, sometimes plural ; according to the idea entertained in the mind, either of the whole in its corporate capacity, or of the several individuals composing the whole ; thus,

Wela dyrfa fawr, yr hon ni allai neb ei rhifo. Rev. vii. 9.

A holl gaeth-glud Judah, *yr rhai* a aethant i Babilon. Jer. xxviii. 4.

§ 1323. The verb of the relative clause agrees in number and person with the antecedent ; subject, however, to the peculiarities mentioned under the syntax of the verb. See section cvi.

Nyni, y sawl a gymmerasom arnom gael a chyfaddef Efengyl Crist. M. Kyffin.

§ 1324. When the relative has two antecedents of different persons, the verb of the relative clause may refer to either of them ; as,

*Mi yw'r gwos gweddeiddglas glan,
A fydd o fodd ei galon.* See p. 180.

O (ti) drugaroccaf Dad, *yr Hwn* o'th raslon ddaioni a *wrandewaist ddifrifol* weddïau dy Eglwys. Com. Prayer.

§ 1325. The relative is usually placed near its antecedent, and before its own verb ; as,

Y gwr bonheddig, yr hwn oedd ei feistr a ymddangoses iddo. Iolo MSS. 160.

§ 1326. To prevent ambiguity, or where emphasis is necessary, the antecedent is repeated after *yr hwnn, yr honn, yr hynn* ; as,

Dygywd ef ai ferch Eurgen i'r ffydd ynghrist gan Iïid Sant Gwr o'r Israel, yr hwn Iïid a ddaeth o Ryfain. Iolo MSS. 149.

When the initial of the repeated antecedent is a consonant, the relative governs it in the soft sound.

§ 1327. When the relative is under government of a preposition, the preposition is sometimes placed before the relative ; as,

Ac yn gwahardd dynion rhag pob afendïd buchedd ; yn yr hyn y mae'r cyfryw ysbrydion yn ymhyfrïdu. Ed. Samuel.

Sometimes after the verb of the clause, in the form of a pronominal preposition ; as,

Nid eang ond yr hyn nis gellir ing *arno*, sev Duw. Myv. Arch. iii. 26.

Rhyw brif grediniathau cyffredinol y mae pawb yn cytuno yddynt, a'r rhai y maent yn gwreiddio eu hamryfusedd arnynt. Ed. Samuel.

Nid oes fodd mai yr un bobl oedd *yr hwn* y dywed *Esai am dano.* Ib.

§ 1328. When no pronominal preposition can be formed, the simple preposition and pronoun are used ; thus,

Na'r hwn nid allwn mo'r bod yn anghydnabyddus *âg ef.* Ed. Samuel.

§ 1329. The antecedent of the relative is sometimes omitted, especially if the relative be used indefinitely.

Y neb a fo a march ganddo a geiff farch yn menthyg. Adage.

Pwy bynnag a fwrir i'r pwll hwn ni bydd coffa am dano ger bron Duw. Iolo MSS. 192.

Nid gwir ond *yr hwn* nis gellir ei amgen. Myv. Arch. iii. 14.

§ 1330 When the omitted antecedent is governed by a preposition, the preposition is put before the relative pronoun ; as,

O ymddiried ymddiried *t'r wa* a *wyr* dy raid. Myv. Arch. iii. 184.

§ 1331. The relative pronoun is very often omitted. In this case the verbal particle *a* is for the most part carefully retained in affirmative clauses.

Docco lle mae ar fon prysgollen *a* weli di yn union o'th flaen oeco. Iolo MSS. 156.

Gwae *a* greto i bob chwedyl *a* glywo. Myv. Arch. iii. 184.

§ 1332. But to this rule there are some exceptions, especially where the verb of the relative clause is *bod* ; as,

Er mwyn argyhoeddi drygioni ac anghyfiawnder yr Iuddewon oeddynt *yn byw* yn amser Crist. Ed. Samuel.

Os meddwl neb mai gwell oedd *y sawl* oeddynt *yn byw* yn amser yr Iesu. Ib.

§ 1333. When the omitted relative is governed by a preposition, the preposition stands after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition ; as,

Gwnaed pob un ei oreu *yn y* cyflwr ai doded *yn*ddo gan Dduw. Iolo MSS. 155.

Nid oes un sylwedd *y* mae natur yr enaid *yn* ymgynnal *arno*. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1334. Or, when no pronominal preposition is applicable, a simple preposition and a pronoun are used ; as,

Nid oes diffyg prophwydoliaethau a ragfyneasant *y* darfyddai am yr aberthau *yr ym* *yn* ymddadleu *o'u herwydd*. Ed. Samuel.

Po odidocaf fo'r pethau *y* bo'r meddwl neu yr enaid *yn* ymgyffwrdd neu *yn* ymsynied *â hwynt*. Ib.

§ 1335. When point of time is expressed by the relative clause, the relative and preposition are sometimes left out ; as,

Y dydd yr oeddych eich dau
Y byd oedd lawn gwybodau. L. G. Cothi.

Ni bu ddim arfer enwaediad yr holl amser *y* bu'r Hebraeid *yn* ymdeith *yn* ni-faethwch Arabia. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1336. When both the antecedent and relative are under government of prepositions, and the antecedent is omitted, the preposition that governs the relative comes after the verb in the form of a pronominal preposition ; as, Gofynwch *t'r hwn* *y* soniasoch *am dano*.

§ 1337. But where no pronominal preposition is applicable, a simple preposition and a pronoun are used ; as,

A bod hyny gwedi ei ddadguddio o'r nef *t'r hwn* *y* dyweddiadid hi *ag ef*. Ed. Samuel.

A chymhwys yw bod mwy gofal am yr *hwn* y lluniwyd pothau eraill o'i *blegid*.
Ib.

§ 1338. Sometimes a preposition is put before the relative and repeated after the verb ; as,

Wedi dangos einioes i ba amgylchiadau tosturus y dygwyd yr hen Frutaniaid
iddynt. Theo. Evans.

§ 1339. Occasionally both the relative and antecedent are omitted in the same sentence ; as,

A laddo a leddir. Motto.

Ni waeth i ti'r Cymro caredig o ben pwy daethant a well yma. Myv.
Arch. iii. 4.

§ 1340. When both are left out, and the omitted antecedent is under government of a preposition, the preposition occupies the same position as it would were the antecedent expressed ; as,

Ni wiw clod ond i a'i dirpero. Myv. Arch. iii. 57.

Nid oes gariad ond i a garo. Ib. 56.

§ 1341. When the omitted relative is under government of a preposition, the preposition is placed after the verb of the relative clause, in the form of a pronominal preposition ; or where none such is applicable, then a simple preposition and a pronoun are used.

Nid brenin ond nas gellir brenin *arno*, sev Duw. Myv. Arch. iii. 26.

§ 1342. Relative clauses, which denote possession, are expressed in various ways.

1. By setting the relative pronoun as the subject of the clause, and placing the governing noun under the government of the preposition *d* ; as,

Y rhai oedd hi'u synwyras yn effro. Theo. Evans.

2. By placing the relative in an absolute state at the beginning of the clause, and making the governing noun the subject of the verb ; as,

Yr *hwn* y mas ei einioes ynddo. Gen. i. 30.

3. By placing the governing noun first, and then the relative in a possessive state ; as,

Tad yr *hwn* a laddwyd yn y llofruddiaeth greulawn. Theo. Evans.

§ 1343. The negative particles *ni*, *nid*, and *nis*, follow simple relatives, expressed or understood ; as,

Ger bron y Pab, yr *hwn* *ni* ddichon gangymmyrd. M. Kyffin.

§ 1344. *Na*, *nad*, and *nas*, are used after indefinite relatives, and in simple relative clauses when the heading is omitted ; as,

Er lles y neb *na* chwasant gan Dduw ond y bychandawd a'r tlodi. Myv.
Arch. iii. 105.

Car na vo'th dygystal er boddu Duw, a chael bendith y neb cyvryw a garot. Myv. Arch. iii. 105.

§ 1345. Nevertheless, the exceptions are numerous ;
Drwg y pawl nŷ savo vlyddydn. Myv. Arch. iii. 161.

Drwg y swydd nŷ tal ei gwasanaethu. Ib.

Y neb nŷ chreto gymmeryd ei eiddo ei hun. Ib. 38.

§ 1346. *Dg* and *a'r*, whether rightly or not, are considered by some as relative pronouns.

Condemnio yr ydym ni bob math o'r hen Hereticaid, *a'r* y mae ein gwrthwynebwy'r yn haeru arnom eu galw a' u hadgyfodi o uffern. M. Kyffin.

§ 1347. Occasionally *a'r* is added after another relative ; as,
Beth bynnag *a'r* a ofynant. Matth. xvii. 19.

§ 1348. *Pwy* is singular and plural, and of all genders ; as,
Ac yna y manegais i yr gwr *pwv* oeddwn. Mab. i. 5.

Pwv wyt ti, *pwv* wyt tithau. Ib. i. 31.

Gofyn aoruc owein *pwv* oed ywraic. Ib. i. 17.

Pwv eu gubideyt, *pwv* eu testyon. Laws. ii. 11, 15.

§ 1349. *Pwv* generally stands alone, unaccompanied by a noun ; as above.

§ 1350. But it is also found joined to a substantive ; as,

Eneid *pwv* ei hadneu
Pwv bryd ei haelodeu. Taliesin.

Pwv llei y geneu
Pwv meint eu mein hen. Ib.

§ 1351. *Pa* or *py* is usually joined to a substantive ; as,

Pa druc digoneis inheu ytti ? Mab. i. 9.

Dywet vy chwaer heb y peredur *pa diaspedein* ymysd arnat ? Ib. i. 248.

Py diaspedein yw hwnn weithon ? Ib. i. 16.

Gofyn aoruc ef ymi *pa* le y mynn vynet adywedut aorugum idaw *py ryw* wr oedwn *aphy beth* a geisswn. Ib. i. 7.

§ 1352. Sometimes these pronouns stand alone ; as,

Y mawr drugarawg Dduw *pa* wnav. Ll. Hen.

Py drycheffs mynydd ?
Py gynheil magwyr ? Taliesin.

§ 1353. *Pa* or *py* is sometimes omitted, the following word acquiring an interrogative character ; thus,

Beth a dal onid dialedd,
Da'r byd, wrth fyned i'r bedd ? Mer. ab Rhys.

SECTION CXVIII.

REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS.

§ 1354. In old writings the reflexive pronoun is frequently joined to the possessive; as,

Pwy aerehis itti eisted yna. *myhun* heb ynteu. Mab. ii. 65.

Kyhyrdu kewilyd amiui ao *athyhan*. Ib. ii. 25.

Ef *ehun* yny priawt person. Ib. iii. 303.

Y lladawd peredr y iarll *ehunan*. Ib. ii. 243.

Dywedut yryngtunt *ehunein*. Ib. ii. 39.

§ 1355. In the following instance it occurs without a possessive ;

Drwc arnom ny *hunein*. Mab. iii. 29.

SECTION CXIX.

RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS.

§ 1356. For the most part, in our older documents, the possessive that usually precedes *gilydd* does not appear, or else it assumes a prepositional form ; as,

Dir carnou fin tref peren or carn *di cild* diguaret bet imor hafren. Lib. Land. 226.

Dyrnodeu calet tost arodei bawp onadunt *y gilyd*. Mab. ii. 51.

O drwc *i gilyd* y kaffat y grib. Ib. ii. 246.

Or pryt *y gilyd*. Ib. iii. 139.

Pob un onadunt aeth dwylaw mynwgyl *y gilyd*. ac o vrawdoryawl garyat pob vn aressawawd *ygilyd* onadunt. Ib. iii. 300.

§ 1357. Sometimes *prwy* is placed immediately before *gilydd* ; as O fan *bwy* gilydd. Here *prwy* is an adverb, signifying *to* or *towards* ;

Ny weleis or mor *bwy* mor
Marchawc a vey waeth. Taliesin.

SECTION CXX.

SUFFIX PRONOUNS.

§ 1358. When a degree of emphasis is required, the personal pronoun is added after the suffix pronoun of the three first classes ; as,

Arglwyd arthur heb y gwalchmei llyma owein gwedy goruot *arnaſ*. Mab. i. 25.

Nywnaeth *y gwr ymdanaſ* ovawred. Ib. i. 10.

Ac yr duw ac *groſi ynneu* par di y uedeginyaethu ef. Ib. i. 267.

§ 1359. When the pronouns of the fourth class are to be expressed emphatically, they are thus formed ;

1. I mi	I ni
2. I ti	I chwi
3. { Iddo fe, iddo fo, Iddi hi	Iddynt hwy, iddynhw

O Dduw ! rhoed einioes i'r ddau,
Os myn, rhoed oes i missaw. L. G. Cothi.

The elements of the word being thus disconnected one from the other, the emphasis falls naturally on the most important, which is the pronoun.

SECTION CXXI.

THE ARTICLE.

§ 1360. The article *y* is used before a consonant, and before the letter *w* when the syllable, of which it is the initial, is rotundison ; as,

Y gwr a oddef i lid ddwyn *y* blaen ar ei bwyll a wna ddrygwaith nis gellir byth ei ddadwneuthur. Iolo MSS. 155.

Yna gan feddwl gwell *y* dywed *y* wad, clod i Dduw *fy* mod *yn* wadd. Ib. 154.

§ 1361. *Yr* is used before a vowel, the aspirate *h*, and the letter *w* when it begins a sparsison syllable ; as,

Gwelwch ebe hi, maint cadarnach *yr* edau *yn* gyfrodedd nag *yn* ungor. Iolo MSS. 158.

Yna peris *yr* hen wraig iddynt gyfrodeddu *yr* holl belleni *yn* un rhaff. Iolo MSS. 158.

Ni cherir, *yn* llwyr,
Oni ddelo *yr* wyr. Adage.

§ 1362. Sometimes, especially in South Wales, the vowel *i*, when it forms a part of a diphthong, is preceded by *y* ; as,

Y iaith, ar ban aeth i'r bedd,
O'i thir a aeth i orwedd. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1363. When a word ending in a vowel precedes the article, the contracted form *'r* is frequently used, whether the following word begins with a vowel or a consonant ; as,

Ac *o'r* adail egoredig
Ev aeth adail divethedig. L. G. Cothi.

Hawdd tafu *'r* mynydd *'r* mor *yn* ol ei wahanu *y* naill garreg oddiwrth *y* llall. Iolo MSS. 159.

§ 1364. Anciently *ir* appears to have been the only form used, whether before vowels or consonants ; see § 890.

§ 1365. If a substantive or adjective of the masculine gender, singular or plural, follows the article, it retains the radical initial ; as,

Dechreu *yvet y med.* Mab. i. 2.

I'r tri oesawl yr a'r teirswydd. L. G. Cothi.

Ti yw'r llew dewis yn trulliau diod,
Dy vroder, llawer hwyntau yw'r llewod. Ib.

§ 1366. Except the numeral *dau*, which, although masculine, always takes the soft sound after the article ; as,

Dau gyrrydd, pobydd gwaith per. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1367. If a substantive or adjective of the feminine gender, and singular number, follows the article, its initial takes the soft sound ; as,

Mal y Bi ar ysguthan. Iolo MSS. 159.

Myned yn un y ddwy drefn. Ib. 216.

§ 1368. But a feminine substantive of the singular number, having *ll* or *rh* for its initial, retains the radical sound ; as,

A chŵyn yn Ngwynedd heddyw
A wna y lloer wen o'i lliw. L. G. Cothi.

Codi rhai y caed y rhod,
A'u gostwng o frig ystod. Edm. Prys.

§ 1369. A feminine adjective, however, is usually softened ; as, Y londeg fun ; y rywiog eneth.

§ 1370. *Pobl*, which is an aggregate noun of the common gender, has its initial softened after the article ; as,

Cyffesed y bobl yt Dduw Arglwydd
Cyffesent y bobloedd oll yt yn dy wydd. D. Ddu Hiraddug.

§ 1371. Plural feminines retain the radical sound ; as,

Cerdded y bum y gwledydd. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1372. The article always precedes the noun, or the noun and its concomitants, which it defines ; as,

Y gwr byth a gar roi barn. L. G. Cothi.

Y tri Owain yw'r trywyr. Ib.

§ 1373. When two or more definite nouns come together, one depending on, or governed by the other, the last noun only will admit of the article, or its equivalent ; as,

Cais nyth y drwg ynghessail gair da. Iolo MSS. 157.

Syr Ffwg yn son ar uchaf amser gwyl y Sul Gwyn. Ib. 183.

Yn llenwi pen a llannerch. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1374. When the former of two substantives is definite, and the latter indefinite, no article is used ; as,

Anwyl vab marchog ennyn tan a dur. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1375. When a demonstrative pronoun belongs to the former of two substantives, it is placed after the second, whilst the article usually precedes it ; as, Brenhin y gogoniant hwn.

§ 1376. Sometimes, however, the article is put before the former substantive ; as,

Y brenhin gogoniant hwn. Psalm xxiv. 8.

§ 1377. When neither of two nouns is definite, the article is of course altogether omitted ; as,

Rhodle dirgelvan. Myv. Arch. iii. 107.

§ 1378. When two nouns come together, the former having an article before it, the latter assumes the character of an adjective ; hence, if preceded by a masculine substantive, it retains its radical sound ; and if preceded by a feminine substantive it takes the soft sound ; as

Ban cad ceidwad ben osdair
Y cad pen dwywiad, neu dair. L. G. Cothi.

Oni chodo y seren ddydd yn eich calonnau chwi. 2 Peter i. 19.

§ 1379. When two nouns are connected by a preposition, the article may precede both ; as,

Goreu o'r gwenith, y moelaf. Adaga.

§ 1380. When two or more nouns come together, referring to the same person or thing, the article is placed before the first only ; as, y pwngc neu fatter ; though not always, as in the expression, y fan a'r lle.

§ 1381. When two or more nouns come together, and refer to different persons or things, the article, or its equivalent, is repeated before each ; as,

Dameg y geifr y defaid a'r bleiddiaid. Iolo MSS. 173.

O achub fi, fy Nuw, fy Ner. Edm. Prya.

§ 1382. An adjective preceded by an article, is equivalent to a substantive ; as,

Y diweddar a oddiwedder ar y vreuan ar hwnw y dielir. Myv. Arch. iii. 178.

§ 1383. The article, standing immediately before some demonstrative and indefinite pronouns, such as *hwnn*, *neb*, *sawl*, &c. serves to form relative pronouns ; as, *yr hwnn*, *y neb*, *y sawl*.

§ 1384. Names of persons, have, generally speaking, no article before them ; as,

Brynach wyddel oedd frenin Gwynedd. Iolo MSS. 84.

§ 1385. But when the person requires to be particularly referred to, an article goes before the name ; as,

Ar Lles hwnnw a elwir Lleirwg Sant. Iolo MSS. 38.

A'r Hywel a ddoddes gyfreithiau doethion a chyflawn ar wlad a chenedl y Cymry. Ib. 39.

§ 1386. Also when the name is made plural ; as,

Bual da ei ryw o'r Bledriaid. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1387. The name Jesus is, however, usually written *yr Iesu*—*ὁ Ἰησοῦς*.

§ 1388. Some names of places, (countries, towns, &c.,) are preceded by the article ; others are not.

The following have an article before them ; *yr America, yr India, yr Aipht, yr Iwerddon, yr Abernaw, y Bala, &c.*

The following have no articles before them, *Europa, Lloegr, Cymru, Ffraingc, Llundain, Llangollen, Corwen, Dinbych, Dolgellau, Aberystwyth, &c.* This class is by far more numerous than the preceding.

Ac aur Aravia'n grug a rivyn,
Ac aur yr Asia val egroesyn. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1389. Traces of the indefinite article under the forms *vn, vng*—English *an*, are still to be seen in the Armoric dialect ; as,

Vng mab bihan. Life of S. Nonna.

Euel vn merch. Ib.

Da vng mistr. Ib.

Me guel vng merch. Ib.

Greomp vng anclin. Ib.

Query ; is the Cymric *yn* allied to the same form ?

SECTION CXXII.

ADVERBS.

§ 1390. Some adverbs have but one place assigned to them in all sentences.

§ 1391. Adverbs of negation immediately precede the negative word ; as,

Ni chwsg Duw pan rydd wared. Adage.

Nid cynnafia brân â ohanu. Ib.

Nid ar unwaith y caed Herbin. Ib.

§ 1392. Adverbs of interrogation begin the sentence ; as,

A ddwg da drwg gynghor ? Adage.

Ai da gogan, ai addas ? Myv. Arch. iii. 144.

Ponid gwan truan trymder pechadur ? G. ab yr Ynad Coch.

§ 1393. Adverbs of comparison immediately precede the adjectives and adverbs modified by them ; as,

Gwedi Owein, Mon mor ddiobaith cyrdd. Seisyll.

§ 1394. Except *iaon*, which follows them ; as,

Och fi ! ai posibl, ebe fi, *yn athrist iaon*, ar glwyfo o'u cariad? Bardd Cwag.

§ 1395. The auxiliary affirmative adverbs, or verbal particles, immediately precede finite verbs ; as,

Duw yno a *wnaeth* dynion,
Val y *gwnaeth* Veilig a Non. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1396. Adverbs of quality, number, order, place, time, quantity, and doubting, have, in general, their position determined by emphasis.

SECTION CXXIII.

ADVERBS OF NUMBER.

§ 1397. These adverbs, when they stand foremost in the sentence, usually retain their radical form ; but when they follow the verb, their initial consonant is changed into the soft ; as,

Teirgweith y torrodd y llong arnaf. 2 Cor. xi. 25.

Gwynedd a ddyall *ganwaith*
Liw o'r aur i lywiaw'r iaith. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1398. Some are generally preceded by *yn*, particularly when they occur after the verb ; as, *yn unplyg*, *yn ddeublyg*.

SECTION CXXIV.

ADVERBS OF COMPARISON.

§ 1399. *Cyn*, *can*, *gan*, *digon*, *go*, *lled*, *mor*, *pur*, *rhy*, *tra*, and *iaon*, qualify adjectives and other adverbs.

§ 1400. *Tra* governs the first class of mutable consonants in the aspirate ; the second and third in the radical ; as, *Tra* *chreulon*, *tra* *gwir*, *tra* *llon*.

Taer tra *taer* am drom aer drwm gymynu. G. Brycheiniog.

Fwyr dra *fwyr dra* *llwyr dra* *lloegr* vethlv. Ib.

§ 1401. *Digon* governs the radical ; as,

Tybid y maent mai *digon* cymhwys a chymmedrol ydyw. M. Kyffin.

But *digon* may be placed after the word which it qualifies and in that case its initial is softened ; as *cymhwys* a *chymmedrol* *ddigon*.

§ 1402. The other adverbs in the above list govern the soft sound ; as, *cyn* *ddoethed*, *go* *lew*, *lled* *feddw*, *pur* *dda*.

Yr oedd cyn *ddyfned* y man hwnnw ac o'r nef i'r ddaear. Iolo MSS. 192.

Gan *wired* a'r Efenngyl. Adage.

Mor *glac*er a llyn llefrith. Adage.

Mor *liaus*. Oxf. Glos.

Nid rhy *galed* marw dros bob *gwir* a *chyfawn*. Adage.

§ 1403. Sometimes, *cyn*, *mor*, and *pur*, are followed by the radical of *ll* and *rh*; as,

Mor rhyfedd rhao mor fu roddiad. D. Benfras.

§ 1404. *Digon*, *go*, *lled*, *pur*, *rhy*, and *tra*, admit of being preceded by *yn*; and their initials are regulated accordingly; that is, they are softened, except *ll* and *rh*; as, *yn ddigon da*; *yn o lew*; *yn bur ddoeth*; *yn lled oer*; *yn rhy ddrud*.

Fel y gall pawb a ystyrio'r peth yn *lled* bwylllog ddeall yn eglur. Bardd Cwsg.

§ 1405. Those adverbs which are formed and preceded by *yn*, when they begin a sentence, generally throw off *yn*, and assume the radical sound; as,

Da y gwelsoch, gwell y del. Adage.

SECTION CXXV.

INTERROGATIVE ADVERBS.

§ 1406. *A* is the most simple and unemphatic of the interrogative particles, and is placed before finite verbs. The answer to the question made by it, may be affirmative or negative.

Oia norwyn dec a bery di bot vymarch i am aruen yn vnletty ami heno. Paraf yrofi a duw os gallaf ynlawen. Mab. i. 264.

§ 1407. When the verb is in the perfect tense, the answer is made by *do* or *naddo*, or by repeating the verb; as, *a welsoch chwi ef?* *Do* or *naddo*, or *gwelais ef*, or *ni welais ef*, or *do, mi a'i gwelais ef*.

Defroi aoruc arthur agofyn agygassei hayach. Do arglwyd heb yr owein dalym. Mab. i. 11.

Aatwaenost di y marchawo racco mawr. *nac atwen* heb yr ynteu. Ib. ii. 10.

§ 1408. When the verb is in any other tense, the answer is made by repeating the verb; as, *A bery di*, &c. *Paraf*, (see § 1406;) or by means of a corresponding tense of *gwneuthur*, and if emphatic with a repetition of the verb; as, *a ddysgir ef?* *Gwneir*; *gwneir, fe'i dysgir*.

§ 1409. *A* governs the soft sound; as above.

§ 1410. *Oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *ai ni*, *ai nid*, *ai nis*, *poni*, are, like *a*, placed before finite verbs, and generally expect an affirmative answer.

Oni haed dai hwn ei alw yn garn lleidr wrth y llall? Bardd Cwsg.

Ond yr un peth yw? Ib.

§ 1411. *Oni*, *poni*, and *ai ni*, are placed before consonants, and occasionally before the letter *h*, and govern the aspirate sound of the first class, the soft of the second and third; as, *oni chanfu efe?* *Ai ni ddaeth hi?*

Poni roddaist ti dy gred ar ddyfod attaf fi pan harohwyf i? Iolo MSS. 166.

Oni welsoch wreichionen o'n tân ni yn nhafodau'r tyngwyr? Bardd Cwsg.

§ 1412. *Onis* and *ai nis* are placed before consonants, and govern the radical; as, *onis gwnaeth efe?*

§ 1413. *Ai, onid,* and *ai nis* are placed before vowels and consonants; as,

Ai da gogan, ai addas? Myv. Arch. iii. 144.

Ai is more emphatic than *a*, and may stand before any word, except a finite verb. That is, it may stand before—

1. A substantive;

Ae gwr y arthur wyt ti? Mab. i. 243.

2. An adjective;

Och fi! *ai posibl,* ebe fi, yn athrist iawn, ar glwyfo o'u cariad. Bardd Cwsg.

3. A pronoun;

Ai myfi? St. Mark. xiv. 19.

4. An infinitive verb;

Ai tybied nad allwn i? Bardd Cwsg.

5. A participle;

Ai gwedi fy heneiddio? Gen. xviii. 12.

6. An adverb;

Ai yma y mae?

7. A conjunction;

Ai fel hyn y digwyddodd?

8. A preposition;

Ai yn y tŷ y mae?

§ 1414. *Ai* governs the radical sound, and may be answered affirmatively or negatively.

§ 1415. *Onid, ponid,* and *ai nid,* may precede all such words as come after *ai*, in addition to finite verbs. They govern the radical sound.

§ 1416. When a question is formed by *ai, onid, ponid,* or *ai nid,* the answer is made by *ie* or *nagel,* either alone, or followed by the word on which the emphasis lies.

Ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti heb ef. Ie myn vygkret heb y paredur. Mab. i. 244.

§ 1417. When, however, *onid, ai nid,* or *ponid,* come before those tenses of *bod* which begin with a vowel, the answer is made by repeating the verb; as, *onid oeddlet tithau yno? Oeddwn.*

§ 1418. Double questions, corresponding to *πότερον...ή*; or *utrum...an, whether...or,* are formed in Welsh, *whether* by *a, ai,* alone, or pre

ceded by *pa un*, *pa'r un*, or *pa un (pa'r un) bynnag*, and *or* by *ai*, *ynte*, *neu*. When *or* is signified, *no* is expressed by *ni* or *peidiaw*.

A fynni ddyfod i ti saith mlynedd o newyn yn dy wlad? neu ffoi dri mis o flaen dy elynion, a hwy yn dy erlid? Ai yate bod haint yn y wlad dri diwrnod? 2 Samuel, xxiv. 18.

SECTION CXXVI.

NEGATIVE ADVERBS.

§ 1419. The negative adverbs *ni*, *nid*, *nis*, *na*, *nad*, *nas*, *nac*, immediately precede the word to which they belong, and which they deny; **as**,

Ni ddaw gair drwg yn ol. Adage.

Nid rhyfel ond gwynt. Ib.

Eddewid nis gwnefer nid yw. Ib.

Och wyr, nad aethant yn wreigedd. Ib.

§ 1420. All these adverbs negative finite verbs, whilst *nid* and *nad*, negative other words also.

§ 1421. *Ni*, *nis*, *na*, *nas*, are used before finite verbs, having consonant initials.

Dyn a vygythio bawb ac na vo ar neb ei ovn. Myv. Arch. iii. 25.

Ni ddichon gwan ond gwaeddi. Ib.

§ 1422. *Ni* and *na*, govern the first class of mutable consonants in the aspirate; the second and third, in the soft; **as**,

Ni chyll, ni ddyfydd. Adage.

Ni lwydd golud a wader. Ib.

Gwr na charo ei garenydd. Myv. Arch. iii. 107.

Camp na vo da. Ib. 35.

§ 1423. *Nis* and *nas* govern the radical; **as**,

Ni cheiff bwyll nis pryno. Adage.

Nid tylawd ond nas cymmero. Ib.

§ 1424. The inflections of the verb *bod*, are after *ni* and *na*, put sometimes in the soft, sometimes in the radical; **as**,

Na rydd debyg i'r mor yn dy vynwes. Myv. Arch. iii. 59.

Ni ÷u ddrwg i un na ÷ai dda i arall. Adage.

§ 1425. When a verb is softened by the omission of the letter *g*, *ni* and *na* will stand before the vowel which may then follow; **as**,

Ni wyr yn llwyr namyn llyvyr. Myv. Arch. iii. 169.

Ni ad annoeth ei orvod. Ib. 166.

§ 1426. But not always ; thus,

Nid ellir coed o unpren. Myv. Arch. 170.

§ 1427. Sometimes *ni* and *na* precede words that begin radically with vowels ; as,

Ovned ev *na* ovno vedd. Cattwg Ddoeth.

Doeth *ni* ysgar a'i ystrev. Ib.

§ 1428. *Nid* and *nad* are placed before finite verbs with vowel initials ; as,

Nid ymgel drwg lle bo. Adage.

Och wyr, *nad* aethant yn wreigedd. Ib.

§ 1429. *Na* and *nac* are used,

1. Before imperative verbs ; as,

Na ddal dy dŷ wrth gynghor dy ddrwyddedawg. Adage.

2. In negative answers ; as,

A fu ei ddoethach hyd Fon !

Na fu un ; nef i Einion. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1430. *Na* is used before a consonant, and *nac* before a vowel ; as,

Na fynych dramwy lle bo mwyaf dy groesaw. Adage.

Aatwsenost di y marchawc racoo mawr. *nac* atwen heb yr ynteu. Mab. ii. 16.

§ 1431. *Na* and *nac*, being used with verbs in the imperative, forbid ; while *ni* and *nid*, being used in indicative sentences, deny.

§ 1432. This last *na*, which is a modification of *nac*, has the same government as *na*, the short form of *nad* ; as,

Na choll dy henffordd er dy ffordd newydd. Adage.

Na ddos â gwr wrth ei faint. Ib.

§ 1433. The preceding rules regard finite verbs ; but if the infinitive verb, or any other part of speech, be the negated term, *nid* and *nad* solely can be employed, which in this case may be followed by consonants as well as by vowels, and will always require the radical sound after them ; as,

Nid myned a ddel eilwaith. Adage.

Nid tân heb eirias. Ib.

Nid llafurus llaw gywraint. Ib.

Dywedut wrthunt awnaethpwy, *nat* yr amarch arnunt y dodit islaw y tsau. Mab. i. 276.

§ 1434. *Ni*, *nid*, *nis*, (=oŵ, non,) are followed by the indicative mood ; as,

Ni thyf egin yn marchnad. Adage.

Nid â drwg fel y del. Ib.

Heb air *niagellir* iaith. Myv. Arch. iii. 114.

§ 1435. *Na, nad, nas*, (= $\mu\eta$, *ne*,) are followed generally by the optative and conditional moods ; as,

Och Dduw Tad, o chuddiwyd hi,
Nad oeddwn amdo iddi. D. Nanmor.

§ 1436. Where there are two or more negatives, the first is generally put in the indicative form, the other or others in the subjunctive; neither does one destroy the force of the other, but rather enhance it ; as,

Ny welynt neb ryw dim, *na* thy nac aniuell, *na* mwo, *na* than, *na* dyn, *na* chyanned. Mab. iii. 146.

§ 1437. *Dim* and *no* are used as auxiliaries to other negatives, with the view of rendering them more emphatic ; as,

Ni fedrant ganfod *mo* ddichellion dynion. Ed. Samuel.

Ni chigleu i *dim*. Mab. ii. 232. 233.

§ 1438. *Mo* is but seldom met with in old writings, and is supposed to be a contraction of *dim o*. The two forms, when employed as auxiliary adverbs, always follow the verb.

SECTION CXXVII.

CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 1439. Most conjunctions stand at the beginning of the sentences to which they belong ; but some may occupy any other place.

§ 1440. Some have merely a literal difference to afford means of avoiding every hiatus and discordant sound. These are *a, ac ; a, ag ; na, nac ; no, noc, nog ; o, od ; pe, ped ; oni, onid*.

§ 1441. There are certain conjunctions, which have others corresponding to them in the same, or in the following sentence ; such as,

Am hynny...no
Am hynny...nog
Can...a
Can...ag
Canys...a
Canys...ag
Canys...fal
Canys...ond
Chwaiih...na
Er...etto
Er hynny...eihr
Er hynny...ond
Mal...ag
Mal...felly
Mal...mai
Megys...ag
Megys...felly

Mor...a
Mor...ag
Mor...fal
Na...na
Naill...neu
Os...cansys
Pa un...ai
Pa yr un...ai
Pe...pei
Wrth hynny...no.

Can boethed a'r tan. Adage.

Nid ydyw *mor* gredadwy *a'r hyn* a goelir yn gyffredinol. Ed. Samuel.

Pa un bynag a wnelom *ai* edrych ar barthau'r byd sydd er ys talm o amser yn adnabyddus, *ai* ar y rhai a ddadguddiwyd yn ddiweddar. Ib.

SECTION CXXVIII.

COPULATIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 1442. *A* precedes words with consonant initials, and governs the first class in the aspirate; the second and third, in the radical; as,

Ygyt ac ef owein *achynon* *achei* *agwenhwyar.* Mab. i. 1.

Yn gyflawn llwrw enw *a rhiw* *a rhin.* Iolo MSS. 212.

§ 1443. *Ac* precedes words with vowel initials; as,

Ac aryant oed y bwrdd. Mab. i. 5.

Bydd hynaws *ac* amyneddgar. Y Dryw.

§ 1444. But before certain words, chiefly adverbs, prepositions, and other conjunctions, beginning with *f*, *h*, *m*, or *n*, *ac* is usually preferred to *a*.

Ag *fal* hynny y mae ymhlith pob rhyw ddynion. Iolo MSS. 156. 157.

Ag nid unnaws gwyraws a gwern. Ib. 158.

Ac *hwynt* yn rhoi gynt yn rhodd. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1445. In the Tudor period, and especially in South Wales, *ag* was the form in which our present *ac* was generally written; as,

Rhaid bod, y Iaith, yn hylithr, *ag* yn hylw, *ag* yn hylwydd, *ag* yn hynaws, *ag* yn helaeth. *Cyf. y* Beirdd, 11. 12.

§ 1446. But in our earliest records it bore the form of *hac*, and *a* was written *ha*; =Corn. *hag*, *ha*; Arm. *hac*, *ha*.

Bryeint eocluyd Teliau o Lanntaf a rodes breenhined hinn *ha* thouysogion Cymry yn trycyuydaul dy eocluyd Teliau *hac* dir escip oll gueti ef. Liber Landavensis, 113.

SECTION CXXIX.

SUPPOSITIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 1447. A fact supposition, or that which expresses possibility, or simple supposition, without any expression of uncertainty, is introduced by *o*, (= *ei*,) *od*, or *os*, in positive sentences; by *os'na*, *nad*, or *nas*, in negative sentences; by *os...ni*, *nid*, or *nis*, if the adverb is separated from *os*; as,

Os pwyll canwyll rhag cynhen,
Goreu canwyll yw pwyll pen. H. Cae Llwyd.

§ 1448. A contingent supposition, or that which expresses uncertainty with a prospect of decision, is introduced, both positively and negatively, by the same conjunctions. Negative sentences are also introduced by *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *oddieithr*, and *oddigerth*. (= *εαν μῆ*; *nisi*.)

O down ni ni a ddown. Adage.

Oni byddi gryf bydd gyfrwys. Ib.

Beth ynte *os* y Pab *ni* wyr oddiwrth hyn? M. Kyffin.

§ 1449. A non fact supposition, or that which expresses impossibility, or belief that the thing is not so, is introduced, in positive sentences, by *pe*, *pei*, *ped*, or *pes*; in negative sentences, by *pe na*, *pei na*, *nad*, or *nas*; or *pe*, *pei...ni*, &c. and by *oni*, *onid*, *onis*, *oddieithr*, and *oddigerth*.

§ 1450. *O*, *pe* and *pei* precede words with consonant initials; as,

Offoy di raddaw. ef ath ordiwed. Mab. i. 8.

Pei gwiagid goron am ben pob ffol ni a vyddem bawb yn vreninodd. Myv. Arch. iii. 5.

§ 1451. *O* governs the first class in the aspirate; the second and third in the radical. *Pe* and *pei* govern the radical sound; as,

O cleri di ni'th garo
Collaist a geraist yno. Myv. Arch. ii. 173.

O bydd llawen y bugail llawen vydd y tylwyth. Ib. 173.

Pei dywetai davawd a wybai geudawd,
Ni byddai gymydawg neb rhai. Ib. 175.

Petai y mynydd yn ymenyn, e wneid pen ag evo. Myv. Arch. iii. 188.

§ 1452. Sometimes *pe* and *pei* are found before vowels; as,

Pe á bawd y gweid gwa. Adage.

Ti aallut dywedut auei hygarach *pei* as mynhut. Mab. i. 259.

§ 1453. *Od* and *ped* precede those words which have vowel initials; as,

Od ydyw yn dawedog,
Is y chwadd eos a chog. D. ab Edmwnd.

§ 1454. Sometimes, also, they go before *f* and *h*; as,

Ped fai ddau neu fwy o dduwiau, yn gweithredu ac yn ewyllysio fel y mynent, hwy a allent ewyllysio yn wrthwynebol i'w gilydd. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1455. *Or, os, pes*, may be placed before vowels or consonants optionally.

Os ei yn was i eurych rhaid itti gario ei god. Myv. Arch. iii. 187.

Os saiv dim saved y bara a'r llath. Ib. 187.

§ 1456. *Oni, onid*, and *onis*, have the same peculiarities as *ni, nid*, and *nis*, from which they are derived. *Oddieithr* and *oddigerth* govern the radical sound.

§ 1457. *Neu* governs the soft sound; *ynte* and *ai* govern the radical; as,

Nyt oed un llestyr namyn eur neu aryant neu vueli. Myv. Arch. i. 5.

Naill ai mammaeth ai gwraig oi chov. Myv. Arch. iii. 186.

§ 1458. *Chwaith* is placed after the last disjoined word of a sentence; as,

*Ni'm dawr—
Na lithau na chwithau chwaith.* L. G. Cothi.

SECTION CXXX.

CAUSAL CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 1459. Conjunctions which more especially denote cause (*=στι, quod*) are followed in positive sentences, by the infinitive mood, or by the particle *y* or *gr*, with finite moods; in negative sentences by finite moods; as,

Ny buost gyuartal gan dy uot yn gedymdeith. Mab. ii. 51.

Gan nad ystyrir pob gwneuthuriawl yn lle ei achoesedig. Henri Perri.

O herwydd mai yno y cillodd y rhan fwyaf o wyr llen. Theo. Evans.

§ 1460. According to this construction, the conjunctions may sometimes be regarded as prepositions, and the sentences themselves as nouns substantive.

§ 1461. Explanatory conjunctions (*=γάρ, enim*) have their verbs always in the finite mood; as,

Ni allwn lai na chydabod fod ei hysgrythyrau yn wir o blegid ni thardda celwydd ond naill ai o anwybodaeth ai o feddwl drwg. Ed. Samuel.

Na wrthot ti neb a'th garo, canys Duw ni wrthyd y neb ai car. G. Fardd Glas.

§ 1462. *Am*, and *can*, or *gan*, have the soft sound after them; as,

Yn enwedig gan fod y pleidiau ymwahanawl hynny yn casau eu gilydd mor gynddeiriog. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1463. The others are followed by the radical ; as,

O blegid digon i brofi Rhagluniaeth Duw yw bod y fath beth ryw bryd. Ed. Samuel.

Nid oedd nemmawr a wyddai gelyfddydd a gwybodau Cerdd dafod namyn ym Morganwg, a Mon, a Cheredigion, *achos* colli y Tywysogion a gefnogaesaint y Frydyddion. Iolo MSS. 96.

§ 1464. But sometimes by the soft of the verb *bod* ; as,

Nid yn unig o *herwydd* fod yr Hebraeid erioed hyd heddyw yn cyhoedd fynegu mai trwy air a gorchymyn Duw y gosodwyd ef yn llywydd ar bobl Israel. Ed. Samuel.

O blegid fod Iudea'r pryd hwnw yn fwy adnabyddus nag o'r blaen. Ib.

§ 1465. The negative particles of the cause clause are *na, nad, nas* ; but after *mai* and *taw*, *ni, nid, nis* ; those of the explanatory clause are *ni, nid, nis*.

SECTION CXXXI.

ILLATIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 1466. All these conjunctions govern the radical sound, except *can* and *mor*, which govern the soft ;

Ag am hynny Cymraeg yw'r gair Parc. Cyf. y Beirdd, 16.

Crowwber, a gwyrain, neu iraidd, a newydd, *fal* dwr gwyra neu groyw, neu dwf blagar a bywyll *fal* tardd dail i glaswellt. Ib. 17.

§ 1467. The illative *yn* is never placed at the beginning of a sentence ;

Ry llofies *yn*af
Undawd gyfadef
Gan engylion nef
Neu ry-urdwyd. Gwalohmai.

§ 1468. *A*, or *ag, mal, megys*, are accompanied by *na, nad, nas*, in negative sentences ; the particles of negation, which the others take, are *ni, nid, nis*.

Ys dir y greddvant ynot, *val nas* gelli amgen no champau a wnant vodd dy gymodawg a bodd dy Dduw. G. Fardd Glas.

Am hynny ni chynhaliat fi ammod yr awr honn. Iolo MSS. 166.

SECTION CXXXII.

DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 1469. The disjunctive conjunction *na*, precedes words with consonant initials, and governs the first class in the aspirate ; the second and third, in the radical ; as,

Na marchawc *na* *phædestyr* ydel idaw. Mab. ii. 7.

§ 1470. *Nag* or *nac*, goes before words with vowel initials ; as,

Nac enyd awr, *nac* wa dydd. L. G. Cothi.

SECTION CXXXIII.

INADEQUATE ADVERSATIVES.

§ 1471. *Er* and *cyd*, are followed by a clause of the same construction as that which follows the causal conjunctions ; as,

Er bod llawer peth wedi llygru yn eu plith hwy. M. Kyffin.

Ni butra llaw dyn

Er gwneud da iddo ei hun. Myv. Arch. iii. 166.

Cyd gwichio y ven hi a ddwg ei llwyth. Myv. Arch. iii. 151.

Cyd y gallasai ereill yn well. H. Perri.

§ 1472. *Er* is moreover followed by an adjective in the equal degree ; as,

Ac *er* ei *hened* hi ymedy ev à phechod nes i'r pechod ei adael ev yn gyntav. Myv. Arch. iii. 244.

§ 1473. Both *er* and *cyd* govern the radical sound, as above.

§ 1474. Their negatives are *na*, *nad*, *nas*.

Er *nad* aeth hi erioed i mewn. Ellis Wynne.

Dymuno drwg *cyd* *nas* gallo. Ystyffan Fardd Teilo.

§ 1475. *Eisoes* and *er hynny* govern likewise the radical, but their particles of negation, are *ni*, *nid*, *nis*.

Eisoes pan ddyhangont o hynny ni chynhaliant ddim o'u haddewid. Iolo MSS. 166.

Er hynny, *ni* feiddiodd nac Iuddewon na Chenhedloedd wadu. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1476. *Eisoes* occurs but seldom at the commencement of a clause ;

Harallt Harffagyr *eisioes* a gerdasei cyn no hynny a dirfawr lu ganthaw. Hanes G. ab Cynan.

Moel-Mordaf *eisioes* oedd fab i'r frenhines honno. Ib.

Ac yntau *eisioes* mal ymladdwr Duw. Ib.

Ac yn y diwedd *eisioes* Gruffudd a hynaws. Ib.

SECTION CXXXIV.

TEMPORAL CONJUNCTIONS.

§ 1477. Some of these are construed with a finite mood ; others with a finite or the infinitive, optionally.

§ 1478. The following are construed with finite verbs ; *hyd*, *oni*, *omid*, *onis*, *pan*, *er pan*, *pryd*, *tan*, *tra*, *hyd oni*, &c. *Pryd* *bynnyag* ; and such as end with *ag*, as *cyhyd ag*. The particles of negation after these words are *na*, *nad*, *nas*.

Ban *ganwn*, heb un gainiog. L. G. Cothi.

Ni bu galed y Bedo ;
Ni bwyf ond yr *hyd y bo*. L. G. Cothi.

Tra vu Sion a Lleucu Llwyd. Ib.

Ni cheidw Cymmro *oni* gollo. Adage.

Fyderw ytti *pryd nat atteppych* y neb hediw. Mab. i. 18.

Pa uedwl yw dy teu di *pryd nad bwyttehych*. Ib. ii. 63.

§ 1479. The following are construed with finite, or infinitive verbs ;
cyn, gwedi or *wedi, ar ol, yn ol, nes, hyd nes* ; as,

Ofni yr wyf y bydd Beirdd a Chymreigyddion y wlad yn hir *cyn delont* i weled gwirionedd a chyflawnder yr addysg a roddir yn hyn o lyfr. Ed. Dafydd.

Cyn goneuthur y mynyddoedd. Ps. xc. 2.

Gwedy na welont hwy dydi drwc ryd gantunt. Mab. i. 14.

Gwedy llad y gwyr hynny. Ib. ii. 243.

§ 1480. The following conjunctions, when construed with finite verbs, ought to be followed by the affirmative particle *y*, or *yr* ; *cyn, pryd, wedi, ar ol, yn ol, hyd, nes, hyd nes, tra, pryd bynnag*, and such as end in *ag* ; as *cyhyd ag* ; as,

Tra y dychwelir draw'n eu hol. Ed. Prys.

§ 1481. But though such be the correct way of writing them, the particle is very frequently omitted ; see examples at §§ 1478, 1479.

§ 1482. *Pan, er pan*, and *tan*, may or may not be followed by the particle ; if they are not, they govern the verb in the soft sound ; as,

Yr pan golles y gyuoeth hyt hediw. Mab. ii. 21.

§ 1483. When *tra* occurs without the particle, it governs the first class in the aspirate ; the second and third, in the radical ; as,

Tra phery'r haf aml y cyrchaf. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Tra rheto yr ôg rheted y vrenan. Myv. Arch. iii. 177.

§ 1484. Sometimes it governs the soft sound, especially in finite moods of *bod* ; as,

Tra draetho genau, *tra ddyweto* tant. L. G. Cothi.

Tra eo y borva yn tyvu y bydd marw y march. Myv. Arch. iii. 177.

Ahi auu wreic *trauu* vyw hi. Mab. i. 36.

§ 1485. *Oni, onid, onis, hyd oni, &c.*, are never followed by *y* or *yr*. They have the same government as *ni, nid, nis*.

SECTION CXXXV.

PREPOSITIONS.

§ 1486. Prepositions are placed before the words to which they refer; as,

Heb Dduw heb ddim. Myv. Arch. iii. 130.

Nid bywyd ond yn Nuw. Ib. 113.

Baleh hedydd ar y tes. Ib. 112.

§ 1487. Several prepositions may be used in the same sentence, with the view of showing the different relations of things, with respect to each other; as,

O sul i sul ydd a y vorwyn yn wrach. Myv. Arch. iii. 174.

SECTION CXXXVI.

PREPOSITIONS PROPER.

§ 1488. Several of these may be classified into different groups, as bearing in some degree a mutual relationship; such are *mewn* and *yn*; *a*, *ag*, and *gan*; *at* and *i*; *erbyn*, *yn erbyn*, *i erbyn*; *cer*, *ger*; *cerfydd*, *gerfydd*; *cwedi*, *gwedi*; *cyda*, *gyda*; *can*, *gan*; *tan*, *dan*; *traws*, *draws*; *trwy*, *dryw*.

§ 1489. *Mewn* is placed before indefinite words; as,

Cyweithas mwynewas mewn lle didrain. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

§ 1490. *Yn* is placed before definitive words, whether the article be expressed, or virtually implied in another word; as,

Yn y lle y bo y da y rhoir ac y tycia. Myv. Arch. iii. 179.

Yn yr ing gorau yw y car. Ib.

O bydd ymryson rhwng Talaith Dinefwr a Thalaith y Berffraw yn Moa ym Mwlch y Pawl yng Ngiann Dyfi y dylai fod yr Eisteddfâ. Iolo MSS. 30.

Nerth Eryr yn ei ylvn. Mvv. Arch. iii. 33.

Yn nheyrnas y beilchion a bydd rhyfedd. Gildas.

Yn mlod deall y mae meddwl. Myv. Arch. iii. 178.

§ 1491. *Yn* is also placed before some indefinite words to form compound prepositions; as,

Ag fal bynny y mae ymlith pob ryw ddynion. Iolo MSS. 156.

§ 1492. *Yn* may be said to have four different functions.

1. When placed before the infinitive mood, it forms a participle, and governs the radical sound; as,

Hir am hoywfun yn dwyn anhun. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

2. When placed before a substantive or an adjective, it sometimes sets it in apposition with a preceding word, and governs the soft sound ; as,

Y mae y Prydyddion Cymreig yn galw Dwynwen yn Dduwies neu Santes cariad a serchogrwydd. Iolo MSS. 83.

3. Sometimes when placed before an adjective, it converts it into an adverb, and governs the soft sound ; as,

Nid diogel ymddiried yn fawr i air da nebun or byd. Iolo MSS. 157.

4. Sometimes when placed before a substantive, adjective, or a pronoun, it serves merely as a preposition, and governs the nasal or liquid sound ; as,

Efe a ddoded yn Benn rhaith ar y Gor a wnaeth yr Amherawdr Tewdws yng Nghaerworgorn. Iolo MSS. 131.

§ 1493. As a mere preposition it generally assimilates itself to the initial of the following word, if that be a consonant ; as,

Fm mon y llwyn gwernocco. Iolo MSS. 156.

Tudwg Sant o Gor Cennydd yng Ngwyr. Ib. 107.

§ 1494. Sometimes it coalesces with the word which it governs ; as, A threfnus a doeth *ymhen* ei theulu, a da iawn ei gair *ymhlith* ei chymmodogion. Iolo MSS. 161.

§ 1495. *A* and *ag* (=with,) denote the instrument ; the former is used before consonants, and governs the first class in the aspirate, the second and third in the radical ; the latter is placed before vowels ; as,

Taraw aoruc owein achledyf. Mab. i. 31.

Llanw crochan a dwfyr. Ib. i. 7.

Achyt ymborth ac wynt yny oedynt gynefin ac ef. Ib. i. 27.

§ 1496. *A* has an aspirate virtually attached to it, and should properly be written *ah* ; even *ac* should be written *ach*=Erse, *as*. The aspirate of the former passes over to the following consonant ; hence the reason why it is said to govern the aspirate.

Ha crip=pectine. Oxf. Gloss.

§ 1497. *Gan* (=by) denotes the agent, and governs the soft sound ; as,

Hoffach nu gan owein meint y gwr du no chan gynon. Mab. i. 13.

§ 1498. In the dialect of South Wales *y* is frequently put before *gan* ; as,

Ath annerch y gan ereint. a chan dy annerch ef am kymhellawd i byt yma. y wnetur dy ewyllys di amgodyant dy vorwyn y gan y corr. Mab. ii. 24.

§ 1499. *At* (=to, towards,) denotes proximity, and governs the soft sound ; as,

Uchenaid at ddoeth. Adage.

§ 1500. *I* (=to within, into, to,) denotes introgression, and governs the soft sound ; as,

A ei i lya heb neges doed a'i neges ganto. Myv. Arch. iii. 146.

§ 1501. The strong forms *cer*, *cerfydd*, *cwedi*, *cyda*, *can*, occur after *a* (and, as,) and *na*, (nor, than ;) in other circumstances the lighter forms *ger*, *gerfydd*, *gwedi*, *gyda*, *gan*, are generally used ; as,

Ar ymdidan a vynnwn gan wyr achaw wraged agaffwn. Mab. i. 10.

A chwedi hynny trichannlynedd yn ei grym ac ar ei goreu. Iolo MSS. 189.

§ 1502. The strong forms *tan*, *traws*, *trwy*, are placed after *a*, and *na* ; in other circumstances, these, or the lighter forms, *dan*, *dracws*, *drwy*, may be used optionally ; as,

Ar hynny owein adrewis dyrnawt ar y marchawc trwy y helym..atrwy y kroen ar kig ar asgwrn. Mab. i. 18.

Dodi aoruc y marchawc arllot y waew drwy awwynffrwy y march. Ib. i. 10.

§ 1503. It is the coalescence of the rough termination of the conjunctions (properly *ac* and *na*) with the initial of the following word ; that causes the above prepositions to assume the aspirate form.

§ 1504. Before nouns of time and distance of place the prepositions are sometimes expressed, but most frequently omitted. Nouns signifying point of time are preceded by *ar* ; those which signify duration of time or distance of place, take *am* or *tros* ; as

Felly y bu dros ychydig ddyddiau, eith ar diwrnod gwedi ymginiawa. Iolo MSS. 160.

Y rhyfeloedd a fuasai dros amryw flynyddoedd ymhob rhan o'r Ynys. Myv. Arch. ii. 528.

Ar, *am*, and *tros*, all govern the soft sound.

SECTION CXXXVII.

SUBSTANTIVE PREPOSITIONS.

§ 1505. These, properly speaking, being substantives, are followed by possessive rather than by objective nouns ; hence they retain the radical sound ; as,

Gorwen ton tuedd Porth wyddno. Ph. Brydydd.

Such is the case, likewise, with all prepositions that have substantive terminations, whether they be simple or compound.

SECTION CXXXVIII.
COMPOUND PREPOSITIONS.

§ 1506. When compound prepositions ending with a substantive precede personal pronouns, a corresponding possessive will intervene between the component parts of the prepositions ; as,

Iestyn ab Gwrgan a fu frenin ar ei ol ef. Iolo MSS. 15.

§ 1507. Where no emphasis is required the personal pronoun may be omitted, the possessive being sufficient to convey the meaning ; as,

A mab iddo a elwid Gilbert a ddaeth ar ei ol. Iolo MSS. 17.

§ 1508. *Heblaw*, by modern writers, is generally construed as a proper preposition ; but in mediæval compositions the possessive pronoun is frequently inserted between its component parts when it governs a personal pronoun, as in the case of compound prepositions.

Gwr melyn yn seyll ger eu llaw. Mab. i. 12.

SECTION CXXXVIX.
PRONOMINAL PREPOSITIONS.

§ 1509. When the pronoun requires to be expressed with a degree of emphasis, it is repeated after the pronominal preposition ; as,

Ac yna y gwybydafi dy dyfot tithen attaffi. Mab. i. 15. See Suffix Pronouns.

SECTION CXL.
INTERJECTIONS.

§ 1510. An interjection may occur in any part of a sentence.

§ 1511. When an interjection is placed before a substantive, adjective, or pronoun, it is followed by the soft sound ; as,

Oia norwyn dec a bery di. Mab. i. 264.

Gwas wi heb hi os om achaws i y mae. Mab. ii. 35.

§ 1512. When an interjection is omitted, the substantive or adjective under its government is most usually put in the soft sound ; but sometimes retains its radical initial.

Cadw fi, Dduw, can's rhois fy mhws
A'm coel yn dradwys arnad. Ed. Prys.

Duw, buost in' yn Arglwydd da. Ib.

§ 1513. When an interjection intervenes between a verb and its subject or object, it is followed by the soft sound ; as, *Nid yw yn tyfu, och! ddim.*

§ 1514. When it stands before a finite verb, the verb retains its radical sound ; as,

O cenwch fawl i Dduw ein nerth. Ed. Prys.

SECTION CXLI.

INITIAL MUTATIONS.

§ 1515. The consonants, that undergo a change or modification, when standing as the initial letters in words, are the nine following; c, p, t; g, b, d; ll, m, rh. They are called by Welsh Grammarians, umbratiles; and fore-cut letters. See § 131, 133.

§ 1516. These letters are divided into three classes, according to the modifications of which they are susceptible.

§ 1517. C, p, t, form the first class, and have each three changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the soft, nasal, and aspirate.

§ 1518. B, d, g, form the second class, and have each two changes or modifications of the radical form; namely, the soft, and the nasal.

§ 1519. Ll, m, rh, form the third class, and have each one change or modification of the radical form; namely, the soft.

These modifications are in Welsh Grammars designated by a term which signifies, predominants. See § 134.

§ 1520. It is to be observed that the words that govern the aspirate of the first class, govern the radical of the second; and those that govern the nasal of the first and second classes, and the aspirate of the first, govern the radical of the third class.

§ 1521. Except the words *ni*, *na*, and *oni*; which govern the first class in the aspirate, the second and third in the soft.

§ 1522. The following table will shew at one view the various modifications of mutable consonants.

		RADICAL.	SOFT.	NASAL.	ASPIRATE.
1st. Class.	C.	Câr	Gâr	Nghâr	Châr
	P.	Pen	Ben	Mhen	Phen
	T.	Tâd	Dâd	Nhâd	Thad
2nd. Class.	B.	Brawd	Frawd	Mrawd	
	D.	Dant	Ddant	Nant	
	G.	Gwr	Wr	Ngwr	
3rd. Class.	Ll.	Llaw	Law		
	M.	Mam	Fam		
	Rh.	Rhaw	Raw		

§ 1523. The general rule on the subject of mutations is, that whilst the more important word retains its radical, as indicative of strength, that which is subordinate has its initial softened. The nasal and aspirate are formed on euphonic principles, assimilating themselves, under certain circumstances, to the power of the final consonant of the preceding word.

SECTION CXLI.

SOFT SOUND.

§ 1524. The soft sound comes after common adjectives of the positive degree; as,

F' anwyl Feinir. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

§ 1525. Likewise after adjectives of the superlative degree, when they qualify definite nouns; as,

O drugaroccaf Dad. Com. Prayer.

§ 1526. But adjectives of the superlative degree, which qualify indefinite nouns; as well as adjectives of the comparative and equal degree, which are necessarily joined to indefinite words, retain the radical sound; as,

Gorau Uys ger llaw. L. G. Cothi.

Gwell gwr o'i berchi. Cattwg Ddoeth.

Wrth glywed dahed tyghed dewi. G. Brycheiniog.

The reason is, that an indefinite substantive is not as attributively allied to its adjective as a definite one; and therefore occupies an independent or a co-ordinate position.

§ 1527. Feminine nouns are changed into the soft after ordinal numbers; as,

Neu'r drydedd fann yn amrafaelodl wrth y ddeufann cyntaf o'r breichiau. Cyf. y Beirdd, 102.

§ 1528. *Ail* is the only ordinal that governs nouns masculine in the soft; thus,

Ail fab i Rys Brydydd oedd Ienan ap Rhys Brydydd. Iolo MSS. 201.

But this is not invariable, for we sometimes find the radical retained; as,

A'r hwyr a fu, a'r bore a fu, yr ail dydd. Gen. i. 8.

Yr ail modd o barth accen. Cyf. y Beirdd, 102.

§ 1529. Of the cardinal numbers, *un* feminine, *dau* masculine, and *dwy* feminine, are followed by the soft sound; as,

Heb un gydsain goll. Cyf. y Beirdd, 55.

Dau Frenin a fu gynt yn Ynys Prydein. Iolo MSS. 198.

Dwy wlad dano vo a vydd,

Dwy drev, a deudir uvydd. L. G. Cothi.

We occasionally find a radical after *un* feminine; thus,

A hyn a bair ymgydiad rhwng nn braich a'r llall. Cyf. y Beirdd, 58.

Whilst *ll* and *rh*, after the said numeral, always retain their radical form.

§ 1530. The indefinite pronouns govern the soft sound, except *dim*, *pob*, *llawer*, *un* and *yr un*, masculine, *rhai*, and *saol*.

Ymhob rhyw gyflwr a ddichon dyn ei ddwyn a'i oddef. Cyf. y Beirdd, 35.

Ni bydd yr unrhyw fyfyrddod ernynt. Ib. 19.

Yn brin mewn ambell fan. Ed. Samuel.

I holl Wynedd y lluniwyd. L. G. Cothi.

These, then, are to be regarded as adjectives, whilst the exceptions may be looked upon as substantives, the nouns following, being, as it were, either possessives, or put in apposition.

§ 1531. Adjectives and adverbs are put in the soft, after feminine nouns singular; as,

Daeaf *llodeuog*. Cyf. y Beirdd, 18.

§ 1532. The word *pobl* is treated as if it were a feminine noun of the singular number; thus its initial is softened after the article, and itself is followed by the soft sound; as,

Gweddia dros y *bobl*. D. Ddu. Hiraddug.

Can ranghawdd bodd yr Arglwydd ei *bobl dda* ddiwyd. Ib.

§ 1533. Substantives in the possessive case, used adjectively, are put in the soft after feminine nouns of the singular number; as,

Bu Bwyall *bronn* Bardd anghymmen

Yn naddu can i Wenllian. Rh. Goch ab Rhicert.

§ 1534. Common substantives and adjectives, used as agnomens after proper names of whatever gender, are put in the soft sound; as,

Gwion *Far*dd bach. Cyf. y Beirdd, 30.

Davydd *Goch*, Duw *vydd* o *gyleh*. L. G. Cothi.

§ 1535. Nouns put in apposition to personal pronouns are generally placed in the soft; as,

Erom ni *ddy*nion. Nicene Creed.

§ 1536. Nouns and adjective pronouns, which do not add anything to the description of the substantive, but merely define it in point of quantity and number, are not therefore co-ordinate with the substantive; hence when they follow it, their initials are softened; as,

Cybydd a *leinw* ei *gist* ag aur *ddigon*. Cattwg Ddoeth.

§ 1537. The article *y* governs a noun substantive of the feminine gender singular, or its accompaniments, in the soft sound; as,

Y *ferch* a *welais* yn *fwyn*. Cyf. y Beirdd, 212.

Y *wen* Fair neu Anna *forwyn*. D. I.I. Mathew.

For the reason, see § 1037.

§ 1538. Feminine nouns of the singular number beginning with *ll* or *rh*, generally retain the radical after *y*; thus,

Y lleuad pan fo lleiaf. Ior. Fynglwyd.

Codi rhai y caed y rhod. Ed. Prys.

It will have been observed, that these consonants vary frequently from all the others in respect of the law of mutation, even as a similar anomaly marks their forms in the bardic alphabet, being evidently of a later date than what are usually considered as their soft modifications.

§ 1539 The pronouns *dy*, *yth*, and *ei* masculine, govern the soft sound; as,

Dy ddiwedd byd fo Dydd Barn. Gutto'r Glyn.

Iach Baun dyg uwch benn ei dad. Ieuan Du'r Bilwg.

But *ei* followed by a finite verb governs the radical.

§ 1540. Finite verbs govern their object in the soft sound; as,

Erddi rhygenais geinion odlau. Rh. G. ap Rhicoert.

§ 1541. The verb substantive *oes*, is often followed by its subject in the soft sound;

Nid oes wad tros waesav. Myr. Arch. iii. 171.

But this is an exception to the general rule.

§ 1542. The pronouns *mi*, *ti*, and their compounds, assume the soft when they follow their verbs; as,

Yr wyf/i yn canu gan lawenydd. Iolo MSS. 157.

Beth a roi di imy er dy rhyddhau a'th dynnu oddiyna? Ib.

This modification is owing to the mutual contact of the personal pronoun, and the pronominal termination of the verb.

§ 1543. The pronoun *ti*, and its compounds, are put in the soft after the infinitive; as,

Gwel ei drugaredd ef yn dy arbed di. Iolo MSS. 172.

§ 1544. A transitive clause has the initial consonant of the infinitive sometimes put in the soft; as,

Ac y mae cyn sicred ddarfod croeshoelio yr Iesu hwnnw tan Pontius Pilat. Ed. Samuel.

§ 1545. The infinitive is put in the soft when its subject is governed by a preposition; as,

Gwaeddodd y Capden Cadwgan foel ar y Cymry a deisyf arnyn gymmeryd cenhinen yn eu helmau. Iolo MSS. 65.

In both these instances, the infinitive clauses must be taken substantively; hence the softening.

§ 1546. If the subject or the object, following the verb, be separated from it by an intervenient word or phrase, the subject or the object will be put in the soft sound ; as,

Pwylla, heddycha, bob ddau,
O'r diwedd wyr y Deau. L. G. Cothi.

Dygen' o Gymmru ill dau luodd. Ib.

The rule laid down in § 1544, may be regarded as identical in principle with this.

§ 1547. Words denoting duration and point of time, distance of place, and measure, if they follow the verb, have their initials changed into the soft sound ; as,

Ag a fu byw bedwar ugain mlynedd a saith wedi cael ei wneuthur yn frenin. Iolo MSS. 86.

§ 1548. The following prepositions govern the soft sound ; *am, ar, at, gan, heb, hyd, i, o, tan, tros, trwy, wrth*.

Ar godiad haulwen. Morgan Gruffydd.

Gann fwyelch tirion. Ch. D. Meredydd.

Heb Dduw heb ddim. Adage.

Af i ben Rhya. Gwilym Tew.

Those, which govern the radical, are not so thoroughly prepositional in their character as the above ; whilst some, besides the substantive prepositions, properly so called, may be found of like nature, and to have the same government over the words as nouns, e. g. *rhag*. The prepositions which govern the nasal and aspirate, are supposed to terminate in similar powers, and thus to impart their own character to the initials of their objects.

§ 1549. Verbs are put in the soft, when immediately preceded by their qualifying adverbs ; as,

Llafar ganant yn dragwydd. Psalm, v. ii.

§ 1550. Adjectives are put in the soft after the adverbs of comparison, *can* or *cyn, go, llef, mor, pur, rhy*.

Can gynted a'r gwynt. Adage.

Gwedi Owein, Mon mor ddiobaith cyrdd. Seisyll.

Can or *cyn, mor*, and *pur*, may be followed by the soft or radical of *ll* and *rh*.

§ 1551. *Ni, na* imperative, *ai ni, oni*, govern the soft sound of the second and third classes ; as,

Ni ddifyg arf ar was gwych. Adage.

Na ddos a gwr wrth ei faint. Ib.

§ 1552. The verbal particles *a* and *yd*, the interrogative adverb *a*, and the disjunctive conjunction *neu*, govern the soft ; as,

Bun a *ddug* bonheddigion. Ed. Dafydd.

A *glywaist* ti *chwedl* Dewi? Iolo MSS. 252.

Arian, *neu redd*, o'i ran vo. L. G. Cothi.

Bas *dwfr* men *yd lefeir*. Myv. Arch. i. 551.

When the particle *a* is omitted, the verb is still put in the soft sound.

§ 1553. *Yn*, when it precedes an apposition word, or forms an adverb, governs the soft sound ; as,

Gwedi marw Arthur *ydd aeth* Taliesin *yn Ben Bardd* Urien Rheged. Iolo MSS. 73.

Llygad *ceisiad a wel yn graff*. Ib. 157.

Except in the case of *ll* and *rh*, which retain the radical.

When the appositional *yn* is omitted, the apposition word, if coming after the verb, still for the most part assumes the soft sound ; as,

Morgan ab Bleddyn *oedd frenhin da iawn*. Iolo MSS. 5.

§ 1554. The conjunctions *am*, *gan*, *pan*, *er pan*, and *tan*, govern the soft ; as,

Pan *laddo* Duw *y lladd yn drwm*. Adage.

§ 1555. Nouns, or their concomitants, generally assume the soft sound, when they are really governed by interjections expressed or omitted ; as,

O ! *foneddigeiddied y tyngant!* Bardd Cwæg.

Oia *worwyn dec a bery di?* Mab. i. 284.

Dy *briawd, Fawd, ev a vudwyd*. L. G. Cothi.

But sometimes, when the interjection is omitted, the radical is retained ;

Duw ! *Awst gwedi oi estyn,*
Y *doit.* L. G. Cothi.

SECTION CXLII.

NASAL SOUND.

§ 1556. The preposition *yn*, and the pronoun *fy*, govern the nasal sound ; as,

Ac *yn nydd mynydd mewn gwn manod*. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Dangos i hon *lâs fy nghalon*. Ib.

This modification occurs on euphonic principles, with the view of assimilating the initials of the following word to the final liquid of the preceding one.

§ 1557. The preposition *yn* frequently assumes the very form of the following initials ; as,

Yn medd y gorwedd a'r garreg arnaw. H. ap Th. ap Einion.

Ei Eglwys Bangor Deiniol yng Ngwynedd. Achau Saint.

§ 1558. Sometimes, especially in old writings, it coalesces with its object ; as,

Hyt yggwauan yggwarthaf Arwystli. Mab. ii. 371.

§ 1559. In our oldest documents, we find that the liquid power of the preposition vanishes, whilst the vowel remains ; thus,

Hl hestawr ; in sextario. Oxf. Gloss.

Flau elcu ; in manu E. Lichf. Cod.

I ois oisoud ; in seculum seculorum. Ib.

§ 1560. The nasal sound comes after some of the cardinal numbers ; as,

Nau nieu ; naw nieu. Laws, ii. 11, 7. Mab. ii. 241.

Seith mlynedd. Mab. ii. 198.

Pedwar ugeint mlyned. Ib. iii. 98.

SECTION CXLIII.

ASPIRATE SOUND.

§ 1561. *Ni, na, ai ni,* and *oni,* govern the aspirate of the first class ; as,

Ni cŵel grudd gystudd calon. Adage.

Na cŵred yn ormodd gyhudded dy wraig ar neb. G. Fardd Glas.

To account for such a government, we suppose that the above particles ended formerly in an aspirate, a trace of which we still see in *nac*. When *nac* is followed by a vowel, it partially retains its aspirate ; as *nac aros*, but when a consonant comes after it, the aspirate passes over to the initial ; thus, *na chwyna*.

§ 1562. The prepositions *a, gyda,* and *efo ; tua* and *tra,* govern the aspirate of the first class ; as,

Henwg Sant a fu yn Rhufain gyda Chystenin Fendigaid. Iolo MSS. 73.

Taraw aoruc owein aŵledyf. Mab. i. 31.

A becomes *ŷg* before a vowel, which indicates it to have been originally an aspirate. *Gyda* and *tua,* being compounded of *gyd, tu,* and *a,* would of course have the same government ; whilst the Cornish and Armorican forms *dres, drez,* and the Latin *trans,* imply that the Cymric preposition *tra,* ended at one time with an aspirate ; perhaps it was identical in form with the word *trach,* which still occurs both as a substantive and an adverb.

§ 1563. The conjunctions *a*, *na*, *no*, *o*, govern the aspirate of the first class ; as,

Tri pheth a berthyn ar wr wrth gerdd davawd ; cerdd, a *chov*, a *chyvarwyddyd*.
Myv. Arch. iii. 135.

Gwell hir bwyll no *thraha*. Ib. 160.

That aspirates were attached to *a*, *na*, and *no*, is evident from the fact that these, before vowels, assume the forms *ac*, *nac*, and *noc*. *O*, likewise, under certain circumstances, becomes *os*.

§ 1564. The numerals *tri* and *chwech* ; also the pronoun *ei* feminine, govern the aspirate ; as,

Tri *clantref*. Mab. iii. 36.

A *chwe thorth ovara cann*. Ib. 251.

Ergydiaw gwenn
Ar *ei thaloen*. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

The principle on which *chwech* governs the aspirate is sufficiently clear, but we must refer to the Latin *tres*, the Greek *τρεις*, &c., for indications of an aspirate termination to the numeral *tri*. In the Ar-morican possessive *he*, we may perceive the hidden aspirate of *ei*.

§ 1565. Vowel initials take the aspirate *h* before them after the pronouns *ym*, *ei* feminine, *ein*, and *eu*.

Gofal i'm *lais a ryfegais*. Rh. G. ab Rhiccert.

Ni *chwsg y nos awr oi hachos*. Ib.

§ 1566. *Ei* masculine is followed by the aspirate *h*, if the following word be a finite verb.

Hithau ai *hadgyfarches yntau*. Iolo MSS. 176.

§ 1567. There are, however, a few exceptions to be met with in the mediæval writings ; as,

Yna'n *fuan ef a ysgippwys ymaith*. Iolo MSS. 176.

A'r *Gleisiad ai attebai fal hynn*. Ib. 189.

§ 1568. The numeral *ugain* is frequently aspirated after the preposition *ar*.

Rwyf *dec erydyr ar Augaint*. Mab. ii. 210.

Deudec *brenhin ar Augaint*. Ib. iii. 263.

§ 1569. Sometimes the aspirate is omitted ; as,

Deg *ar ugeynt*. Laws, ii. 1, 31.

SECTION CXLIV.

DIALECTS.

§ 1570. The following Triad enumerates three main dialects as prevailing in several parts of Wales; "The three principal tribes of the nation of the Cymry: the Gwenhwyson, or men of Siluria; the Gwyndodiaid, or men of Gwynedd and Powys; and the tribe of Pendaran Dyved, or men of Dyved, Gower, and Cardigan; and each of the three possesses a peculiar dialect of the Cymraeg." Tr. 16. third series.

§ 1571. Subjoined is a list of the principal variations that characterise the several dialects;—

	In Gwenhwys- ian into	In Gwyndodian into	In Dyvedian into
a preceded by <i>c</i> and its modifications, as <i>car</i> , is changed		ia as <i>ciar</i> , Powys.	iea as <i>ciear</i>
,, in several monosyllables, as <i>tad</i>	e as <i>ted</i>		
,, in the last syllable of <i>dafad</i>		o ... <i>dafod</i> , Angl. Caern.	
e in the last syllable of polysyllabic words, as <i>bachgen</i>		a ... <i>bachgan</i>	
,, in <i>byssedd</i>		i ... <i>bysidd</i> , Den. Flint.	
,, in <i>effro</i> , <i>deffro</i> , <i>nage</i>		i ... <i>iffro</i> , <i>diffro</i> , <i>nagi</i> , Angl.	
,, in <i>mewn</i>		ia ... <i>mfawn</i> , Caern. Mer.	
i in <i>bendithio</i> and <i>bendithion</i>			y ... <i>bendythio</i> , &c.
,, in monosyllabic words, as <i>trist</i>			u ... <i>trust</i>
,, in <i>milldyroedd</i>		y ... <i>milldyroedd</i> , Angl. Caern. Den. Flint.	
,, in monosyllabic words is short in South Wales; long in North Wales			
o before the vowel <i>e</i> , as in <i>oes</i> , <i>doe</i>			w ... <i>oes</i> , <i>dre</i> , Card. Pemb.

	In Gwenhwy- ian into	In Gwyndodan into	In Dyvedian into
u in several words, as Duw	i ... Diw		
„ in several words, as unig			y ... yinig. Pemb. Card.
w is not inflected into y, in the Dyvedian dia- lects, thus		drysau, pydru	drosau, pŵdru
y in several words, as byw	i ... biw		
„ in several words, as myn			u ... mun
„ in mynydd, cysgu			w ... mwni, cwsgi, Pemb.
ae in several words, as gwaed			a ... gwad
„ in the last syllable of polysyllabic words, as marwolaeth		e ... marwoleth, Mont. Meir. southern parts of Den. Flint.	e ... marwol- eth
„ in the last syllable of polysyllabic words, as arfaeth		a ... arfath, Angl. Caern. northern parts of Den. Flint.	
„ in monosyllabic words, as traeth		eu ... treuth, Meir. Mont.	
ai in the last syllable of polysyllabic words, as enaid		e ... ened, Mont. Meir. southern parts of Den. Flint.	e ... ened
„ in the last syllable of polysyllabic words, as cywraïn		a ... cywran, Angl. Caern. north. parts of Den. Flint.	
„ in the verbal termina- tion ais, as prynais			i ... prynais
„ in llygaid		i ... llygaid, Den. Flint. Meir.	
au in several words, as haul			ou ... haul

	In Gwenhwy- ian into	Into Gwyndodian into	In Dyvedian into
au in the termination of polysyllabic words, as <i>buarthau</i>		a ... <i>buartha</i> , Angl. Caern. north. parts of Den. Flint.	
,, in the termination of polysyllabic words, as <i>conglau</i>		e ... <i>congle</i> , Meir. Mont. southern parts of Denb. Flint	e ... <i>congle</i>
aw in monosyllabic words, as <i>mawr</i>			ow ... <i>mowr</i>
eu in the termination of polysyllabic words, as <i>goleu</i>		e ... <i>gole</i> , Mont. Meir. southern parts of Denb. Flint.	e ... <i>gole</i>
,, in the termination of polysyllabic words, as <i>goreu</i>		a ... <i>gora</i> , Angl. Caern. northern parts of Denb. Flint.	
,, in the middle of polysyllabic words, as <i>teneuon</i>		ei ... <i>teneion</i> , Meir. Mont.	ei ... <i>teneion</i>
ey in <i>teyrnas</i>	y ... <i>tyrnas</i>	y ... <i>tyrnas</i>	y ... <i>tyrnas</i>
ia in some words, as <i>iach</i>		ie, <i>iea</i> , ... <i>iech</i> , <i>ieach</i> , Mont. Meir.	ie, <i>iea</i> , ... <i>iech</i> , <i>ieach</i> .
ia in the termination of words, as <i>meibion</i> <i>dynion</i>	o... <i>meibon</i> <i>dynon</i>		
iw before a vowel, as <i>brüwo</i>		if ... <i>brifo</i>	
oe in monosyllables, as <i>poen</i>			o ... <i>pon</i>
wa in several words, as <i>gwadu</i>		we ... <i>gwedu</i> , Mont.	we ... <i>gwødu</i>
wy in <i>morwyn</i> , <i>adol- wyn</i>			w ... <i>morwøn</i> , <i>adolwøn</i>
yw in <i>heddyw</i>			y ... <i>heddy</i>

	In Gwenhwysian into	In Gwyndodian into	In Dyvedian into
ch in all words, as <i>chwaer</i>	wh ... <i>whaer</i>		
dd when a final consonant is omitted e. g. <i>mynydd</i> , <i>ffordd</i>			... <i>myny</i> , <i>ffor</i> , Pemb. Carm. Card.
Adjectives	lled mor lân	llettach mor lân	mor laned
Verbs		ych, ydych bum aethum denaf, deui deuwn, deuwach, dawant deued down, &c. deuir deuer	ywch, ydywch buo, bues eutho dawaf, dewi, dawn, dewch, dawant dawed dawn, &c. dewir dawer
	elaswn ad ... <i>gwelad</i> ws ... <i>carws</i>	elaswn, &c. Powys ai ... <i>gwelai</i> odd, ... <i>carodd</i> i ... <i>ceri</i> dywd... <i>dywed- wyd</i> dyro	elaswn, &c. ad ... <i>gwelad</i> ws ... <i>carws</i> y ... <i>cery</i> spwyd... <i>dywe- spwyd</i> rho
Verbal par- ticles	ydd y ... <i>mi y garaf</i>	yr a ... <i>mi a garaf</i>	ydd
Pronouns	hynn hynny	hwnn, honn hwnnw, honno	hynn hynny
Conjunctions	taw	mai	
Prepositions	no, noc gan ... <i>y Sant</i> <i>gan Bedr</i> iddei, iddeu	na, nag o... <i>gwr o saer</i> i'w	no, noc

PROSODY.

§ 1572. OF the proper perfect sentences are formed metre and poetry. Wherefore it is necessary that we should know what are metre and poetry, and how they are distinguished, measured, and designed.

SECTION CXLV.

METRE.

§ 1573. Metre or poetry consists in the composition of proper perfect sentences, made up of ornamental and magnificent words, and adorned with graceful and approved adjectives, which indicate praise or satire; and also interwoven into a commendable vocal song.

§ 1574. There are three branches of vocal song; namely, strolling minstrelsy, (clerwriaeth) domestic singing, (teuluwriaeth) and poetry, (prydyddiaeth.)

SECTION CXLVI.

STROLLING MINSTRELSY.

§ 1575. There are three branches that appertain to strolling minstrelsy; namely, satire, mutual description, and imitation.

SECTION CXLVII.

DOMESTIC SINGING.

§ 1576. There are also three branches appertaining to domestic singing ; a descant, antiphonal description, and an amatory lay, composed of facetious words in the form of family recitatives and ballads.

SECTION CXLVIII.

POETRY.

§ 1577. There are, moreover, three branches that appertain to poetry ; systiches, (englynon,) stichopolyrythms, (awdlau,) and homœostiches, (cywyddau,) harmonious and difficult of imaginative construction.

SECTION CXLIX.

SYSTICH.

§ 1578. There are three kinds of systiches ; homœorythm (unawdl) systich, the alternate (proest) systich, and the vetericine (hen ganiad) systich.

SECTION CL.

HOMŒORYTHM SYSTICH.

§ 1579. There are three kinds of homœorythm systiches ; the direct (uniawn) homœorythm systich, the inverse (crwcca) homœorythm systich, and the recurrent (cyrch) homœorythm systich.

§ 1580. A direct homœorythm systich is that which has the long verse first, and the two short verses last. It occasionally terminates in vowels ; sometimes in single vowels, as does the following systich ;

Pei cawn o gyflawn gyfle brofi,—rhin,
Cyd bei rhon fy nghrogi ;

Fy neges oedd fynegi,
Fy ngofeg, ddyn teg, i ti.

§ 1581. Sometimes direct homœorhythm systich ends in two vowels and sometimes in a rotundison diphthong, as follows ;

Dilynais, clwyfais, fal i'm *clyw*—deg cant
Y degcaf o ddyn *byw* ;
Dolur gormodd a'm *doddyw*,
Dilyn pryd ewyn prid *yw*.

Llywelyn son of Gruffydd.

§ 1582. Sometimes also it ends in a sparsison diphthong ; as,

Cudwyll wyd o bwyll o ball dra *mwy*—hoet
A hud mab Mathonwy,
Unwedd ath wneir a Chreirwy,
Enwir fryd rhy hir frad *rhwy*.

§ 1583. When the systich terminates in consonants, then it sometimes ends in single vowels and consonants, as does the following systich ;

Llawnlwys lys yw Rhys, Rhos gynired—cad
Cedernyd Edelffled.
Lliw difai llywiawd Dyfed,
Llew llawn gynniweir creir *cred*.

§ 1584. Sometimes the systich ends in two vowels and single consonants ; and occasionally also it ends in a rotundison diphthong, and consonants ; as does the following ;

Ofer o iawnder undawd—hwyl anaw
Haelioni'r bedyssawd,
Wrthyd ail Arthur yrthawd,
Cadwgawn cadr ffynnawn ffawd.

§ 1585. And sometimes the systich ends in a sparsison dipthong and consonants; as is the case with the following systich;

Cathleu eos nos yn *oed*—y cigleu,
 Neu gofer gofal *hoed*,
 Coethlef herwoddef *hiroed*,
 Cethlydd cein awenydd *coed*.

§ 1586. An inverse homœorythm systich is that which has the long verse last, and the two short lines first; thus,

Cyd ymwnel cyfyd bryd brys,
 Yn llawen llewych ystlys
 Lledfryd calon don, ef a'i dengys—grudd
 Lliw blaen grug geferys.

§ 1587. A recurrent homœorythm systich is that in which the two homœorythm verses occur first, and the long verse last, having in it the recurrent word. It had only three rhymes because of the recurrent words, as is the case with the following systich;—

Hynyg hir loyw ei hystlys
 Gwymp ei llun yn ei llaes—*grys*,
 Gwynlliw ewyn gwendonn iawn
 O ddwfr eigiawn pan ddyfrys.

• SECTION CLI.

ALTERNATE SYSTICH.

§ 1588. There are three kinds of alternate systiches; a rotundison alternity, a sparsison alternity, and a catenated (*cadwynawg*) alternity.

§ 1589. A rotundison alternity terminates sometimes in vowels; that is, when the four rhymes of the systich end in four different vowels. This is called the vowel alternity; as,

Doeth ei feirdd heirdd hardd westi,
 Hael Ruffydd o'i rydd a'i ra
 Cymraw pan ddelit Cymro,
 Cymreist addwyndawd Cymru.

§ 1590. Sometimes the rotundison alternate systich ends in consonants; that is, when the four rhymes of the systich end in the same consonant, but have different vowels; as,

Dy garu gorhoen eglur,
 Angharad gwenwynfrad gwyr;
 Hoyw gangen, hyagen gwâr,
 Hawl enaid y direidwr.

§ 1591. Sometimes the systich ends in a rotundison diphthong; as,

Angharad hoyw leuad liw,
 Ynghyfraith lewych i aeth law,
 Wyf o'th gariad, glwysgad glew,
 Ynfyd, drwy benyd, yn byw.

§ 1592. A sparsison alternity terminates sometimes in vowels; when the four rhymes of the systich end in four different sparsison diphthongs; as,

Cae a gefais dawngais doe,
 Cu fydd cof rhydd, rhodd er fei,
 Yn eil groes ym oes a moy,
 Anwyl greir cywir yw'r cae.

§ 1593. Sometimes it terminates in consonants; when the four rhymes of the systich end in four different sparsison diphthongs, accompanied with the same consonant; as,

Llawen dan gaer wenu lenn laes,
 Lleddf olwg gloyw amlwg glwys,
 Llathr lun manol a folais,
 Llaryaidd foneddigaidd foes.

§ 1594. A catenated alternity is that in which the first rhyme of the systich answers to the third, and the second to the fourth; sometimes it is a rotundison catenated alternity; as is the following,—

Mynnwn cyt yt gwegawn *gwog*,
 Men dy gael rhin adael *rheg*,
 Ynghobant yngobell *mwg*,
 Ynghobeith tywyn waith *teg*.

§ 1595. Sometimes also it is a sparsison catenated alternity; as is the case with the following systich;

Na'r haul yn hwyl awyr*neid*,
 Na'r lloer nid gwell y lliw*yd*,
 Yn llathr wiw wedd yn llathr*eid*,
 Yn llathru fo Lleucu Ll*wyd*.

SECTION CLII.

VETERICINE SYSTICH.

§ 1596. The vetericine systich has three rhymes; sometimes it consists of three short verses, each of seven syllables; as,

Chwerddid mwyalch mewn cell*i*,
 Nid ardd, nid erddir idd*i*,
 Nid llawenach neb no hi.

§ 1597. Sometimes it consists of a long verse of sixteen syllables, and a short verse of seven syllables, as does the following systich;

Onid ynad a darllead,
 Llyfrau a'i eiriau yn wastad,
 Araith mewn cyfreith ni ad.

§ 1598. The length of the homœorythm systich, direct or inverse, is thirty syllables; sixteen in the long verse, and seven in each of the short lines. In the

long verse the rhyme is sometimes on the seventh syllable, whilst the perfluency (gair toddedig) beyond the rhyme is of three syllables. Sometimes the rhyme is on the eighth syllable, and then the perfluency beyond the rhyme ought to be of two syllables. Sometimes, moreover, the rhyme is on the ninth syllable, in which case the perfluency beyond the rhyme should be of one syllable; and in the same manner will all perfluencies be regulated; likewise the long verse of the odynic (gwawd-odyn.)

§ 1599. The length of the alternate systich is twenty-eight syllables, seven in each of the four lines.

§ 1600. The length of the recurrent systich is twenty-eight syllables, seven syllables in each of the two short lines, and fourteen in the long verse. The syllable making to recur ought to be the seventh syllable, and the syllable made to recur ought to be the eleventh syllable.

And thus end the metre and construction of the systiches.

SECTION CLIII.

STICHOPOLYRITHMS.

§ 1601. Hitherto we have treated of the systiches; we will now proceed to describe the second branch of poetry, namely, stichopolyrithms, their metres and construction.

§ 1602. Five common metres have belonged to stichopolyrithms from the beginning; namely, perfluency (toddaid,) odynic, long autometre (cyhydd,) short autometre, and auroric, (huppunt.)

SECTION CLIV.

PERFLUENCY.

§ 1603. The length of the perfluency is nineteen syllables each verse; as in the following stichopolyrhythm;

Nid digerydd Duw neud digariad—cyrdd
 Neud lliw gwyrdd i fyrdd o feirdd yn rhad,
 Neud llauws frwyn cwyn canwlad—ynghystudd,
 O'th attal Ruffydd, wayw-rudd roddiad.

And sustained in like manner to the end.

SECTION CLV.

ODYNIC.

§ 1604. The odynic consists of two short verses, each of nine syllables, and a long verse of nineteen syllables, as is the case with the following stichopolyrhythm;

Meddylieis y dreis o dra syml fryd,
 Meddwl meddw gymwyn anfwyn ynfyd,
 Meddyliaf am naf am nawdd gyd-esmwyth,
 Nid meddwl diffwyth, modd ymdiffryd.

Another;

Daroganaf Naf daroganant,
 Darogan feirdd heirdd digeirdd dygant,
 Dognoedd o wisgoedd a wisgant—o'i law
 Darf Loegr fraw canllaw cynllwg rymiant.

SECTION CLVI.

LONG AUTOMETRE.

§ 1605. The long autometre consists entirely of long verses, each of nineteen syllables; and this stanza contains, moreover, three short verses, two of five syllables

each, answering one to the other ; and another verse of nine syllables, answering in the fifth syllable to the two preceding verses, and according to the termination of the rhyme in the first verse, is the whole of the stichopolyrhythm sustained ; as,

Trindawd parawd pur,	}	mur mireinwch,
Traws maws maes eglur,		
Trwy rad mad modur,		
Tra fi Rhi rhadlawn,	}	digawn degwch.
Trafni Ior dyfnfor dawn,		
Tref, Nef, Naf cyfiawn,		

Sustained to the end.

Another ;

Llefaru a wnaf,	}	gelfydd arfer.
Llywiawdr nef a'i Naf,		
Llyw nerth y galwaf		
Llymma fy namwein	}	llun mein muner.
Llym foli rhiein,		
Llaryaidd bryd mirein		

SECTION CLVII.

SHORT AUTOMETRE.

§ 1606. The short autometre consists of short verses, each of eight syllables ; as the following,

Gwan wyf o glwyf yn glaf trym heint,
 Gwenn ffraeth am gwnaeth gne gofeilieint,
 Gwenieith yw gweith y gwythlawn ddeint,
 Gwynder lleufer lloer am blygeint.

SECTION CLVIII.

AURORIC.

§ 1607. The auroric consists entirely of long verses, of twelve syllables each ; and in that stanza are three short verses, of four syllables each, the two former

answering the one to the other ; and according to the rhythmical termination of the last verse will the stichopolyrhythm be sustained throughout. The second syllable of the third verse answers, moreover, to the other two verses ; as,

Trindawd ffawd ffer	}	gwarder gwirdad.
Tref, nef, nifer		
Trech wyd no neb,	}	treiddiwn attat.
Trwy ddawn atdeb,		

§ 1608. After that were invented four other metres ; namely, brachyochyte (byrr a thoddaid,) long odynic, enneasyllabic autometre (cyhydedd naw ban,) and salebrose (clogyrnach.)

SECTION CLIX.

BRACHYOCHYTE.

1609. The brachyochyte consists in the first place of a long verse of sixteen syllables, as if it were a part of an homœorythm systich ; in the next place of as many short verses as you please, each of eight syllables ; and afterwards of a long verse of sixteen syllables, like the first, and thus sustained to the end ; as is the case with the following stichopolyrhythm ;

Tomas a Rhoppert rhyydd par—gwersyllig,
 Rhwyf rhyfig rhyfelgar,
 Rhuthr aruthr o areithraw esgar,
 Rheithion gawr rhwythawr llawr llachar,
 Rhwym cymgin cynegy diwatwar,
 Rhwym cedyrn neud cadarno fâr,
 Rhwysg tan a gwyfan fal twrf gwynniar—drut,
 Molut clut clot wasgar.

Another ;

Y gwr am roddes rhinieü—ar dafawt
 Ac ar wawt a geirieu,
 Am troses i gyffes nid geu,
 Am troso i'r trosedd goreu,
 I guriaw gorwisg fy ngruddieu,
 I garu Mab Duw diameu,
 I gymryt penyt rhag poenau—uffern,
 Ac affaeth pechodeu.

SECTION CLX.

LONG ODYNIC.

§ 1610. The long odynic is composed of short verses, each having nine syllables; and a long verse of nineteen syllables, after the manner of another odynic, except that it may have in it as many short verses as you please. The following is an example;

Gwann iawn wyf o glwyf er gloyw forwyn,
 Gwae a faeth hiraeth brif arfaeth brwyn ;
 Gwyr fy nghalon donn ddefnydd fy nghwyn,
 Gwr ar fyrr ennyd cyn bo terwyn,
 Am na ddaw i law i lwyn—a bwyllaf,
 A garaf attaf ateb addfwyn.

SECTION CLXI.

ENNEASYLLABIC AUTOMETRE.

§ 1611. The enneasyllabic autometre consists of short verses throughout, each of them being nine syllables in length; as,

Wrthyd Greawdr byd, bid fy nghobaith,
 Wrthyf bydd drugar, hywar hyweith,
 I'th argae neud gwae, nid gwael y gweith,
 Wrth ddynion gwylion y bo goleith,
 Wrth hynny Duw fry, frenhin pob ieith,
 I'th archaf dangnef, ceinllef, canlleith.

And sustained in like manner to the end.

SECTION CLXII.

SALEBROSE.

§ 1612. The salebrose is composed of two short verses, of eight syllables each, answering one to the other; and of a verse sixteen syllables long, containing, moreover, three short verses, two being of five syllables each, which are homœorythm; and the other short verse of six syllables, of which the third syllable answers to the preceding two short verses, whilst the termination of the said verse rhymes with the two first verses; and it is in accordance with them that the whole stichopolyrythm is sustained; as,

Y barrau arfau arfaloeh,
 Y bebyll, y byll, y ballcoeh,
 Am iwch feirdd i fudd
 Emrych llys nyw lludd,
 Enwys rudd,
 Rhuthr gwyddfoch.

And this mode is called the usage of Cynddelw.

§ 1613. Three other metres were devised by Einion the Priest; machrochyte (hir a thoddaid,) brachisagogic (cyrch a cwтта,) and catenated chytisagogic (tawddgyrch gadwynawg.)

SECTION CLXIII.

'MACHROCHYTE.

§ 1614. The machrochyte consists of four short verses, of ten syllables each; and a long verse of twenty syllables, as follows;

Gwynfyd gwyr y byd oedd fod Angharad,
 Gwenfyn yn gyfyn a'i gwiw fawr gariad,
 Gwan llun am lludd hun hoen dwg barabliad,

Gwyn lliw eiry difryw difrys gymdeithiad,
 Gwenn dan aur wiwlenn leddedrychiad—gwyl
 Yw fanwyl yn ei hwyl heul gymmeriad.

SECTION CLXIV.

BRACHISAGOGIC.

§ 1615. The brachysagogic consists of six short verses, of seven syllables each, and of a verse of fourteen syllables, having in it a recurrent word ; as ,

Llithrawdd ys rhannawdd is rhad,
 Llathr gof ynof anynad,
 Lloer Cymru cymraist dyad,
 Llwyrr y gwñaeth mygr arfaeth mād,
 Lleas gwas gwys nas dywad,
 Lliaws geir hynaws gariad,
 Lledd gein rein llun meinwar,
 Lliw llewychgar Angharad.

SECTION CLXV.

CATENATED CHYTISAGOGIC.

§ 1616. The catenated chytisagogic consists of long couplets, each couplet having twenty-four syllables, and the whole stanza contains four verses of sixteen syllables each. In one of those long verses there are, moreover, three short verses, two of four syllables each, and the other of eight syllables. The two short verses of the first long verse, answer to the two first verses of the second long verse respectively ; that is, the first to the first, the second to the second, and the fourth syllable of the short octosyllabic verse preceding, answers to the second short verse ; and the four first short verses of the last two long verses, answer each to each ; whilst the termination of each of the long verses rhymes one with another. Nor is it necessary, unless

you choose, that more than the four verse couplet should mutually correspond. Nevertheless they must be complex. From the conclusion of that couplet the other must begin; whilst the conclusion of the whole stichopolyrhythm ought to answer to the first word of the commencement. This mode is derived from the Latin usage. The following stichopolyrhythm is an example;

Buddiant i feirdd,	}	ofec hael Nudd;
Byrddau dramwy,		
Dra mawr ofwy,		
Hoywon a heirdd,	}	oera a'i rûdd.
Gan hardd faccwy,		
Fyddant hwy rwy,		
Arfau pybyr,	}	ardd gwyr gwaywrudd.
Erfai dymyr,		
Arfawg frehyr,		
Arial milwyr,	}	Rhys ab Gruffydd.
Eiriau myfyr,		
Eryr Rhyswyr		

And thus end the metres of the stichopolyrhythms, and their structure.

SECTION CLXVI.

HOMŒOSTICH.

§ 1617. Hitherto we have treated of the first two branches of poetry; namely, systiches and stichopolyrhythms; we will now proceed to describe the third branch, namely homœostiches, their metres, and their structure.

§ 1618. There are three kinds of homœostiches; homœodistich (cywydd deuair;) rhythmic homœostich (awdl gywydd;) and caudate homœostich (cywydd llogyrniawg.)

SECTION CLXVII.

HOMŒODISTICH.

§ 1619. There are three kinds of homœodistiches ; a long homœodistich, and a short homœodistich.

§ 1620. The long homœodistich has seven syllables in each verse ; as,

March ffyrf archgrwn byrr ei flew,
Llyfn llygatrwrth pedreindew ;
Cyflwyd coflith genchym gaff,
Cyflym cefnfyrr cadarn graff,
Cyflawn o galon a chig,
Cyfliw blodau'r banhadl frig.

And sustained in like manner to the end.

§ 1621. The short homœodistich has four syllables in each verse ; as,

Hardd deg riein,
Hydwyf lwysgein,
Hoyw liw gwenig,
Huan debyg,
Hawdd dy garu,
Heul yn llathru.

SECTION CLXVIII.

RHYTHMIC HOMŒOSTICH.

§ 1622. The rhythmic homœostich consists of fourteen syllables, and has in it a recurrency ; and the homœostich throughout is homœorhythm ; as,

O gwrthody liw ewyn,
Was difelyn gudynneu,
Yn ddiwladeidd da i len,
Ai awen yn ei lyfreu,
Cael yt filein aradrgaeth,
Yn waeth waeth ei gynneddfeu.

And sustained in like manner to the end.

SECTION CLXIX.

CAUDATE HOMŒOSTICH.

§ 1623. The caudate homœostich consists of two or three or four verses, of eight syllables each, followed by a caudate verse of seven syllables; and according to the rhythmic termination of that verse will the whole homœostich be sustained; as,

Lliw eiry manod mynydd Mynneu,
 Lluoedd a'th fawl, gwawl gwawr deheu,
 Llathrlun goleu oleu *ddydd*,
 Llifoedd fy hoen o boen benyd,
 Lluddiaudd ym hun llun bun lloer byd,
 Lledfryd nid bywyd i'm *bydd*.

And sustained according to that rhyme to the end.

SECTION CLXX.

POETICAL FAULTS.

§ 1624. Having thus treated of the three branches of poetry; namely, the systiches, stichopolyrhythms, and homœostiches, and their structure, it is right that we should now speak of the faults and errors that ought to be avoided in every commendable vocal song.

§ 1625. A fault may occur in three places of a vocal song; in the resumptions (cymmeriadau,) consonancies (cynghaneddau,) and the rhymes; and withal in the meaning, sense, and imagination.

§ 1626. The resumptions occur at the commencement of verses, the consonancies in the middle, and the rhymes at the end. Every false rhyme, every false consonancy, and every false resumption, is a fault and an error in a song.

§ 1627. Another fault in a song is the mutual collocation of singular and plural, as if *ugeinwr* should be used where it ought to be *ugeinwyr*.

§ 1628. It is also a fault to place a masculine and a feminine together; as if *gwraig cryf* or *gwr cref* should be written, where it ought to be *gwr cryf* or *gwraig gref*.

§ 1629. A fault too is the mutual collocation of present and absent, which may occur in two ways. One is, when two different tenses are placed together in a sentence; as, if it were said, *Mi a brydaf*, *pei gwypion i bwy*, where it ought to be, *Mi a brydwn*, *pei gwypion i bwy*. The other way is, when two different persons are placed together in a sentence; as if it were said, *mi a wyr prydu*, where it ought to be, *mi a wn prydu*.

§ 1630. A poetical fault is the mutual collocation of gravison and levison; that is, when one rhyme is gravison, and the other levison.

§ 1631. Here follows a rule whereby we may ascertain the gravison and levison; namely, let the word be made plural and multiplied. For example, if it were not known whether *calon* be grave or light, let it be rendered into the plural *calonnau*. Since it is grave in the pluralised word, it must be grave in the word before it is made plural. In like manner, if it be unknown whether *amcan* be grave or light, let it be turned into its plural *amcan^{au}*, then let the word be verbalized into *amcanu*, and inasmuch as it is light here, it follows that it must be light in the first word.

§ 1632. By the same rule may be known the character of a doubtful syllable, whether it be one or two syllables. For example, *bygwol*; let it be pluralised into *bygylau*, or verbalized into *bygylu*. Then since the two latter are trisyllabic, the first must have been disyllabic. And if *bagl* be turned into its plural *baglau*; it follows that *bagl* is a monosyllable; for there ought not to be in the word after it has been pluralised but one syllable more than in the word before it was made plural.

§ 1633. A poetical fault is the mutual collocation of a sparsison and a rotundison; that is, when one rhyme is sparsison, and the other rotundison.

§ 1634. A systich is faulty if it has an alternity and homœorythm; that is, if one portion of the systich be homœorythm, and the other counterchanged.

§ 1635. A systich is faulty when it has more than four rhymes, unless it be a long systich, having the metre of two or three systiches.

§ 1636. A systich is faulty when the same word occurs in it twice, unless it be three times; except when the longing or humour of love excuses it; longing, as in the following systich;

Gwrthrych eurgreir pur pendefig—ydwyf
 Fi gan Dduw gwynfydedig,
 Hir ei lygad Loegr adrig,
 A *wrthrych* deigr hywlych dig.

Humour of love, as in the following systich;

Gwenn dann eurwiw lenn leddf edrychiad—gwyl
 Y gweleis *Angharad*;
 A gwann o bryd egwan brad,
 I'm gwyl gwylwawr^r*Angharad*.

§ 1637. A fault in a systich is the mutual collocation of praise and satire; as if it were said, *gwraig deg ddysyml anniweir*.

§ 1638. A homœorythm systich is faulty when it is hoof overtaking (carnymorddiwes;) that is to say, when each of the two short verses is polysyllabic; as,

Pei prynwn seith pwenn sathr grug—o'th oleu
 Pedolau pwy gaddug,
 Mangre grawnfaeth saeth *saethug*
 Mein a'i nadd yn *heiraddug*.

§ 1639. A homœorythm systich is faulty when it is the ape's breech (tin ab;) that is to say, when the two short verses of the systich are monosyllabic in the two last rhymes; as is the case in the following systich;

Gwann iawn wyf o nwyf a naws an hun—gwael
 Am ddyn gŵyl gweddeiddlun,
 Gwenn a gloyw a hoyw ei *hun*,
 Gwyn fyd gwŷr y byd yw *bun*.

Therefore, with the view of avoiding this fault, the one rhyme ought to be monosyllabic, and the other polysyllabic.

§ 1640. Every song is faulty when it is long and short; that is, when one word is too long, and the other too short.

§ 1641. The interruption of a metre is a fault; so is every misapprehension, and irrelevancy, and the want of soul and happy imagination; but the greatest fault in a systich, and in every approved vocal song, as well as in every sentence, is the absence of a verb; as is the case with the following systich;—

Cyrnig llymm trychig llam trwch—ysperygl
 Tud erthygl tad erthwch,
 Cyrn, dyrn, Deirnwern, cern, ceirnfwch,
 Carn, sarn, darn, dwrdd, corn, hwrdd, hwch.

§ 1642. A systich does not become faulty when another is found to be better; for, in case a systich be free from the foregoing errors, it is adjudged to be good, if it has soul, and sense, and imagination, though another be declared superior, and a third best of all, according to the beforementioned three degrees of comparison.

§ 1643. If in a song a word has two or three meanings or senses, that is, a good sense and a bad sense,

in case the song be historical, let it be adjudged, in regard to the sense or meaning, to be good. If it be a satirical song, let it be adjudged, in regard to the sense, to be bad. For no one records with a view to what is bad, neither does any one satirize with a view to what is good. Should a song have two good meanings, or two bad meanings, both in the same word, let it be adjudged according to the most becoming and best sense of the context; unless it be well known that the intent of the author was to the contrary.

SECTION CLXXI.

FORM OF PRAISE.

§ 1644. We ought now to be made acquainted with the mode of praising different objects in song.

§ 1645. Two kinds of things ought to be celebrated in song; namely, things spiritual, and things corporeal; spiritual, as *God, Mary, and the Saints*; corporeal, as *man, beast, place, or what has no life.*

§ 1646. God is to be praised on account of His divinity, strength, almightiness, all goodness, all wisdom, all mercifulness, liberality, truth, justice, power, glory, and majesty, His distribution of righteous judgments, love, heavenliness, His creation of heaven, and earth, paternity, spirituality, worship, celestial beauty, and whatsoever else is spiritual and honourable.

§ 1647. Mary is to be praised on account of her virginity, purity, chastity, mercy, glory, generosity, honour, life, and benignity; and on account of every other honourable attribute for which her Lord and Son is celebrated.

§ 1648. The saints are to be praised on account of their sanctity and holy lives, their miracles, spiritual

powers, blissful speech, heavenly works, divine glory, and other spiritual and honourable qualities.

§ 1649. Two sorts of men are to be praised ; a religious and a secular.

§ 1650. Two kinds of persons ought to be praised ; a man and a woman.

§ 1651. There are two sorts of seculars ; lay and clerical.

§ 1652. There are two sorts of clerks ; prelates, such as bishops, or arch-bishops, who are to be praised for their wisdom, learning, gravity, eloquence, integrity, ecclesiastical government, mercy, generosity, fairness and firmness in the maintenance of the laws of the church, kindness to the poor, almsgiving, prayers, spiritual works, just liberality, their holding of courts, gentleness, prudence, care, and other things ecclesiastic and honourable,

§ 1653. There are two subordinates ; parsons and teachers.

§ 1654. Parsons are praised on account of their eloquence, wisdom, gentility, alms, regular benevolence, good manners, kind understanding, nobility, fairness, amiability and gentlemanly conduct in the maintenance of churches and convents, works of mercy, and other honourable things.

§ 1655. Teachers are praised for their wisdom, eloquence, superior laws and canons, fairness, good manners, kind understanding, profound genius, high arts, victorious reasoning in controversies, amiability, clearness, gentility, munificence of alms, good qualities and usages, tenderness, charity, discreetness, and other things that are scholastic and prudent.

§ 1656. Two sorts of laymen ought to be praised ; a lord and a baron.

§ 1657. A lord is praised on account of his possessions, power, military character, valour, might, pomp, kindness, wisdom, eloquence, liberality, gentleness, affable manners, tenderness towards his men, and friends, handsome countenance, graceful person, magnanimity, noble works, and other kind and honourable characteristics.

§ 1658. A baron is praised on account of his bravery, courage, strength, military might, sincerity to his lord, wisdom, eloquence, generosity, pleasantry, gracefulness of person, commendableness of mind, gentility, and other laudable qualities.

§ 1659. A religious man is praised on account of his religion, sanctity, purity of life, godly mind, spiritual powers, works of mercy, generosity, charity for God's sake, and other heavenly and spiritual things that appertain to God and the saints, and to virtuous manners and habits.

§ 1660. Three kinds of women are to be praised ; a good woman, a lady, and a religious woman.

§ 1661. A good woman is praised for her wisdom, neatness, chastity, munificence, comeliness of face, form and figure, simplicity of speech and deeds, and good manners. And it is not proper to praise a good woman on account of her love and affection ; a love song does not appertain to her.

§ 1662. A lady is praised on account of her face and figure, gentility, beauty, neatness, simplicity, laudable and genteel manners, love, elegance, kindness ; and to her appertain love and affection. In like manner also is a young man praised.

§ 1663. A religious woman is praised in respect of her holiness, chastity, and purity of life, and other godly qualities; even as a religious man.

§ 1664. A religious man and a religious woman are praised because of their holiness, purity of life, charity, adoration of God and the saints, their giving of asylum, prayers, fasting, spiritual works, and every perfection that appertains to the praise of God and the saints.

§ 1665. A poet ought not to concern himself with strolling minstrelsy, so as to practice or follow it, for it is contrary to the arts of a poet; since it appertains to a strolling minstrel to satirize, depreciate, shame, and reproach.

§ 1666. It is the province of a poet to commend, celebrate, bestow praise, joy, and glory; moreover, there can be no system in strolling minstrelsy, for it is an undigested song; and, therefore, let not a poet meddle with it, for it is emasculated.

§ 1667. It belongs, however, to a poet to meddle with domestic singing, and pronounce judgment upon it; for that is a systematic song, a rule of poetry, and the old mode of singing ere consonancy was known.

§ 1668. Where a poet composes a song, it is not right to believe the satire of a strolling minstrel; for the poet's song of praise ought to be stronger than the minstrel's song of satire.

§ 1669. Charms, divinations, and enchantments, ought not to be meddled with or used by a poet, for such are to him intolerable and unlawful.

§ 1670. Old songs and written stories, questions of wonder and remarkable answers relative to art and truth, it would be well for a poet to know, for the purpose of conversing with wise men, and amusing

ladies, and entertaining good men and good women. For poetry is a part of express wisdom, and is derived from the Holy Spirit, whilst its genius is obtained through learning and experience. The following are the spiritual powers that appertain to a Poet; namely, obedience, habitual generosity, chastity, spiritual love, moderation in meat and drink, mildness, and godly diligence. These are contrary to the seven deadly sins; namely, pride, haughty malice, covetousness, fornication, luxury, anger and sloth, which debilitate the body, destroy the soul, corrupt the genius of poetry, and blunt the senses.

SECTION CLXXII.

TRIADS OF SONG.

§ 1671. Hitherto we have spoken of the three branches of poetry, and their appurtenances, namely, domestic singing, strolling minstrelsy, and poetry; we will now proceed to relate the triads of song.

§ 1672. A song is subject to three common faults; violation of metre, bad sense, and incorrect expression.

§ 1673. There are three violations of metre; long and short, excess of rhymes, and false rhyme.

§ 1674. There are three kinds of bad sense; want of soul, false imagination, and irrelevancy.

§ 1675. There are three incorrect expressions; that in which a singular and plural, that in which a masculine and feminine, and that in which present and absent, severally occur together.

§ 1676. There are three irrelevancies of song; the mutual collocation of praise and satire, of excess and deficiency, and the want of a verb.

§ 1677. A song has three distinctive faults ; the mutual collocation of gravison and levison, of sparsison and rotundison, and of alternity and homœorythm.

§ 1678. There are three parts of speech ; a noun, pronoun, and verb.

§ 1679. There are three kinds of sentence ; a perfect sentence, a just sentence, and an ornamental sentence.

§ 1680. There are three parts of poetry ; a syllable, a word, and a sentence.

§ 1681. There are three kinds of syllables ; a rotundison syllable, a sparsison syllable, and a diphthongal syllable.

§ 1682. There are three rotundison syllables ; a rotundison diphthong, a sparsison rotundison, and a curt rotundison.

§ 1683. There are three sparsison syllables ; a capicurvilentison, a robustilentison, and a liquilentison.

§ 1684. There are three diphthongal syllables ; a rotundison diphthong, a sparsison diphthong, and a wandering diphthong.

§ 1685. There are three parordic and promiscuous diphthongs ; a rotundisparsison diphthong, a capicurvilentison diphthong, and a liquilentison or fortisparsison diphthong.

§ 1686. There are three wonderful diphthongs ; a strange diphthong, a tailed diphthong, and a wandering diphthong.

§ 1687. There are three singularicine diphthongs ; a rotundisparsison diphthong, a tailed diphthong, and a fortisparsison diphthong.

§ 1688. There are three fortisparsicine syllables ; gravisparsison, surdisparsison, and fortisparsison.

§ 1689. There are three levicine syllables ; a rotundison syllable, a capicurvisparsison syllable, and a mute syllable.

§ 1690. There are three estranged syllables ; a strange dipthong, a vowel before a vowel, and a wandering dipthong.

§ 1691. There are three dipthongs, which have no counterchanges ; a liquisparsison dipthong, a rotundison dipthong, and a wandering dipthong.

§ 1692. A systich has three distinctive faults, the hoof overtaking, the ape's breech, and a bad arrangement of rhymes.

§ 1693. Three things will render a sentence correct ; orderly arrangement of words, just imagination, and a figure.

§ 1694. Three things will render a sentence imperfect ; irrelevancy, false sense, and the want of soul.

§ 1695. Three things confer privilege and merit upon a sentence ; boldness and intrepidity of speech, accuracy of sense, and a natural understanding of the recital.

§ 1696. Three things render a sentence inaccurate ; a dull recital, inaccuracy of sense, and a heedless understanding of the narrator.

§ 1697. There are three kinds of songsters ; a strolling minstrel, a domestic teacher, and a poet.

§ 1698. Three things appertain to a strolling minstrel ; to satirize, to supplicate, and to disparage.

§ 1699. Three things appertain to a domestic teacher; residence and hospitality, amusement, and good reception in the family, without having to beg for them.

§ 1700. Three things appertain to a poet; to praise, amuse, and oppose the minstrel's song of satire.

§ 1701. The three principia of song; poetry, recital, and direction.

§ 1702. Three things debase a song; to recite it unsolicited and out of season, to sing irrelevantly, that is, respecting one whom it is not proper, and the want of a songster to judge it.

§ 1703. Three things adorn a song; boldness and intrepidity of speech, the learning of the reciter, and the authority of the poet.

§ 1704. Three things render a song delightful; profundity of sense and meaning, grand imagination, and the authority of the poet.

§ 1705. Three things render a song unamiable; shallowness of sense, trite imagination, and the unworthiness of a poet.

§ 1706. Three things will improve a song and render it accurate; the arrangement of sentences, a copious use of the Cymraeg in the composition, and the introduction of a poetical imagination into the form of the song.

§ 1707. Three things will render a song inaccurate; the want of means to compose sentences, infrequency of the Cymraeg, and want of poetry.

§ 1708. Three things will aid a songster to diversify his song; the guidance of stories, bardism, and an old song.

§ 1709. Three things will blunt a songster's genius; want of direction, want of poetry, and want of praise.

§ 1710. Three things that will entirely corrupt a songster's genius; excessive drunkenness, excessive fornication, and excommunication.

§ 1711. Three things that a poet ought to avoid; liquor, a harlot, and strolling minstrelsy.

§ 1712. Three things that a songster ought to praise; liberality, amusement, and minstrelsy.

§ 1713. Three things that will magnify a songster; dress, acquaintance, and approbation.

§ 1714. Three things that will ruin a songster; nakedness, want of acquaintance, and disapprobation.

§ 1715. Three things that will not harmonize in a song; instability, levity, and want of poetry.

§ 1716. There are three things that a song will embrace, and not contradict; an old song of the old poets, the inventive authority of the new poets, and the art of poetry.

§ 1717. There are three sorts of alternity; a roundison alternity, a catenated alternity, and a sparsison alternity.

§ 1718. There are three kinds of homœorythm; direct homœorythm, recurrent homœorythm, and inverse homœorythm.

§ 1719. Three things that a songster ought not to believe; the minstrel's song of satire, where a poet will be composing, for stronger ought to be the poet's song of praise, than the minstrel's song of satire. In the second place, he ought not to believe that a false song, or an unpoetical song, has been sung by an approved and authorized poet; for it is a chance that a reciter may be found who will recite a song exactly as it is sung by a poet. In the third place, he ought

not to believe what cannot be, as if on the authority of the sages, such as, that it is not right to wash on a Friday, or to bathe the head on a Wednesday, for the sages do not prohibit any of these things, neither is it prudent to believe or give credit to them.

§ 1720. There are three things that are unbecoming a poet to be implicated in or to practise; to oppose learning, to tell lies assiduously, and to satirize without a cause.

§ 1721. There are three things that will delight and honour a songster; to respect him, to praise his song, and the gifts of men of renown.

§ 1722. There are three things that will vex and sadden a songster; to disrespect him, to disapprove of his song, and to give him a refusal.

§ 1723. There are three things that will disparage a songster; to disbelieve, to dispraise, and to falsely judge him.

§ 1724. The three indispensables of a songster; intrepidity of speech to recite a song, poetical meditation lest the song be incorrect and unacceptable, and boldness to answer what is inquired of him.

§ 1725. Three things that a songster ought not to divulge; secrets, the shame of a companion, and an untoward lie.

§ 1726. Three things that a songster ought not to conceal; reproachless truth, judgment upon poetry, and the praise of good men.

§ 1727. Three things are prohibited to a songster; to misjudge poetry, to satirize without a cause, or to utter falsehood in his lore, and a cross temper or ill-nature.

§ 1728. Three things will bring love and approbation to a songster; generosity, amusement, and his praise of good manners, or celebration of good men.

§ 1729. Three things will disgrace a songster; covetousness, bad manners, and excessive thriftiness.

§ 1730. Three things will cause a songster to be loved; concord, generosity, and kindness.

§ 1731. Three things will bring genius to a songster; learning, experience, and art.

§ 1732. Three things that will corrupt the genius of a songster; drunkenness, adultery, and disapprobation.

§ 1733. Three things that will improve the genius of a songster; emulation, joy, and approbation.

§ 1734. There are three things that a songster ought to adjust, when he is asked to recite to others; learning, truth, and judgment upon poetry.

§ 1735. There are three things that disparage a songster; nakedness, the want of a songster, and non-acquaintance.

§ 1736. There are three things that will honour a songster; raiment, authority, and boldness.

§ 1737. Three things that will cause a songster to be hated; covetousness, addictness to drink, and the habit of satirizing good men.

And thus ends Edeyrn the Golden-tongued's analysis of the Welsh language, and the metres of vocal song, and other matters appertaining to poetry and usages, which ought to belong to a poet, according to the wisdom of the old Welsh poets.

The end.

THE SYSTEM OF DAVYDD DDU ATHRAW.

WE will here treat of the twenty-four metres, out of the book of vocal song ; for metricity or poetry is formed from proper perfect sentences.

SECTION CLXXIII.

METRE.

§ 1738. What is metre, or poetry ? It is an arrangement of proper perfect sentences formed of ornamental and magnificent words, which are also adorned with approved adjectives indicative of praise or satire ; the whole being interwoven into a worthy vocal song.

§ 1739. There are three branches of poetry ; namely, homœostiches, systiches, and stichopolyrhythms.

SECTION CLXXIV.

HOMŒOSTICH.

§ 1740. There are three kinds of homœostiches ; a homœodistich, a caudate homœostich, and a rhythmic homœostich.

§ 1741. There are two kinds of homœodistiches ; a short homœodistich, and a long homœodistich.

§ 1742. The short homœodistich consists of eight syllables, four in each verse ; as, according to the old form,

Eiliw gwenic Tonn am gerric.

And, according to the new form ; thus,

Deur hil vil vur ; Didarf Dudur.

§ 1743. The long homœodistich consists of fourteen syllables, seven in each verse ; as the following, according to the old form,

March ffyrf archgrwn byrr i vlew,

Llyfn, llygadwrth, pedreindew.

And thus, according to the new form,

Y mae y mi am y myd

Wyneb un yn i benydd.

§ 1744. The caudate homœostich consists of two, or three, or four verses, of eight syllables each, all the tails being homœorhythm throughout the homœostich, and seven syllables long each one, with a recurrent word between the stanza and the tail. The following is an example after the old style ;

Lluwch eiry arwydd mynydd Mynnau,

Lluoedd a'th vawl gwawl gwawr Dehau,

Llathlun gorœu oleuddydd.

According to the new form ;

Y mae gorhoff em a garaf,

O gof aelaw ac a volaf,

O choeliaf gael i chalon.

Of three verses ; thus,

Iownach heddyw yw nai chuddio,

Uwch i chenedl uwchuwch yno,

Ar i golwc ar ai gwelo

Alw honno eiliw hinnon.

Or thus, of four verses,

Oll awn i'r Gaer y llenwir gwin,

I Glas hirddol Eglwys Hyrddin,

Y Plas yssy val Powls a Sin,

Pantri'r Val val Pentre'r velin,

Aur dilin i'm yw'r dolydd.

§ 1745. The rhythmic homœostich consists of fourteen syllables, seven in each verse, with a recurrent word at the beginning of the second verse, responding to the first rhyme, while the last rhyme is different, and withal uniform throughout the homœostich; as is the following, according to the old style,

O gwrthodi liw ewyn
Was divelyn, gutynnau,
Kael o honod aradr gaeth
Y waethwasth i anwydau.

And, according to the new style, thus,

Un a dal y Nadolic
Obr diddyg i brydyddion,
Ac a bryn ddec, o bae raid,
Llongaid val y gollyngon.

SECTION CLXXV.

SYSTICH.

§ 1746. We will now treat of the second branch; namely, systiches.

§ 1747. There are two kinds of systiches; that is to say, an homœorythm systich, and an alternate systich.

§ 1748. There are three kinds of homœorythm systiches; a direct homœorythm, a recurrent homœorythm, and an inverse homœorythm.

§ 1749. The direct homœorythm systich consists of thirty syllables, sixteen in the shaft (paladr,*) and fourteen in the head (pen.*) The position of the shaft is on the fifth syllable, which is the advanced division (rhagwant;) and should the first rhyme terminate on the seventh syllable, the recurrent word ought to be of three syllables; if it terminate on the eighth, the recurrent word ought to be of two syllables; if it terminate on the ninth, the recurrent word

* "The two first verses are called the *shaft*, and the two last are called the *head* or *wings* from their resemblance to the arrow of a bow."

Dr. J. D. Rhys, p. 156.

must be of one syllable. That termination is called a division (*gwant*;) as in the following, where it falls on the eighth syllable,

Dylynais klwyvais val y *klyw*—deukant
 Y dekaſ o ddyn byw,
 Dolur gormodd am doddyw,
 Dilyn pryd ewyn prid yw.

§ 1750. The second style of an homœorythm systich is formed by a contrasted consonancy (*trawsgynghaneddu*), without an advanced division; as,

Arglwydd Sain Bened a erglyw—weiniaid,
 Anawdd kael i gyfryw;
 Bid menestr bywyd Mynyw,
 Beda ddoeth abadoedd yw.

And though there be no advanced division, there ought to be a rest on the fifth syllable.

§ 1751. Sometimes a simplicity (*odidowgrwydd*) is sung in it; that is, when the recurrent word is made to answer to the fifth syllable; as,

Dolur a *gevais* o dalau—*dwyais*,
 Dial am bechodau,
 Dwyran adwyth dyrnodiau,
 Dwr y kryd yn dyrnu* krau. * al. dirwyn.

§ 1752. The inverse homœorythm systich consists of twenty eight syllables, seven in each of its four verses; the shaft being similar to a stanza of long homœodistich, and the head like a rhythmic homœostich; as,

Diboen verch Koel Godeboc,
 I Gred y kefaist y Groc;
 Ugain trychant a wrantu
 Oedd oed Iessu Dduw Dwysoc.

§ 1753. Sometimes this metre is sung in the form of a recurrent alternity, as Tudur Aled sang the following systich;

Nerth yw dy rann wrth dy *rymm*,
 Aeth yn dy ras a'th wayw'n *drucmm*,
 Aethost iownlwyth Ystanlai,
 Lle nid *ai* y llew na *dimm*.

§ 1754. The inverse homœorhythm systich is that in which the two long verses are last, and the two short verses first, contrary to the form of the direct homœorhythm, but of the same metre ; as the following,

I'r gangen wann ar lannerch,
A roddes yn arwydd serch,
A chudynnau brwyn, o chaid annerch hardd
I glaervardd eglurverch.

§ 1755. There are two sorts of alternate systiches ; a catenated systich, and a heterorhythmic systich.

§ 1756. The heterorhythmic systich varies its rhymes, and is twenty-eight syllables long, each of its four verses having seven syllables ; as,

Y gwr y sydd dri ac un ;
Dad, Vab, ac Yspryd, a dyn ;
Duw vara gorff dwfr a gwin
Ydyw oll, o deallon.

§ 1757. The catenated alternity is of the same length, and is chained thus ; namely, the third rhyme answers to the first, and the fourth to the second ; as in the following systich,

Mae Rys heb gael mwy o'r hun,
Mae'r genedl ai mawr gwynan,
Mae'r beirdd, oblegid marw bun,
Mewn llewyg am Wenllian.

§ 1758. What is alternity ? The counterchange of vowels, and correspondency of consonants, occurring in the rhymes of the systich ; as has been shown before. When an alternity ends in vowels not followed by consonants, the same is called a semi-alternity, or the alternity of vowels ; as,

Doeth i'th etholes Iessu,
Em addwyn, yn vam iddo ;
Dovydd o ddiwad Awi,
Rac dial aval Eva.

§ 1759. The other systiches, namely, the vetericine systich, the long-legged systich, the warrior's systich, and the fisted systich, are pseudo-metres, and are not ranked among the twenty four metres.

SECTION CLXXVI.

STICHOPOLYRHYTHM.

§ 1760. We will now treat of the third branch of poetry ; namely, stichopolyrhythms, in fifteen metres ; perfluency, short odynic, long odynic, long auroric, short auroric, long autometre, short autometre, enneasyllabic autometre, brachyochyte, machrochyte, brachisagogic, salebrose, exploit of the bards (gorchest y beirdd,) brachyosiridic (cadwyn fyrr,) and catenated chytisagogic.

§ 1761. The perfluency consists of nineteen syllables, having two homœorythms in the stave, with a perfluid word, like the recurrent word of a direct homœorythm systich, ending on the tenth syllable ; the last verse of the perfluid stanza is always nine syllables long ; as,

A vynno evo a vydd yn i bro,
Ar hynn a vynno na bo, ni bydd.

§ 1762. The short odynic consists of thirty-seven syllables ; that is to say, of two verses having nine syllables each, and a long one after them like a perfluency ; as is the following stanza,

Lle bu'r gaer vaen llwybr gwyr a vynnai
Lloegr o dir Ffrank yn iefank a wnai,
Llew blin ym myddin maeddai,
Llym varchog enwoc a ddigonai.

§ 1763. The long odynic consists of fifty-five syllables ; four short verses of nine syllables each, and after them a long verse of perfluency, having nineteen syllables ; as the following stanza ;

Rhedaf rrad breisgaf lle rred brwysgion,
Ranndai rroid ossai i'r rroidussion ;
Reol Rys deol rryw westeion ;
Reidwest rrod llyest rradau Lleon ;
Ryddglos rrad agos, Ri digon rryddlys,
Rys, ryw vann ysbys Rufain osbion.

§ 1764. The short auroric consists of twenty-four syllables ; two verses of twelve syllables each, and every one having in

it, moreover, three short verses of four syllables each, the two former answering one to the other, and the third introducing the main rhyme, as in the following stanza ;

Iawn oi perchi I bawb erchi	}	o bob eirchyd
Ar y diben Oes anniben	}	i Sion Abad.

§ 1765. The long auroric, when single, consists of sixteen syllables ; if there be two stanzas, of sixteen syllables each, every one having in it four short verses of four syllables each, the three first being homœorythm, and the fourth introducing the main rhyme ; as in the following,

Mi a baraf I'm Gwenn araf Gann a garaf,	}	gân o gerydd,
Am lyvasu Fy nivlasu Am lliasu,	}	Em lliosydd.

§ 1766. The short autometre consists of four verses of eight syllables each, all of which are homœorythm ; as,

Yn Ior ydwyt, Sion waredawc,
A'n cun eurvalch Siancyn arvawc,
Wyr Faredudd arf Riwaedawc,
Aer arvodau orwyr Vadawc.

§ 1767. The long autometre consists of two verses, each having in it nineteen syllables ; making, moreover, three short homœorythm verses of five syllables each in the first part, and a short verse of four syllables introducing the principal rhyme ; as,

O roes voes veisydd Ivor rragor rrydd Ef a roe Davydd	}	i veirdd ddeuwvy.
Oes deiroes dirion A bair Mair ym Iŷon I buro kanon	}	Aberkonwy.

§ 1768. The enneasyllabic autometre is composed of four verses of nine syllables each, all of which are homœorythm ; as,

Aruthr yw llongaid wrth ddryll angor,
 O bai yw gweddi heb egwyddor ;
 O byddai megis budd ymogor,
 Y bobl o Wynedd heb i blaenor.

§ 1769. The brachyochyte consists of four short verses of eight syllables each, like a short autometre, followed by the shaft of a systich, which terminates each stanza of the ode ; and preceded by the shaft of a systich which commences the ode ; as in the following stanza,

Yno'r awn win llawn Ion llwynau—Hyrddin,
 Yw heirddion neuaddau,
 I dai'r dalaith Duw ar delwau,
 Ac ynn bedwar gwin a bwydau,
 I bur llynoedd o berllannau
 Ynn a redant yn wirodau,
 Yno gwelir gwir dan gaerau—nevawl
 Arglwyddawl roi gwleddau.

§ 1770. The macrochyte consists of sixty syllables ; that is to say, of four short verses, having each ten syllables, followed by a verse of perfluency of twenty syllables, all being homœorythm ; as,

Gwnn a wna v'enaïd gain enau vwyniant
 Gweddio'r Iessu gwiwdduw oreussant,
 Gar bron y delwau gwawr breiniau dylwant ;
 Gwyddai Dduw deilwng gweddi ddioliant ;
 Gwiwras a gavas gwarant oe gweddi,
 Gan Dduw oll iddi gynnydd a llwyddiant.

§ 1771. The brachisagogic consists of fifty-six syllables ; that is to say, of six short and homœorythm verses, each having seven syllables, followed by a verse of fourteen syllables, like the head of a recurrent homœorythm systich ; as,

Lloer ddeddfol llariaidd addoed,
 Llawen oedd i llunieiddied,
 Llawnglud verw llonn glodvored,
 Llym orchest haul llu merched,

Llys dirion drem llesteir*id*,
 Lludd vi varw lleddf vyvyr*id*;
 Llyna son mewn llwyn oe serch,
 Llais v'annerch ; lles a vynn*ed*.

§ 1772. The salebrose is composed of thirty-two syllables ; that is to say, of two verses at the beginning having each eight syllables like one half of the short autometre, followed by a verse sixteen syllables long, containing, moreover, three short verses, two of them being homorhythm, and of five syllables each, and the third of six, introducing the main rhyme ; with a recurrent word on the third syllable, responding to the two short verses, the whole stanza having in it three rhymes ; as,

Brwysgwr dynion braisc Ior doniawc
 Bro aer rinwedd breyr enwawc ;
 Brad vugad vwgw*l*,
 Brawdwr kiliwr kw*l*,
 Braich yniw*l* Brecheiniawc.

§ 1773. The bardic exploit consists of one stanza of fifteen syllables, in which are two short and homœorhythm verses of four syllables each ; the second syllable of the second verse answering to the second of the first, and each being consonant and alliterative ; followed by a verse of seven syllables, which introduces the main rhymes. The fourth and the second syllable of that verse agree in sound with the short verses, and are doubly genial and alliterative ; as,

I rrwydd air hir
 Yw chwydd, Och wir !
 Y swydd ai sir y sydd saeth

And similarly

I glai a glyn
 Y rhai o'r hun
 Idd ai y ddyn i Dduw 'dd aeth.

§ 1774. The brachyosiridic consists of thirty-two syllables ; that is to say, of two verses of sixteen syllables each, there being a recurrent word in each on the twelfth syllable, answering to the eighth. It harmonises doubly every four

and eight syllables. The whole stanza has three rhymes besides the four recurrent rhymes, that is to say, the first rhyme terminates on the sixteenth syllable, the second on the twentieth syllable, and the third rhyme concludes the stanza. And be it known that the four recurrences are homœorythm ; as,

Gwennvun gwynvawr geinvwyn gynvyl
 Gariad gweryl giried gorau,
 Gwirvodd gyrvau gorvydd gweurvyl
 Goruc eryl gwiw ragorau.

§ 1775. The catenated chytisagogic consists of sixty-four syllables, and in it are four short verses of sixteen syllables each. Each of the two first verses contains also two short verses of eight syllables each, the first syllable of all answering to the main rhyme, and the eighth syllable answering to the twelfth, the main rhyme being on the sixteenth syllable ; and the fourth syllable of the second verse answers to the first fourth syllable ; the eighth of the second verse answers to the eighth of the first verse, and the twelfth of the second verse answers to the twelfth of the first. The second rhyme falls on the thirty-second syllable. The other half is composed like two parallel verses of the long auroric ; as is the case with the following stanza,

*A*dkas doddiant oed kystuddiau,
*W*yf a lluddiau yw fy lladdiad ;
Y mae koddiant heb dim cuddiau
*A*r y gruddiau o'r gorweddiad ;
*E*m mi biau amlwc iau,
A gwelïau, a goleuad ;
*A*m elïau oer yw nghriau
*Y*th rann diau o'th wrandawïad.

SECTION CLXXVII.

ORIGIN OF THE "AWEN."

§ 1776. Here follows the way of knowing and distinguishing the metres of song, which have been derived from the Latin, through the doctrine of Einion the Priest, and Davydd Ddu the Teacher, who confirmed the metres which

they, and others before them, compiled. They began to be used in honour of God as early as the days of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, who was the first man that praised God, and made an image, which in Latin is called a figure. That was about six hundred years from Adam, and henceforth, until the birth of Christ, it was maintained by the prophets, and improved by them, during the time they prophesied of Jesus. And our language, when our forefathers had believed in Christ, obtained it through the Holy Spirit, and the Holy Spirit they called *awen*, which is extinguished by sins, but amplified by direction, science, and holiness.

SECTION CLXXVIII.

COLUMNS.

§ 1777. We will now treat of the columns and their number; namely,

1. The short autometre; and its length is four syllables.
2. The flowing (*wenn*) autometre; and its length is five syllables.
3. The heavy (*lâs*) autometre; and its length is six syllables.
4. The confined (*gaeth*) autometre; and its length is seven syllables.
5. The cross (*draws*) autometre; and its length is eight syllables.
6. The rugged (*drwsgl*) autometre; and its length is nine syllables.
7. The long autometre; and its length is ten syllables.

§ 1778. It is from these seven columns that are derived the twenty-four metres of vocal song, which the bards of the Island of Britain, are in the habit of composing and singing.

SECTION CLXXIX.

PROGRESS OF THE METRES.

§ 1779. The five best rhythmical metres were constructed by Taliesin; and were formerly called the five columns of Taliesin's song. These were perfluency, short odynic, long autometre, short autometre, and short auroric; and by some they are designated the five chairs of vocal song.

§ 1780. After that were invented other four metres ; namely, long odynic, enneasyllabic autometre, brachyochyte, and salebrose, which is called Cynddelw's style.

§ 1781. Subsequently, Davydd Ddu the Teacher, invented three more metres ; namely, brachisagogic, macrochyte, and catenated chytisagogic.

§ 1782. Einion the Priest, likewise, invented the long auroric ; Davydd ap Edmund invented two metres in lieu of the vetericine systich ; namely, the bardic exploit, and the brachyosiridic.

SECTION CLXXX.

RESUMPTION (CYMMERIAD.)

§ 1783. We will now treat of the resumptions of a vocal song, which tie the beginning of the verses, even as rhymes tie the end.

§ 1784. Resumption is the practice of beginning every verse with the same letter, which is sustained throughout. This, however, is often violated with the view of introducing sense into the song.

§ 1785. There are three kinds of resumption ; namely, resumption of letters (llythyrennol,) resumption symphonic, (cynghanneddol,) and sense-producing (synhwyrol) resumption.

§ 1786. The resumption of letters is as follows,

*Kalonn dynnion dwy Wynedd,
Kredo'r beirdd o'r kryd i'r bedd.*

§ 1787. The resumption of letters and symphony takes place when the verses harmonise together at the beginning ; as,

*Kanu bum ym Mrynn Kunallt ;
Kwyno'r wyf akw'n yr allt.*

Or as in the following stanza,

*Pum heryr pwy am heurodd ;
Pum haerwy aur vo'i pum rrodd.*

§ 1788. Every resumption that begins with vowels, though they be not of the same kind, is called a resumption of letters ; as,

*Ystiwart Rhos a dart rrydd,
Iechyd eryr i'ch deurudd.*

§ 1789. Sense-producing resumption takes place when the first stave of a song requires sense from the second stave to harmonise with it. Such is an approved resumption, though it be not of letters ; as,

*Ni ddug neb yn ddigon abl
Bleth anaur heb lwyth Venabl.*

§ 1790. A resumption of letters and sense is as follows ;

*Gwaed Ywain gwraidd a geidw'n grâs
Glynn Dwfr, ac o lin Defras.*

§ 1791. A parallel and sense-producing resumption is that where a parallel sound begins the verses ; as,

*Lluryc dan blyc dien blaid,
Suruc a gwregys euraid.*

§ 1792. There are three kinds of resumption proper to the chief of song ; symphonic resumption, resumption of letters and sense, and parallel resumption.

§ 1793. There are two kinds of resumption proper to a disciple ; resumption of letters, and sense-producing resumption.

§ 1794. How many things will render a vocal song proper to a master ?

Five ; namely, masterly resumption, alliterative consonancy, masterly rhyme, that is the placing of the rhyme on a forticine syllable, parallelism, and natural sense.

SECTION CLXXXI.

CONSONANCY.

§ 1795. We will now, out of the fourth book of vocal song, treat of the consonancies, which connect every metre in poetry.

Penn | ar yr haelion ai parch, |

such is usually called a contrasted hollow-jawed (*mantach*) consonancy, because there is so much in it that is ugly from the want of symphonic locks. By symphonic lock is meant the correspondence of consonants and the counter-change of vowels, as before observed. The consonancy is opposite hollow-jawed in the following verse,

Aur sydd vetel ragorawl.

§ 1804. The dragging consonancy is derived homœorhythmically from the sound, and takes place when the syllable next to the main rhyme, symphonises or co-rhymes with one of the preceding pauses, and is then dragged to the main rhyme in a descending accent ; thus,

Odid ym *gael* dy *haelach*.

This, however, is neither fit nor applicable but to the first line of a homœostich.

§ 1805. The lost-headed consonancy is sometimes derived from the cruciform, and takes place when the former head of the verse symphonises, and the latter head fails ; as,

Arghwydd eurglawr y Dehau.

§ 1806. Or as a lost-headed sound ; thus,

Y dydd tekaf haf hinon.

§ 1807. It becomes dragged lost-headed, when one or two consonants intervene between the dragging and the main rhyme ; thus,

Marchawc uwch nenn y Pennrryn.

§ 1808. The lost-headed consonancy was banished into captivity at the last congress that was held in respect of symphonies and metres in the time of the medalled author, Davydd ap Edmund ; though in the shaft of a direct homœorhythm systich it may be sung.

And thus end the five consonancies.

§ 1809. Formerly was used the scarce-meeting (braidd gyffwrdd) consonancy, which takes place when one or two locks of symphony occur in the middle of a poetical stave, whilst the two heads are deficient ; as,

Y gwr *hael o hil* Rodri.

Which also was banished at the same time, or earlier.

§ 1810. There are three cruciform consonancies ; a genuine cruciform, cruciform by connection (o gysswllt,) and a descending cruciform.

§ 1811. The genuine cruciform is that which may be sung backwards and forwards, and has a cruciform consonancy both ways ; as the following,

Ku adardy, koed irdeg,
Koed irdeg, ku adardy.

§ 1812. The cruciform by connection takes place when the same consonants conclude the principal pause that begin the stave or verse ; as,

A *theg* yw'r llwyth Eigr a Llyr ;

and

Kenau Efrog wineufrych.

§ 1813. The descending cruciform takes place when the syllable next to the main rhyme alternates with the principal pause, and descends thence to rhyme ; and it is necessary that the pause should be an ascending accent, and the rhyme a descending accent ; therefore it is called a descending consonancy ; thus,

Pwy nith *gar* pennaeth gwrol.

Or thus, with the pause ending in two consonants,

Bondo *gwydr* Bendigeidran.

But sometimes the pause ends in a vowel ; thus,

Un a thri yn ethrywyn.

Or in two vowels ; thus,

A'ch gwaed *rhyw* ywch gadw rheol.

§ 1814. Of the three cruciform consonancies, above mentioned, the best is the genuine cruciform, because it can be turned backwards and forwards, and made to rhyme on either of the two accents. Next to it is the cruciform by connection, because it may be made to rhyme on either of the two accents, like the other. Whilst of the three cruciforms the worst is the descending, because its ascending accent is confined, as already observed.

§ 1815. The genuine cruciform consonancy sometimes occurs without being aptly connected backwards and forwards, by reason of the nearness of the principal pause to the beginning of the verse or stave ; thus,

Mae plaid y mab hael o'i win.

This may be called an untractable cruciform.

§ 1816. There are three cruciforms by connection ; a cruciform by an entire connection, a cruciform by half a connection, and a cruciform by double connection.

§ 1817. The cruciform by an entire connection is sung as described in a former rule ; thus,

A theg yw'r llwyth Eigr a Llyr.

§ 1818. The cruciform by half a connection takes place when one grave consonant, having the force of two, terminates the principal pause, and a consonant with half its power is at the beginning of the verse or stave. Thus the latter part of the force of the grave consonant is taken to answer to the first consonant of the verse ; as,

Gwinllannau Ffraink yn llawn firwyth.

Or as follows,

Bu wir roi'r hap ar y rhyw.

Also,

Duc voliant i Gyveiliawc.

And a descending cruciform by half a connection,

Deunaw kant i un kyntedd.

§ 1819. The cruciform by double connection occurs when there are two consonants together in the principal pause, corresponding to the two first consonants of the verse ; as,

Drwy'r gwelydr ai ar goler.

§ 1820. The cruciform with an unsymphonic initial (coll y gyntaf,) takes place when *n* is the first consonant in a verse, and has none to answer to it : as,

Ni phlygwyd Rys a phlyg trin.

And each one of the three cruciforms assumes that character sometimes ; but, if it be a contrasted consonancy with an unsymphonic initial, it is faulty.

§ 1821. There are three consonancies of sound ; a smooth sound, a catenated sound, and a sound by connection.

§ 1822. The smooth sound is sung, as described in a former rule ; thus,

Llyr i gadw gwyr gydac ef.

§ 1823. The catenated sound takes place when one of the first words of the stave co-rhymes with the third word, and the second corresponds to the fourth ; as,

Pab Ruffain bro eurgain braff.

§ 1824. Sound by connection occurs when the last sounding proceeds from the junction of two words ; as,

Fyngherdd am y ddager dda.

Or from a junction at the lock of symphony ; as,

Oes bun nac yr un o gred ;

Or as the following,

Ac ergyd hevyd divai.

§ 1825. There are three dragging consonancies ; smooth dragging, dragging by connection, and dragging by double connection.

§ 1826. The smooth dragging consonancy is sung as has been before described ; thus,

Odid ym gael dy haolach.

§ 1827. Dragging by connection occurs when the first letter that comes after the pause is taken with the pause, and from the junction of the two letters a rhyme is formed to answer to the syllable that comes next to the main rhyme ; thus,

Nid a dyn gall dan alltud.

§ 1828. Dragging by double connection takes place when two consonants are in the same manner at the end of the pause and at the beginning of the succeeding word ; thus,

Y gwr kadr eraich paladr eriw.

§ 1829. A changeable (cyfnewid) consonancy takes place when the stave of a song has no correspondency of consonants, but only the changes of vowels ; as,

Ieuanck a hael yw Ywain.

§ 1830. A clawing (ewinoc) consonancy occurs when *k* aids one of these three letters *b*, *d*, *g*, to answer one of the three pica letters, namely *p*, *t*, *k*, as in the following verses ;

Kaer Gai enwog hir gynnydd.

Parchus yw y mab hirschwyrn.

Tudur Llwyd hyder y llew.

§ 1831. Also when one of these two consonants, *l*, *r*, is squeezed with one of the three consonants above mentioned, *b*, *d*, *g*, and is followed by *k* ; as in the subjoined verses,

Kroenwynn fal dilwgr hynod.

Tri gwaladr hy o Gwlen.

Bwrw plyc ar barabl hygar.

§ 1832. Such is called a clawing consonancy. Also, when one of these three consonants *b*, *d*, *g*, ends one word, and the same consonant begins the next word in the complex formation of consonancy, by their united power they may answer to one of the three pica letters, *p*, *t*, *k* ; as in the following lines,

Pinagl wyd ar bob bonedd.

Trysor gwlad di rus Ior glew.

Af ar kan i vrig Gwynedd.

§ 1833. Moreover, one of the above consonants, *b*, *d*, *g*,

may alone answer to one of the three pica letters, when it occurs at the end of a word, and one of these letters *ff, k, ll, p, ss, t*, begins the next word in the complex formation of the symphony; for the energy and power of one of these imparts to it the force of a pica letter. In that case it can answer a pica letter of the same nature coming after it, as in the following verses,

Brig ffydd a bair koffa hwnn.
Y mab koch mwy hap y kaid.
Aed llawer at y lluoedd.
Brig prenn o bark y prynwr,
Heb swydd mor happus a hwnn.
Ymhob tir mae hap yt oll.

Others of the same kind may be inferred from these.

§ 1834. A fortisparsison syllable has three powers in the construction of symphony.

§ 1835. The first is correspondency with its own kind in a descending consonancy; as,

Llys gadr lliwus y gwyrwyd.

§ 1836. The second is correspondency with a rotundison syllable; as in the following verse,

Brain Syr Rys bro ainssio ruthr.

§ 1837. The third is correspondency with two rotundison syllables; thus,

Ac iaith hagr gwaethygu.

§ 1838. Moreover, when these twelve consonants *ff, f, k, g, p, b, t, d, ll, l, th, dd*, come together by twos in the complication of symphony, the light ones will lose their force and power, because the others will prevail over them, as in the following verses,

Praff fonedd pur a ffynniant.
Brig kenedl broau kynan.
O hap breuder pur ydwyt.
O waed Tudur at Edwin.
Velly mal y wraig voull llwyd.
Wrth ddyvod o'r eithavoedd.

David ap Edmund also sang thus,

Gair o'th vronn gwawr ddyffrynnoedd.

And Gruffydd Hiraethog, thus,

O'th actiau'r praff ddoctor Prys.

§ 1839. Three things appertain to the cruciform consonancy; correspondency, mutual change, and a pause.

§ 1840. There are four pauses in the stanza of a homœostich; one on the consonancies, one on the tenses, one on the persons, and one on the rhyme.

§ 1841. There are five pauses in the consonancies, for a pause may occur on each one from the first to the sixth.

§ 1842. There are two pauses on the tenses, and two on the persons, which indicate their sense and discrimination.

§ 1843. We will now describe the consonancies that are mixed of two or three together in the same verse.

§ 1844. The genuine sonorous and cruciform (seingroes) consonancy is a co-mixture of the sonorous and cruciform; thus,

Llaw a barr draw lle bo'r drin.

§ 1845. The sonorous and cruciform consonancy by connection.

Gwresog yw'r kog ar siwgr kann.

A'th wayw nowllath a nillud.

§ 1846. The sonorous and cruciform consonancy by joint connection takes place when the connection of the sonorous, and the connection of the cruciform are together; as,

O droi y rrod i ryw Rys.

I Gelli Wig ac yw llys.

§ 1847. The cruciform and sonorous consonancy by connection with an unsymphonic beginning; thus,

Ni thyfrrwd it'h vyw ar honn.

§ 1848. The genuine, catenated, sonorous, and cruciform consonancy is thus sung;

Trist vydd llif tros Davydd Llwyd.

Lle arch o hyd Llywarch hen.

§ 1849. The descending, catenated, sonorous and cruciform consonancy by connection, is thus sung ;

Nim gyrr ban im gwir boeni.

§ 1850. The descending, catenated, contrasted and cruciform consonancy by connection ; thus,

Uchel vaich Hywel Vychan.

§ 1851. The genuine, cruciform, root-losing consonancy is after this manner ;

Ond treulio da trwy lid oll.

§ 1852. The cruciform, root-losing consonancy by connection is thus ;

Ni thynnir bath hwnn o'r byd.

§ 1853. The descending, cruciform, root-losing consonancy ;

Nid yw hawdd i dyhuddaw.

§ 1854. The descending, sonorous, and contrasted consonancy ;

Vynawc riain vain vuned.

§ 1855. The descending, catenated, sonorous, and contrasted consonancy ;

Od aeth gair rrod a'th geraint.

§ 1856. The descending, cruciform, and dragging consonancy is after this manner ;

Nid oes dyn un destunion.

§ 1857. The descending, contrasted, and dragging consonancy ;

Nan hol dirgel nan helynt.

Y gwr ar warr y garrec.

§ 1858. The catenated, sonorous, and cruciform consonancy by connection, is thus sung,

Pwy a wnai gost pennaic Ial.

§ 1859. The descending, cruciform consonancy by connection at the pause, is thus sung ;

A maen perl mewn parlmant.

SECTION CLXXXII.

POETICAL FAULTS.

§ 1860. We will now proceed to speak out of the fifth book of vocal song, called Prosody, of the faults of poetry ; and first of the avoidable faults, which are called common faults, and their appurtenances or branches. All those faults have but two roots or sources, namely excess and defect, or too much and too little. These faults come under the cognisance of prosody, for a poet cannot be a chief of song, or a teacher to instruct, sing, and judge properly, until he is acquainted with the common faults and their classification.

§ 1861. The following are the names of the common faults ; excess of rhymes, ugly sound, which counterchanges with the rhyme, -ape's breech, hoof-overtaking, too much alike, and rhyme-treading. There are three falsities ; a false consonancy, false rhyme, and false resumption. Bad idea, bad sense, and bad meaning ; mutual collocation of singular and plural ; mutual collocation of masculine and feminine ; mutual collocation of present and absent ; mutual collocation of sparsison and rotundison ; mutual collocation of gravison and levison ; mutual collocation of rough and smooth ; wrong time, wrong person, wrong case, wrong position. These are the blemishes of vocal song, and it is right that they should be avoided ; for there are three things that a poet ought to do, that is to say, he ought to teach properly, to sing properly, and to judge properly.

§ 1862. Excess of rhymes occurs when there are two rhymes in a single stave of a homœostich, whereas there ought to be but two in the whole stanza ; as,

Ai gad wyth oes gyda 'i thad.

Or, whatever metre it may be, if it contains more rhymes than what the class requires, there is an excess.

§ 1863. Ugly sound occurs in sonorous symphony, when the sounding of the last rhyme of the consonancy alternates with the principal rhyme, so that it falls unbecomingly on the ear ; thus,

Yn arglwydd arwydd iraidd.
 Kadr i daradr drwy derydr.
 Pe kedwid am dir gwir gwyr.

§ 1864. Counterchange with the rhyme is of the same nature as the ugly sound, only that the former occurs in the cruciform or in the contrasted consonancy, and takes place when the principal rest of the consonancy and the principal rhyme mutually alternate ; thus,

Y dewr gwrol drwy gweryl.
 Y dyn ve ffaeliodd dy don.

§ 1865. The ape's breech occurs, when in a stanza of either a long homœodistich, or a short homœodistich, both rhymes have the same accent, being an ascending one ; as,

Y gwr a luniodd y gad
 A wnaeth i'w vro annoeth orad.
 Gwrab oedd yn gyrru bw
 Gwreigan gul greg yn galw.

This stanza, however, has two faults besides ; namely, an interrupted metre and a false rhyme.

§ 1866. Hoof-overtaking, formerly called shank-relaxing (garllaes,) is similar to the ape's breech, except that both the rhymes have a descending accent ; as,

Dwrn a chledd duedd *dieingl*,
 Drws a deugwrr dros *Degeingl*.

§ 1867. Too much alike takes place when both the symphonical pause and the rhyme are in a descending accent, and mutually resemble each other ; since there will be but one or two consonants at the termination to prevent a double rhyme ; thus,

Ievan vynghariad *Ievank*.
Llawer diwrnod *llawen*.
Rhydec vu yr *anrhydedd*.

§ 1868. If, however, such a thing takes place in the ascending accent, it may not be called too much alike, but alike, and it is not a fault ; as Davydd ap Edmund sang to a woman in respect of her hair ;

Y mae a *pheth* am i *phenn*,
Yr haf val y Rhiw Velen.

§ 1869. Sometimes the too much alike takes place in regard to reason or sense; that is to say, when a word contains two meanings, one indicative of praise, and the other of satire; for frequently the song is taken to refer to the worst meaning, and hence it is said to be too much like satire; thus,

Oer oer i holl Gymry rrawc
Oedd orchudd gwr *ardderchawc*.

Though *ardderchawc* signifies excellent, or dignified, yet if it be predicated of a person sprung from *ordderchiad*, (that is, base born) it would be considered as a term of reproach, and hence too much like it.

§ 1870. Rhyme-treading takes place when the symphonical pause, or a part of that syllable, treads on the rhyme; thus,

Y gwor o Gaerlleon Gawr.

For proud is the rhyme, being the eye of the song, and will not therefore suffer any thing to injure it.

Y mab rry *hydr* ymhob *brwydr*.

§ 1871. Sometimes rhyme-treading occurs in a dragging or homœorythm consonancy; that is, when a letter or two are taken from the rhyme to help the consonancy; thus,

A chrwk ar i *orest* a *llestr*.

For the same letter or letters cannot render two services at once; they cannot harmonise and rhyme also.

§ 1872. Sometimes also rhyme-treading takes place when two or three verses in a homœostich are trodden together, so as to become homœorythm.

§ 1873. False consonancy takes place when a consonant or two occur in one part of the lock or locks of symphony, without any to correspond therewith in the other part; as,

Meirch unlliw mae Machynllaeth.

§ 1874. And in a sonorous symphony; thus,

Kawgiau a chreithiau 'r vrech wenn.

And still more erroneous ; thus,

Parabl dyn trwyadl o'm tref.

§ 1875. Or in a dragging consonancy, when a letter in the one word is left unharmonised in the other word ; as,

Mae yr ystolff val golchffon.

This fault is like leaving one rail of a partition unwattled.

§ 1876. When there is a lost-headed consonancy ; it takes place when the beginning of a verse or stave of a stanza symphonises, whilst the end does not ; thus,

Arg wydd eurglawr y Dohau.

This is likened to a sword with its point through the scabbard. But if the defect be in the former part, it is like a sword without a pommel.

§ 1877. False rhyme takes place when there are different consonants, or vowels, in the rhymes ; as,

Llyn o ddwfr am lleinw o *ddic*,
Llonaid tagell Llyn Tegid.

Or as this stanza ;

Y llwdn gwaraidd llydan *gwrw*
Llwydvawr yssydd yn lled*varw*.

Or thus,

Dialedd ac nid yw *elw*
Drwy wall i un dorri *llw*.

Raid i arglwydd drwy *erglyw*
Roi i stad dan restiad *Duw*.

§ 1878. False resumption takes place when there are various consonants in the resumptions, without the saving substitute of natural sense ; as,

Karw penn au gwyr piau ni,
Paladr o Fran ap Beli.

§ 1879. It is not, however, a false resumption when the verses begin with different vowels, for the counterchange of

two vowels is an alternate (cyfnewid) consonancy, and accordingly it may be called a symphonic resumption ; thus,

*Y ddyn vwyn a ddaw 'n vynych
Im meddwl gorph moddawl gwych.*

§ 1880. Bad imagination takes place when, with a view to eulogy, a weak, barren argument is imagined, and one which may be easily construed as referring to satire rather than to praise ; as,

*O daw eisiau da ar den,
Un lleuad a'th wna 'n llawen.*

Though the poet means a woman ; others would imagine that the reference is to a bright moon, in the light of which a man might drive cattle.

This is a fault in respect of logic.

§ 1881. Bad sense takes place when a measured, symphonic song is destitute of distinctive, intelligible sense ; or is without a personal verb to point out its sense ; as,

*Llun egoriad Llanguric
Ai vlaen ar Velin y Wic.
Dau wy, a cheiliog mwyalch,
Eidion, ac wy, o dyn galch.*

A fault in respect of logic.

§ 1882. Bad meaning takes place when a similitude is not in character with the subject and its nature ; as,

Katrin vodd Katerwen vain.

A fault in rhetoric.

§ 1883. Singular and plural occurs when a plural noun and a singular verb come together ; as,

Miloedd ni char ond Maelawr.

§ 1884. Or when a singular noun is put with a plural verb.

§ 1885. Also, when a plural noun substantive and a singular noun adjective come together ; thus,

Y gwyr deur o'r gard euraid.

Branches of this fault are frequently introduced under the sanction of an excuse ; that is to say, when what is wrong is fairer than what is right, in that it is in regard to reason more brief and less tough.

This is a fault which belongs to that part of grammar called syntax, and not to prosody ; and the same may be said of the two next likewise.

§ 1886. The mutual collocation of masculine and feminine occurs when a noun substantive of the masculine gender, and a noun adjective of the feminine gender come together ; as in the following lines,

Gwr ffol nid gorhoff weled.
Y hi yw'r *ffwl* ar y ffair.
Vry nid hardd i *vorwyrn* tec.
 A vynn destyn *eun distaw*.

§ 1887. Present and absent takes place when the third person is placed with the second, or the second with the first ; thus,

Mi evo *Sion* am vy sir
Yw'r dynion ni rydweinig.

And if a poet begins to compose a song as if in the presence of a man, he ought not afterwards so to turn it as if in his absence, lest he incur this fault.

§ 1888. Sparsison and rotundison takes place when a sparsison syllable answers to a rotundison syllable, or to a strange one ; sometimes in a dragging consonancy ; as,

Yn Ial gwnai Ruffydd *Maelawr*.

Or as in this verse,

Raid rifo'r *gwyr* yn *llwyrach*.

Or thus, in a sonorous symphony ;

Vy swydd o vewn *manwydd* Mai.

Sometimes it occurs in the main rhyme ; as,

Ni thrinwyd llew aelwyd *Llyr*
Natur Sion ond trwy *synwyr*.

Sometimes, also, it happens in an alternate systich in the alternity ; as,

Y gwr balch sy'n digio'r byd,
 Ac er i vudd y gwyr i vod,
 Yn wir gostyngir i stad
 Anhoff i wedd oni *phaid*.

Or thus in diphthongs,

Y llew gwych wrth ennill gair,
 Weithion i gyd aeth yn gawr ;
 A nos a dydd yn was dewr,
 Yn lladd amkanai yn *llwyr*.

§ 1889. Gravison and levison takes place when a grave word and a light word come together in the same accent, that being an ascending one ; thus in a dragging consonancy,

I wlad *Von* nid eiff *honno*.

§ 1890. In every polysyllabic word, the last syllable but one will have the ascending accent, unless the symbol of deep breathing, or partition of accent, cause it to be lost, as is mentioned in the beginning of the book.

§ 1891, Gravison and levison in a sonorous symphony ;

Ar *dorr* merch y *kor* y *kaid*.

That is the altar.

§ 1892. This fault must also be avoided in a homœorythm systich, in an alternate systich, and in rhythmic metres ; for when a verse first comes to rhyme in an ascending accent, the weight of the same must be followed throughout the whole stichopolyrythm, whether it be grave or light, according as the verses happen to be accented.

§ 1893. Rough and smooth is a sad blemish in a song, which consists in a wrong position of vowels relative to the principal rhyme, and the symphonic pause, whether the pause be an ascending or a descending accent ; for there ought to be in these accents a genuine correspondency and counterchange ; as in this stanza,

Ku adardy
 koed irdeg.

Rough and smooth thus,

Am Rowland Abermarlais.
O vraster ev a rwystrodd.

Thus in an ascending accent,

Huw Konwy fry hy kawn varn.

And in a descending accent ; thus,

Yn y dwrn yn dirynnu.

I Deirwn y dirynnaf.

Parabl Syr Wiliam Probart.

§ 1894. When there is no relevancy to the rhyme, it is no fault, therefore it is called a separate or distinctive fault ; thus,

● *Byw ar dri broder o Ial.*

§ 1895. Sometimes it is withdrawn from relevancy to the rhyme ; as in the last verse of the following stanza ;

Pwy oll a ddug pell ydd aeth
Warthofl aur wrth vilwriaeth.

§ 1896. Wrong time takes place when the future tense is put instead of the present tense ; as,

Pann dynner penyd anian,
Maen growndwal mae'r wal yn wann.

Or thus,

Y mae neithior y vory
A mw'nai'n vraise mewn mann vry.

§ 1897. Wrong person takes place when one possession is put instead of the other ; thus,

Tir kaeth vydd y Turk i'th vab.

§ 1898. Wrong case takes place when an irrelevant case is put in the sentence, such as beginning the sentence with an impersonal verb ; thus,

Neur mynnu un or manwydd.

§ 1899. Wrong position occurs in consonancy, rhyme, pause, or metre.

§ 1900. Wrong position in consonancy happens when the consonants are misplaced, being moved out of their proper positions, though there may be as many of them in one place as in the other; as,

Kawn vedd rrad kyneddvau Rys.

|—————|

Or as in this verse,

Vathrod ag ef vyth drwy gas.

|—————|

Such a wrong position is also called false consonancy.

§ 1901. Wrong position in rhyme occurs when the vowels are misplaced in the pause and rhyme; as already shown in the rough and smooth; thus,

I deirnon y dirynnaf.

§ 1902. Wrong position in a pause consists in the placing of the pause in a cruciform consonancy too near the rhyme; as,

Y gwr a brig ar bregeth.

§ 1903. Wrong position in metre consists in the placing of an advanced division or position in the metre of the shaft of a direct homœorythm systich in the sixth syllable of the inverse part of the stanza.

§ 1904. Wrong composition in a consonancy is a fault, as is the case with the following verse.

Oes yr un is yr awyr.

§ 1905. Wrong composition in regard to the descending consonancy occurs when its symphonic pause is not of the same nature as that of the syllable next to the rhyme; unless it be sparsison and rotundison, in which case it is not a fault; thus,

Gwr llwyd a geiriau Lladin.

Or thus, with the pause on vowels;

Heddyw dos hawdd yw dyall.

This fault is of frequent occurrence in the composition of words or sentences.

§ 1906. Irrelevancy, also, or what is not suitable to the person respecting whom the poetry is composed, is a fault in an approved song.

SECTION CLXXXIII.

FIGURES.

§ 1907. We will now treat of the figures and their parts, which William Salisbury turned from Latin into Cymraeg.

§ 1908. Schema is that which certifies a word, or speech, or sense, to be different from the common acceptation, and is divided into three parts; figure, fault, and virtue.

§ 1909. What is a figure?

It is a peculiar form of sense, speech, or words.

§ 1910. There are two kinds of sense; namely, sense and word.

§ 1911. Figure of sense takes place when a trite sentence is altered in respect of reason or sense.

§ 1912. Figure of word takes place when a word in a speech is renewed or changed beyond the usual custom. Its kinds are, figure of word, figure of speech, and figure of construction, or composition.

SECTION CLXXXIV.

FIGURE OF WORD AND ITS PARTS.

§ 1913. Figure of word, called transformation, is a certain change in one word, and in no more. The following are its parts,

Prothesis	Arddodiad
Epenthesis	Ymsang
Proparalepsis	Argymmeriad
Aphæresis	Rhagddygiad
Syncope	Cyttrwch
Apocope	Amdrwech, or Llosgyrndorr

Extasis	Estynniad
Systole	Cywasgiad, or Byrrhad
Diæresis	Gwahaniad
Episynaløphe	Cynglyniad, or Cyssylltiad
Synaløphe	Dilead
Antithesis	Trawslythyr
Metathesis	Trawsosodiad.

SECTION CLXXXV.

PROTHESIS; APPOSITIO.

§ 1914. Prothesis is the addition of a letter or a syllable to the beginning of a word. The addition of a letter, as, *gordd* for *ordd*, *datreiniad* for *atreiniad*; the addition of a syllable, as, *ys da* for *da*, *ys moel* for *moel*.

SECTION CLXXXVI.

EPENTHESIS; INTERPOSITIO.

§ 1915. Epenthesis takes place when a letter or a syllable is thrust between the first and the last syllables; as *medd-dawd*, for *meddwawd*; or as *n* creeps into several words; thus, *noethni* for *noethi*, *coegni* for *coegi*, *degair* for *deg-air*; a syllable; as *llwatrach* for *llwtrach*, *crybwyll* for *cybwyll*.

SECTION CLXXXVII.

PROPARALEPSIS; PRÆASUMPTIO.

§ 1916. Proparalepsis takes place when the end of a word is augmented; thus, *dewindabaeth* for *dewindab*, *hayachon* for *hayach*, *dyn faches* for *dyn fach*.

SECTION CLXXXVIII.

APHÆRESIS; ABLATIO.

§ 1917. Aphæresis ensues when a portion is taken away from the former part of a word; a letter; as, *sef* for *ys ef*; a syllable; as *andaw* for *gwarandaw*.

SECTION CLXXXIX.

SYNCOPE ; CONCISIO.

§ 1918. Syncope is a figure of a nature contrary to that of Epenthesis, because it cuts off a part from the middle of a word ; thus Harlech for *Harddlech*, anghysbell for *anghysyllbell*, gwrysbrysg for *gwrysgbrysg*, tegaswn for *tebygaswn*.

SECTION CXC.

APOCOPE ; ABCISSIO.

§ 1919. Apocope takes place when a letter or a syllable is cut off at the end of a word. A letter ; as trydy for *trydydd*, brais for *braisc* ; a syllable ; as,

Gwae wlad oer gwylio derwenn
We-darffo i wynt dorri phen. We for wedi.

SECTION CXCL.

EXTASIS ; EXTENSIO.

§ 1920. Extasis occurs when a syllable, short by nature, is extended, and is pronounced long ; as when it is said *meichïau* for *meichiau* ; or as in this stanza,

Pa elor hwy ple'r ai honn
 Pe bai elor Pabïlon. Lewys Mon.

Or Lloegyr for Lloegr.

SECTION CXCLII.

SYSTOLE ; CONTRACTIO.

§ 1921. Systole is the contraction of two natural syllables into one ; as cans for *cansys* ; or dyrd for *dyrød*, mynd for *mynød*.

SECTION CXCLIII.

DLÆRESIS ; DIVISIO.

§ 1922. Diæresis takes place when one syllable is divided into two ; as *cryydd* for *crydd*, *gwehydd* for *gwydd*.

SECTION CXCV.

EPISYNALCÆPHE ; CONGLUTINATIO.

§ 1923. Episyndalæphe joins two syllables into one; as, gwarau for gwaryau, gwan for gwahan, gwydd for gwedydd.

SECTION CXCV.

SYNALCÆPHE ; DELETIO.

§ 1924. Synalæphe takes place when the first of two vowels, coming together in two words, melts away; as v'oes for vy oes, nâd for na ad.

SECTION CXCVI.

ANTITHESIS ; POSITIO.

§ 1925. Antithesis takes place when one letter is put for another letter; as eurych for aurych, telyc for tybyc.

SECTION CXCVII.

METATHESIS ; TRANSPOSITIO.

§ 1926. Metathesis is the transposition of a letter; as baglur for blagur, ni sylf for ni syfl.

SECTION CXCVIII.

FIGURE OF SPEECH AND ITS PARTS.

§ 1927. Figure of speech is a certain form of speech, or a new composition. Its modes are the following;

Anadyphosis	Atyblyg
Anaphora	Edryd
Epanalepsis	Adymgymeriad
Epizeuxis	Gogysswllt
Paronomasia	Argyfenw
Schesis anomaton	Agwedd y geiriau
Homoœptoton	Cynhebygodl
Polyptoton	Lliosodl, or lliosdreigl
	Unhyd
Parœmion	Cynhebyg
Homœoteleuton	Tebyg ddiwedd

Prosopopœia	Dychymygaidd, or dychymygiaith
Aposiopesis	Attaliaith
Climax	Llusgiad, or cytgam
Polysyndeton	Lliaws gysswllt
Asyndeton	Digysswllt Gwrthnewid.

SECTION CXIX.

ANADYPHOSIS.

§ 1928. Anadyphosis takes place when the last word of the one sentence is repeated at the beginning of the other ; as is the case with the preludes of rhymes (*gostegion odlau*), where the termination of one systich commences the other ; thus,

Sequitur pulcherrimus *Astur* ; *Astur* equo fidens.

Y neb a garo *Dduw* ; *Duw* ai car ynte.

Aeth hiraeth rhwng bronn a thoryn—i char

Aed alar yw dylun ;

I dŷ Dduw aed wedd ewyn,

O dŷ Dduw nid ai y dyn. Davydd ap Edmund .

SECTION CC.

ANAPHORA ; RELATIO.

§ 1929, Anaphora takes place when the same word is repeated at the commencement of several verses ; as,

Ynys Von yw vy ennaint,

Ynys yw hilawn o saint,

Ynys Colchos wrth Rossyr,

Ynys Roeg yn sirio gwŷr. Lewys Glyn Cothi.

SECTION CCI.

EPANALEPSIS.

§ 1930. Epanalepsis (according to Donatus) takes place when the same word begins and ends a sentence ; as,

Vynghalonn a lanwodd o'th gariad : ac o achos hynny y torrodd *vynghalonn*.

SECTION CCII.

EPIZEUXIS ; SUBJUNCTIO.

§ 1931. Epizeuxis takes place when the same word is subjoined twice, without an interval, for the purpose of filling up the space, and augmenting the force of the sentence ; as,

Mawr y darvu marw dewrvab,
Marw *mawr, mawr* ; *Mair ! Mair !* ai Mab.
Tudur Aled.

SECTION CCIII.

PARONOMASIA ; AGNOMINATIO.

§ 1932. Paronomasia takes place when there is a certain mutual resemblance between words of a different signification ; as,

Daly y tant i'r deilwyd hen.

SECTION CCIV.

SCHEISIS ANOMATON ; HABITUS NOMINUM.

§ 1933. Schesis anomaton takes place when several words are tied together by knots of mutual resemblance ; as,

Marsa manus Peligna cohors festina virum vis.

Por klôd *nod nudd budd buddin*

Post *kost kad* partreiddiad trin.

I. ap Gr. ap Crach of Lleyn.

SECTION CCV.

PARCEMIION ; ASSIMILE.

§ 1934. Parcemion takes place when several words begin with the same letter successively ; thus,

O fite tute tati tibi tanta tiranne tulisti.

Dwg duth didawl druth dadl dri—dewr Dudur

Dros dir didwyll derdri ;

Dyn daer doeth dan dy dwrr di,

Daly delw drist del dail drosti.

SECTION CCVI.

HOMŒOTELEUTON ; IMITER DESINENS.

§ 1935. Homœoteleuton takes place when several words are put together ending homœorhythmically, or exactly alike ; as,

Dysgu kymysgu, masgoed, ai mysgu,
Dysgu, dilesgu, dan dew lasgoed.

SECTION CCVII.

HOMŒOPTOTON.

§ 1936. Homœoptoton takes place when several words are in the same declension, and are homœorhythm ; or when the last letters of each are mutually similar ; as,

Tadmaeth, mamaeth, llaeth, a llo.

Or

Iecan vynghariad ievant.

SECTION CCVIII.

POLYPTOTON ; TRADUCTIO.

§ 1937. Polyptoton takes place when several declensions have different terminations ;

Ex nihilo nihil in nihilum nil posse reverti. Persius.

This figure is not in use in the Cymraeg, because the same word in that language undergoes no change of termination in the cases, as it does in the Latin ; but merely a change of initials.

SECTION CCIX.

UNHYD.

1938. Unhyd takes place when the strains of the speech are of equal lengths to the end of the clause ; as,

Er y sydd, a vydd, ac a vu—o aur
Ac arian yng Nghymru,
Ni vynnwn, verch, geinærch gu,
Dec rwyddwallt, dy geryddu.

SECTION CCX.

PROSOPOPŒIA ; PERSONÆ FICTIO.

§ 1939. Prosopopœia takes place when it is granted to a dumb object to be articulate. This figure, whilst it is very much in use by the bards and poets, is employed no less by the fabulists ; thus,

Syganai'r Bi gri groenllem.

SECTION CCXI.

APOSIOPEISIS.

§ 1940. Aposiopesis takes place, when either through anger, or else from contempt, a part of the sentence is left unsaid ; thus,

Arch iddaw roi benthic march imi,
Ac onid ef—— Lewys Mon.

Pwy yw Ustus Powysdir ?
Pywys yn hai, heb Sion hir.

Understand Pywys *aeth* yn hai, &c.

SECTION CCXII.

CLIMAX ; GRADATIO.

§ 1941. Climax takes place when a word is dragged from the end of one sense to the beginning of another ; thus,

Ni wyr, ni wyl. Ni welodd, ni cherddodd.

SECTION CCXIII.

POLYSYNDETON.

§ 1942. Polysyndeton occurs when several words are put in the same place, with a multiplicity of conjunctions between them ; as,

Hugyn a Siockyn a Siak.

Davydd ap Gwilym.

SECTION CCXIV.

ASYNDETON.

§ 1943. Asyndeton takes place when a sentence is without a conjunction; as,

Merched, gwagedd, bonedd byd,
Meibion, plant ievaink, mebyd. John Kent.

Dwr, tân, awyr, ser, terra,—a mor,
A wnaeth Mab Maria;
Angylion nef, plant Eva,
Gwyllt, gwar, gwellt, gwydd, nos, dydd, da.

SECTION CCXV.

GWRTHNEWID.

§ 1944. Gwrthnewid takes place when the sense is reversed; as Cato observes,

Nid wyfi yn byw er bwytta; onid bwytta er byw.

SECTION CCXVI.

FIGURE OF CONSTRUCTION OR COMPOSITION.

§ 1945. Its modes are the following;

Prolepsis	Rhagymmeriad
Syllepsis	Cymmeriad
Appositio	Arddodiad.

SECTION CCXVII.

PROLEPSIS; PRESUMPTIO.

§ 1946. Prolepsis occurs when we take the whole, describe its parts, and then turn it back again towards the same thing; as,

Ffynu'n dec ffo yno'n dau,
Ffoes honn a ffoais innau.

Tair afon gynt a rifwyd,
O ddwyfronn Pumlumon lwyd;
Un a gyrraedd i'n goror,
Ac un a mysgc eigion mor.

SECTION CCXVIII.

SYLLEPSIS ; CONCEPTIO.

§ 1947. Syllepsis takes place when the more worthy prevails over the less worthy ; which, nevertheless, are of the same class of words ; as,

Mi a thi yn ysgrivennu.

SECTION CCXIX.

APPOSITIO.

§ 1948. Appositio occurs when two or more nouns substantive are joined together in the same place without a conjunction ; as,

O *Dduw* gwyn, *Veddyg* einioes,
Nad i verch newidio v'oes.

SECTION CCXX.

FAULT ; OR THE SECOND PART OF SCHEMA.

§ 1949. A fault in a sentence is, as it were, a certain error, which, though it be allowed sometimes to poets, yet is unbearable out of a song. Its kinds are,—

Obscurum	Tywyll
	Annhrefnus
	Afiaith.

SECTION CCXXI.

OBSCURUM AND ITS PARTS.

§ 1950. Obscurum takes place when the sentence happens to be obscure, either in respect of words, or else of the construction or position of the words. Its parts are,

Acyron	Ammhriawd
Pleonasmus	Llawn llonaid
Tautologia	Adroddair
Homœologia	Tebygair
	Gair ymwys
	Diffyg
	Gogylchiaith.

SECTION CCXXII.

ACYRON ; IMPROPRIETAS.

§ 1951. Acyron takes place when a word is used contrary to its proper meaning ; as,

Myned i goed lle irgoed llwyn
Ag an llwyd 'rwyf i gynllwyn.

Under the pretext of a word called Y Ganllwyd was this stanza sang to a maiden named Ann Llwyd. E. M.

SECTION CCXXIII.

PLEONASMUS.

§ 1952. Pleonasmus takes place when a sentence is filled with idle words ; as ,

Ar genau hwnn gwnn ganmawl
A ganwyf tra vwyf o vawl.

Lln. Gr. ap Med. Hen.

O gwyr ateb gair eto,
Ai vin atebed evo.

SECTION CCXXIV.

TAUTOLOGIA ; REPETITIO.

§ 1953. Tautologia occurs when the same word, or same sentence is repeated ; as,

Pen gwr call deall deuwr
Hoff enwog yw a *phen gwr*.

SECTION CCXXV.

HOMŒOLOGIA.

§ 1954. Homœologia is a worse fault than the preceding ; and it occurs when the whole speech is monotonous, and deficient in the change and variety of expressions, with the view of pleasing the listeners ; as is the case generally with the speeches, dictions, or songs of illiterate people.

SECTION CCXXVI.

GAIR YMWYS.

§ 1955. Gair ymwys takes place when a word or sentence contains an ambiguous meaning ; as,

Duw a *Mair* am helpio ; or, Duw *am air*, &c

SECTION CCXXVII.

DIFFYG.

§ 1956. Diffyg takes place when a word is wanting in a sentence.

SECTION CCXXVIII.

GOGYLCHIAITH.

§ 1957. Gogylchiaith is a kind of sham, wrongly gilt and magnificently decked tale ; or a certain gorgeous trimming with many relevant words that extend the tale to the bow's length ; though it may be narrated in two or three words ; as is the case with the former part of the homœostich that begins thus,

Govalu, heb dŷ, heb dâl ;
Gwanhau'r wyf gan hir oval. Tudur Aled.

SECTION CCXXIX.

ANNHREFNUS AND ITS PARTS.

§ 1958. Annhrefnus takes place when the words have neither order nor dignity. Its principal parts are,

Tapeinosis	Iselder
Kakemphaton	Croesanair
Kakozelon	Coegddynward
Aschematiston	Anffugredig
Kakosyntheton	Drygosodiad
	Bolysothach.

SECTION CCXXX.

TAPEINOSIS ; MEIOSIS.

§ 1959. Tapeinosis takes place when the dignity of the subject is lowered by the vulgarity, poverty, or feebleness of the word ; as,

Dy gywion di dwg yn d'ol, .
Dykant hwy deucant heol.

Y gwr ai wallt yn gaer wiw,
Val gwichiedyn gwych ydiw.

Lewys Daron, when he was a young man.

SECTION CCXXXI.

KAKEMPHATON.

§ 1960. Kakemphaton takes place when an expression may be understood in a burlesque sense ; as,

Hwde gerdd, dyn hoewdeg wyd,
Gann dy vardd, gwynn dy vorddwyd.

Huw ap Angen Coch y pwyth.

SECTION CCXXXII.

KAKOZELON ; MALA AFFECTIO.

§ 1961. Kakozelon takes place when one tries unsuccessfully to imitate, or follow some doctrine ; even as the lowest minstrels try to imitate the chiefs of song in their lays.

SECTION CCXXXIII.

ASCHEMATISTON ; MALE FIGURATUM.

§ 1962. Aschematiston takes place when the speech or sentence is simple, uniform, and without figures, which ought to be like stars or precious stones shining throughout from beginning to end. This fault arises from the practice of composing a song or metre with one kind of matter, imagery, and form, and every part so thoroughly alike in invention, as if the whole were shaped according to the same model, or cast in the same mould.

SECTION CCXXXIV.

KAKOSYNTHETON ; MALE COLLOCATUM.

§ 1963. Kakosyntheton takes place when a word is inconsistently arranged.

SECTION CCXXXV.

BOLYSOTHACH.

§ 1964. Bolysothach, or mixed language, takes place when a word or words of another allied language, or some old and new, suitable and unsuitable terms, are interspersed in a Cymric song.

Vy mhws *melod*, vy mherson,
Vy nghoffr aur vynghyff o Ron.

Dr. Sion Kent.

Vy mhws *God's mersi* am hynn. Id.

SECTION CCXXXVI.

AFIAITH AND ITS KINDS.

§ 1965. Afiath is a fault tending to a certain provincialism. Its parts are,

Barbarismos	Beius
Barbaralexis	Afeithair
Solecismos	Adeilad.

SECTION CCXXXVII.

BARBARISMOS.

§ 1966. A fault is called barbarismos, whether it be written or merely uttered, contrary to the proper usages of the language. It occurs by adding, taking away, changing, or misplacing a letter, syllable, accent, tense, tone, or breathing. Of the conversion of the sense of this figure into Cymraeg, see instances in those places, where we have before treated of figures ; and also in the homœostiches and stichopolyrhythms of many of the poets of the present generation. I. e. 1552 ut dicit R. V.

SECTION CCXXXVIII.

BARBARALEXIS.

§ 1967. Barbaralexis, the sense of this figure being turned into Cymraeg, takes place when a word from another language such as the Irish, the French, the Latin, or any other language besides itself, is inserted in a song or speech.

SECTION CCXXXIX.

SOLECISMOS.

§ 1968. Solecismos is a certain unequal and unsuitable position of the parts of speech ; which occurs in respect of all the appurtenances of the different parts of speech ; as when one case is put for another case, one gender for another gender, one tense for another tense, one mood for another mood, one number for another number, one interjection for another interjection, and one preposition for another preposition.

Mae imi yn oeri vy min,—am anadl
 Am mwnwgl am deulin,
 Am dwylaw am dau elin
 Mae'n glo iâ hyd ymhen glin.

Dau lin. *dwylaw elin* beth a dal—i bod.

Vy mod, for pe buasswn er ys talm, or er ys dyddiau ;
 thus,

Mynnwn *vy mod* ymannos
 Yn torri pen Atropos. Gutto'r Glynn.

Atropos, who cuts the thread ; Clotho ; Lachesis. These are the three sisters that rule the life of man, according to the Greek poets.

SECTION CCXL.

VIRTUE ; THE THIRD PART OF SCHEMA.

§ 1969. Virtue is that by means of which an oration is improved and elevated above the expression of the vulgar and illiterate. It has two kinds ; priodoldeb or fitness, and addurn.

SECTION CCXLI.

PRIODOLDEB AND ITS PARTS.

§ 1970. Priodoldeb is a sentence, which, whether spoken or written, contains nothing improper. Its parts are,

Analogia	Cyssondeb
Tassis	Estynniad
Syntomia	Crynodeb.

SECTION CCXLII.

ANALOGIA.

§ 1971. Analogia, according to the opinion of Diomedes, is a kind of mutual similitude, used for the purpose of adapting the mode and way of writing; but I see no reason why it should be so defined. When Diomedes made this a part and division of priodoldeb, I cannot see what he means.

SECTION CCXLIII.

TASSIS ; EXTENSIO.

§ 1972. Tassis is that whereby the sweet and pleasant agreeableness of the words is sustained, in that it lays a grave accent on some, a sharp accent on others, and a circumflex on others. This virtue belongs especially to the glide and declension of the word.

SECTION CCXLIV.

SYNTOMIA ; EVIDENTIA.

§ 1973. Syntomia takes place when a long tale, or a considerable argument, or story, is contained in a brief compendium of simple, forcible, and significant words. This figure constitutes the light or splendour of the oration, whilst its fortune and miracle consist in the employment of properly and spontaneously meet words, as that a man would think not only that he heard an account or memorial of a past deed, but that, by some commotion of the heart, he saw as it were, with his present eyes, what is narrated before

him personally. Of such nature are several stanzas upon the death of Tudur Llwyd, by Tudur Aled, and upon the conquest of Owain Glyndwr, by Gruffydd Llwyd ap Davydd ap Einion Lygliw ; as follows,

Peraist, vy Naf, o'th lavur,
 Pyst mellt rrwng y dellt ar dur,
 Drylliaist, duliaist ar dalwrn,
 Dy ddart hyn ymôn dy ddwrn.
 O nerth ac arial calonn,
 A braich, ac ysgwydd, a bronn ;
 Gyrraist yno gwrs donioc,
 Y llu gyrriad ychen llôc, &c.

Mae oes dyn ar Dduw moes di un o'r ddau,
 A'th vrain val Ywain am welïau,
 Caith ai'n veirw unwaith, &c.

SECTION CCXLV.

ORNATUS AND ITS KINDS.

§ 1974. Ornatus of a speech is a word so remarkable in itself, as not to require a more general description. Its kinds are,

Synthesis	Cyfosodiad
Cyriologia	Perthynas
Tropus	Cynnwrf.

SECTION CCXLVI.

SYNTHESIS.

§ 1975. Synthesis is a certain apt, well arranged, and lively construction, which causes each successive word to fall on the ear more strikingly than the former. Such is the address or speech of Gruffydd ap Ieuan ap Llewelyn Vychan.

SECTION CCXLVII.

CYRIOLOGIA.

§ 1976. Cyriologia is that speech, correct and relevant, which the very matter itself commends ; thus,

O they gwyr uthr i gyd
 A gwewyr yn gy'yd ;
 A phob un o'i gorph o bydd,
 Ai galonn val i gilydd ;
 Dan Dduw ni wyr dyn ddeall,
 Pwy'n llaw piau penn y llall.

Tudur Aled used to recite and greatly commend this poem, but he does not say that he knew who composed it, whether himself, or some other person.

SECTION CCXLVIII.

TROPUS.

§ 1977. Tropus is the conversion or removal of a word or sentence from its proper sense and signification into another signification, by virtue of an extraordinary and imperceptibly quick mutation. Its parts are

Metaphora	Traws symudiad, trawsym-ddwyn
Catachresis	Camarfer
Metalepsis	Traws gymmeriad
Metonymia	Traws enwad
Autonomasia	Newid enw
Epitheton	Addasair
Synecdoche	Dyall
Onomatopœia	Gair gwneuthur
Allegoria	Atychwel, arallaeg
Periphrasis	Amgylch chwedl
Hyperbaton	Traws chwedl
Hyperbole	Celwydd
Emphasis	Gair cudd rym
Homœosis	Cynhebygrwydd.

SECTION CCXLIX.

METAPHORA ; TRANSLATIO.

§ 1978. Metaphora is a very beautiful figure. Its characteristic is to borrow, or to move a word from its own propriety to a kindred similitude ; as when it is said, mi a

welaf, for yddwyf i yn *dyall*. This figure is used in various ways; one way is, when a word appertaining to a bird, or an animal, or a beast, is transferred to man; as when it is said, edrych y *trydar*, or *gweryru*, ys sydd ar y ferch yma;

Gwann a hen yw'r anghenvil,
Ac nid gwann *gnoiad i gil*.

Syr Rhys of Carno to Gutto'r Glynn.

Also, when the mutation is reversed; as, Eos Glynn Teivi, for Davydd ab Gwilym.

Also, when it is assumed that a dead thing is endowed with sense, though it be not in reality; thus,

Llawer kollwyn heb gwyno
Llithrad hwnn rryd llethr y to;
Llawer hyd ynhir Lley
Llwyn hesc yn llawen o hynn.

Ieuan Gethin ap Ieuan ap Lleision.

SECTION CCL.

CATACHRESIS; VERBORUM ABUSIO.

§ 1979. Catachresis takes place when a word is set near its own proper signification, whilst it yet deviates a little from it; as when Davydd ap Gwilym called Ivor Hael,

Kyvallt a mab aillt y beirdd.

SECTION CCLI.

METALEPSIS; TRANSUMPTIO.

§ 1980. Metalepsis takes place, when the meaning is comprehended, being carried on from word to word; thus,

Dydd Ebrill duodd wybrenn,
Yr hwyl wiw ar yr haulwenn,
Pan aeth dewrvab arabedd,
O lys y gwalch liosoc wedd.

In an elegy upon Wm. ap Gr. ap Deicws, on the point of drowning whilst fishing in Aled pond, addressed to old Robert Salesbury of Llanrwst.

SECTION CCLII.

METONYMIA; TRANSNOMINATIO.

§ 1981. Metonymia takes place when the inventor is put for what he has invented; such as the name Bacchus for wine, because it was he who invented and first made it. Or when what contains or supports a thing is put for the thing itself. Thus, Moes imi *lathen*, tithau a gei *bot*, instead of *lathaid* and *potiaid*.

E roed gras pob fformasiwn,
E hauwyd dysc yn *het* hwnn.

Or when the prince or chieftain is taken for a subordinate; thus,

Digel pan las Llywelyn,
Dewis gwr oedd *dywysog* ynn.

Or when the author is put for his work; thus, Ni ddylai un darpar prydydd vod unawr heb *Ddwydd ap Edmunt*, neu *Tudur Aled*, yn ei law.

SECTION CCLIII.

AUTONOMASIA; TRANSNOMINATIO.

§ 1982. Autonomasia occurs when it is said *y bardd*, instead of *Taliessin*; or *y prydydd*, meaning *Ddwydd ap Edmunt*; or when the inhabitants of this kingdom say *y ddinas* for *Llundain*; or those of France *y ddinas*, for *Paris*; or the Scots *y dref* for *Edinburgh*. And it is by this figure that the Cymro designates the chief of his country *y gwr*.

A chrio i Gymro y gamp.
Pan vo'r ymdynnu am dani,
At wr y tŷ trawud ti.

SECTION CCLIV.

EPITHETON; APPPOSITION.

§ 1983. Epitheton takes place when a suitable word is chosen, and inserted in a song, sometimes with the view of obtaining consonancy, sometimes in order to amplify, supply,

or adorn the song ; and sometimes for each one of these objects ; as,

Y fedwen fonwen vanwallt.

Gafr hwn, oes gyfryw a hi ?

Mae'n dinnoeth, ai mynn dani.

Sion Davydd Trevor.

SECTION CCLV.

SYNECDOCHE ; INTELLECTIO.

§ 1984. Synecdoche takes place when we understand many by naming only one ; as,

Mwyaf rryvel a welais,

Y sydd rrwng *Kymro* a *Sais*.

Or when we understand the whole by a part ; as,

Llawer *kalonn* bron eb ri

Brudd, herwydd briddo Harri.

Or,

Marw yw gobaith ein iaith ni,

At y gad eto y godi.

Or when we understand the kind by the form.

Or when we understand the thing made by its substance ; thus ;

Yw yn olwyn ennylir,

A thynnu'n hwn *aethnon* hir.

Or,

Er klybod darvod a *dur*

Newid hoedl Owain Tudur.

SECTION CCLVI.

ONOMATOPEIA.

§ 1985. Onomatopeia takes place when a verbal sound, or utterance is made to be the thing we hear ; as,

Porth Tomas porth nas porth nik,

Porth a ganydde gnwk yn ddignek.

Knik knek nim dawr pe knokid.

Davydd ap Gwilym to the Magpie.

Wich wach ar ol chwech ychen.

Wm. Lleyn to the cart.

Kanu rrink kena rronka. Tudur Penllyn.

Bombard i wr ai bumbys.

SECTION CCLVII.

ALLEGORIA ; INVERSIO.

§ 1986. Allegoria takes place when a signification is meant other than what is presented on the surface of the words ; as,

Pam na welwch i'r gwynt.

Pam na welwch i'r gwlaw.

Ni wnel gyngor i vam, gwnaed gyngor i lysvam.

§ 1987.

Ænigma	Dychymyg grwmaeg
Parœmia	Diareb
Ironia	Gwatworgerdd
Sarcasmos	Cellwair du
Astysmus	Cellwair teg
Antiphrasis	Gwrthwynebair
Charientismus	Teg dros hagr. Moes dros an-foes.

SECTION CCLVIII.

ÆNIGMA.

§ 1988. Ænigma is an obscure figure, the use of which is by no means to be recommended ; thus,

O bwriaf lam ar wartha mam,
 Mi a wn pam ; a mynn y pab ;
 Ni ydoedd gam imi vwrw llam,
 Ar wartha mam Iorwerth y mab.

SECTION CCLIX.
PARCÆMIA ; ADAGIUM.

§ 1989. Parcæmia is a common and reiterated saying, of peculiar notoriety ; as,

Deuair sydd raid i dyall ;
Gair mam, gair llysvam yw'r llall.

SECTION CCLX.
IRONIA ; ILLUSIO.

§ 1990. Ironia is a certain derision or mockery, not uttered expressly in words ; but manifested in the accent or manner of the person who speaks, or is spoken to ; just as the following expressions may be accentuated ;

Ys da fab. Och fi da.

SECTION CCLXI.
SARCASMUS ; JOCUS AMARULENTUS.

§ 1991. Sarcasmus (marw-wawd R. V.,) or a sour expression, is as the answer of Rhys Goch of Eryri to a boy, who on seeing many knives (together with the woodknife which he had) asked him whether he was sieve-maker. His reply was, Yes, by St. Cadvan's crozier ; and I have heard that thy mother has a hoop.

SECTION CCLXII.
ASTYSMUS ; URBANITAS ORATIONIS.

§ 1992. Astystmus is the frequent urbanity of speech.

SECTION CCLXIII.
ANTIPHRAISIS.

§ 1993. Antiphraisis is the conversion of a word into mockery ; as if a person should call a clumsy, ugly daub of a girl "the aspect of a summer-day ;" or a slatternly, heavy and drowsy damsel by the name of Creirvyw. This is mockery in one word.

CHARIENTISMUS.

§ 1994. Charientismus takes place when tender and gentle words are uttered in return for uncouth and stormy words ; as some, on hearing them, say,

Nawdd Duw rrac drwc.

Or as Davydd Trevor sang,

Diachos oedd y duchan,
Er hyn o lid mae rhai'n lân ;
Rhyvedd medd llyfr an rrifai
O bu vyw neb eb i vai.

SECTION CCLXV.

PERIPHRAISIS ; CIRCUMLOCUTIO.

§ 1995. Periphrasis takes place when a tale or a sentence is surrounded with many words ; which is done sometimes with the view of multiplying or of amplifying and extending the sentence ; as,

Mae dyn dig amdanad, Wenn,
Mwy i berigl na mab Urien.

Gwr march rrwng yr og ar mur,
A vu nal yw fy nolur.

Erchi yn hy, gwedi gwin,
Y tlws lle cad Taliessin.

Meredydd ap Rhys relative to the leathern bag.

A'th vwnwgl tan bleth vanaur. Tudur Aled.

Da gwyddost, yn post an parch,
Troi dwylaw, val traed alarch. i. e. to swim.

Am verch brenhin y Gwindir, i. e. France.
Oedd vun hardd wiw addvwyn hir.

Tadmaeth, mamaeth, llaeth, a llo.

§ 1996. Sometimes also with the view of disguising, and omitting to mention any obscenity, or scurrilosity, or any

bitter and improper expression ; as Ieuan Llwyd the poet sang ;

Val kymaint voliog gamel
Ydyw i bwrs a dwy bel ;
Ag wrtho ar lun gwerthyd
Lywaeth hardd o lath o hyd.

Cuddian ryw vann ar a vo,
Yssy gweddus i guddio.

SECTION CCLXVI.

HYPERBATON ; TRANSGRESSIO.

§ 1997. Hyperbaton consists in certain adverse words, that render the sentence tough and obstinate, and difficult to be understood ; as,

Ychydic dod ym oth help.

§ 1998.

Anastrophe	Atychwel
Dialysis	Dieithrsang ; gwahaniad ymadrodd ; ymadrodd doddi.
Diacope	Trycholllt
Synthesis	Plith draphlith
Hysteron, proteron.	Tin drosben ; cyntaf yn olaf.

SECTION CCLXVII.

ANASTROPHE ; REVERSIO.

§ 1999. Anastrophe consists merely in the wrongly placing of the word before, and the other after, contrary to the proper position ; as it is said in Virgil, Yr Ital gyferbyn, instead of Gyferbyn a'r Ital.

SECTION CCLXVIII.

DIALYSIS, PARENTHESIS ; INTERPOSITIO.

§ 2000. Dialysis takes place when the position of words is separated by thrusting a reason into the middle, which, were it left out, would not be missed ; as in the following stanza,

Pettwn (un nid oeddwn i)
Goganwr a gae gyni. Hywel Kilan.

2 x

Kymer reswm (trwm bod rhoch)
A dod reswm da drosoch. Tudur Aled.

And the reason, when thirst in, is surrounded by semicircles, which are used for the purpose of giving an easier freedom to the reader.

SECTION CCLXIX.

DIATROPHE, IMESIS ; DISSECTIO.

§ 2001. Diatrophe takes place when the word is cut in the middle, and divided into two halves, and a word or words are thrust between those two halves ; as,

Ysgyearn—yn narn y nos
Ogod yma yn agos. Dei ap Ieuan Ddu.
Yn y *Rhyd*, gwn y rhedant,
Y Tywod, gorvod a gant. Rhyd y Tywod.
Bartho nid rhaid ymwrthod,
Lomus glaer weddus glod. Davydd ap Gwilym.
Gwenn a dyrr gwyn a dyrrwyf
Vrewi achlan vriw a chlwyf. Gutto'r Glynn.
Chwaer i *Wenn*, gymmen gemmaur,
Vrewi ai gwallt o vrig aur. H. ap Davydd.

SECTION CCLXX.

SYNCHYSIS ; CONFUSIO.

§ 2002. Synchysis occurs when the words are placed confusedly out of their proper and natural order ; thus,

Cyssur byrr, coes i roi bwyd
Am urddol, yn lle morddwyd ;
Goreu perchenn ar Wenn wiw,
Ty o Addaf hyd heddiw. Gr. Hiraethog.
Gwylltio'r vorwyn vwyn veinwen,
Gwasgu a ffo gwysg ei phenn. D. ap Gwilym.
Am friw del Wmffre dal T. Aled.

Such also is the following stanza by Davydd ap Gwilym, if he meant Rhosyr gwych, and intended to avoid the mutual collocation of singular and plural ;—

Gwyl Bedr y bum yn edrych
Yn Rossyr aml gwyr, gwych. Davydd ap Gwilym.

Or,

Llawn wyf o ddig na thrigai
Bath yw imi byth ym mai.

SECTION CCLXXI.

HYSTERON PROTERON ; HYSTEROLOGIA.

§ 2003. Hysteron proteron takes place when that is announced last, which ought to be first ; as is the case with portions of the homœdistich, which Dr. John Kent sang, and which begins thus ;—

Gwyn i vyd er gwynvydu,
Y dyn kyn gloes angau du,
A vetro gweddio'n dda,
Er ennill bodd *yr Anna,
A chael korff Crist uchelgairr,
A chyffes o vynwes Vair.

SECTION CCLXXII.

HYPERBOLE ; SUPERLATIO.

§ 2004. Hyperbole is a figure used for the purpose of increasing or diminishing the belief in what is narrated ; thus,

Gorddu yw brig Iwerddon
Gan vwg keginau o Von. Lewys Glyn Cothi.

A bod i law be dai lu
Ar gleddyf er i gladdu,
Ai lun gwrol yn gorwedd ;
Ef a wnai'r beilch ofni'r bedd.

Pe bai ganmil yn ddilys
O erydr rrif ar dir Rys,
A thrychan gwinllan a gwin,
Ac yn malu gan melin.

Pe bai'r ddacar yn vara,
 Neu vlas dur val ossai da ;
 Yn i wledd rryfedd barhau
 Dwr a daear dri diau.

Davydd Nanmor to Rhys of Towyn.

Kynt na'r dwyreiniwynt.

SECTION CCLXXIII

EMPHASIS; METONYMIA.

§ 2005. Emphasis takes place when a word secretly signifies something worthy of notice ; or when any particular sense is more clearly developed. This figure occurs in different ways ; one way is when the noun substantive is put instead of the noun adjective ; thus,

A throi oesoedd, a thraserch
 Y meirw i vyw y mae'r verch,
 Val maeth meddyginiaeth gain
 Eilvyw i'm geilw dyn aelvain.

Saer dy vawl sorriad* wyf fi. * Instead of sorredig
 Arhŷ oedd i holl Gymru.

SECTION CCLXXIV.

HOMŒOSIS.

§ 2006. Homœosis takes place when any strange thing is illustrated by a similitude which is not so strange. Its kinds are

Icon	Cynddelw
Parabole	Cyffelybrwydd
Paradigma	Dyddameg.

SECTION CCLXXV.

ICON; IMAGO.

§ 2007. Icon takes place when one thing is likened to another ; of which there are many examples in the descriptive homœdistiches ; as,

Y mae'n debyg mewn deubeth
 I vlaen fflam velen i phleth.

Y mae a pheth am i phenn
Yr haf val y Rhiw Velen. D. ap Edmund.

SECTION CCLXXVI.

PARABOLE ; COLLATIO.

§ 2008. Parabole takes place when things of different kinds are likened to each other; as,

Tebyg wrth gynnyg annerch
Yw Ievan Vychan i verch ;
Y mwyaf kuaf ai kar
Hithau Degau ai digar. Gutto'r Glynn.

SECTION CCLXXVII.

PARADIGMA.

§ 2009. Paradigma takes place when an example is adduced out of any tale, by which a person is instigated either to do a thing, or else to avoid it; thus,

Hywel a wnaeth mab maeth medd,
Awen gain Ywain Gwynedd ;
Gerdd o vydr a hydr i hawl
Oi ragorau Ri gwrawl ;
Gwnaf innau kynn maddau medd, &c.
Ieuan ap Rhydderch ap Ieuan Llwyd.

Sain Kristoffer a vu'n offrwm
Yn dwyn Krist vegys dyn krwm,
Er dwyn haich aur dan y byd
Y safodd Erkles hevyd.
Ynteu'r gwr yn y lleuad
Ar drain ar warr hyd yr iad.
Drwy ddadl pedwerydd ydwy
Dyn afiach iawn dan vaich wy'. Gutto'r Glynn.

SECTION CCLXXVIII.

HYPOZEUGMA ; SUBJUNCTIO, (DANGYSSWLLT.)

§ 2010. That is called hypozeugma when the verb and the latter part of the argument are joined together after many words ; thus,

Ales, Sabel hael, Elin—iaith ddidwyll
 Elsbeth wedi Katrin,
 Annes, Sioned, llwyddged llin
 A Gwenn, gwyr oergwyn gwerin.

Simwnt Vychan.

SECTION CCLXXIX.

PROZEUGMA ; PRÆJUNCTIO (RHAG-GYSSWLLT.)

§ 2011. Prozeugma takes place when the verb is put before short clauses ; thus, Trech yw d'anian nath ddysc ; dy chwant na'th reswm ; dy envydrwydd na'th ddoethineb.

O Dduw pwy a ddaw y pwenn,
 Or hil ir eskubor honn ?
 Y march gwineu i Ieuan
 Ap Hywel ap Llywelyn.

SECTION CCLXXX.

INTERROGATIO ; (GOFYNCHWEDL.)

§ 2012.

Beth a yrr blaen byth ar blaid ?
 Blaenor a byw ei lonaid.

Subscribers' Names.

HIS HIGHNESS, PRINCE, LOUIS-LUCIEN, BONAPARTE	2 Copies.
The Right Hon. The Earl of Powis	2 Copies.
The Right Hon. The Earl of Cawdor	2 Copies.
The Right Hon. Lord Dynevor, Dynevor Castle	3 Copies.
The Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of St. David's	
The Right Hon. Lord Viscount Feilding, Downing, Holywell	
The Right Hon. Sir Benjamin Hall, Bart. M.P., Llanover, Lady Hall, Llanover	2 Copies.
Lady Jones Parry, Madryn Park, Pwllheli	
Sir Charles Morgan, Baronet, Tredegar	2 Copies.
Sir Thomas Phillipps, Bart. Broadway, Worcestershire	2 Copies.
The Rev. Sir Erasmus H. G. Williams, Bart. Rectory, Marlborough	
F. R. West, Esq. M.P., Ruthin Castle	
The Very Rev. The Dean of St. Asaph	
Major General Morgan, St. Helen's Swansea	
The Rev. Chancellor Melvill, St. David's, Pembrokeshire	
The Rev. Chancellor Williams, Maesaleg, Monmouthshire	
Anwyl, Robert, Esq. Tanygraig, Llangernyw	
Beaumont, G. Barber, Esq. M.A., London	
Bowen, Mr. Benjamim, Barossa Cottage, Cardiff	
Brereton, Mr. A. J., (<i>Andreas o Fôn</i>), Mold, Flintshire	
Briscoe, Rev. Thomas, B.D., Jesus College, Oxford	
Caradawc, Y Fenni	
Cooper, Mr. Llangollen	
Davies, Rev. David, Dylifau, Machynlleth	
Davies, Rev. E. H., Llangorwen, Aberystwyth	
Davies, Rev. Ellis Thomas, Independent Minister, St. George, Denbighsh.	
Davies, Mr. Evan, (<i>Myfyr Morganwg</i>), B.C., Pontypridd	
Davies, Mr. Henry, Relieving Officer, Llanelly	
Davies, Rev. John, Catholic Chapel, Dowlais	
Davies, J. G., Esq. St. David's College, Lampeter	
Davies, Joseph, Esq. Llysaled, Llansanan	
Davies, Rev. Thomas, M.A., Treberfedd, Lampeter	
Davies, Rev. Thomas, M.A., Trevethin Parsonage, Pontypool	
Davies, Mr. Thomas, Post Office, Brynmawr	
Davies, Mr. Thomas, Draper, (<i>Devi Wyn o Essyllt</i>), Denis P'owis	
Davies, Rev. Timothy, Vicarage, Defynog	
Davies, Rev. W., Llanwunno, near Pontypridd	
Davies, Miss, Brynhyfryd, Towyn, Machynlleth	
Davis, Rev. John, B.D., Vicar of Llanhowel, Solva	
Davydh, Mr. Robert, Bookseller, Llansanan, Abergele,	2 Copies.
Durnford, Rev. Richard, Rectory, Middleton, Manchester	
Edwards, Mr. Thomas, Gyfeillion, Pontypridd	
Ellis, Rev. Robert, Sirhowy, Monmouthshire	
Evans, Rev. Daniel Silvan, B.D., Llangŷan, Pwllheli	
Evans, Rev. David, B.D., Rector of Llanllwchaearn	
Evans, Rev. Evan, Rector of Llangaitho, Hafod	
Evans, Griffith, Esq. M.R.C.S. &c., 55 High Street, Bridgenorth	
Evans, Rev. John, Vicarage, Llanover, Monmouthshire	
Evans, Mr. John, (<i>Ioan Lleifad</i>), 30 Formby Street, Liverpool	
Evans, Mr. W., (<i>Oawr Cynon</i>), Mineral Agent	
Ffoulkes, W. Wynne, Esq. Eccleston, Chester	

- Gilbertson, Rev. Lewis, B.D., Jesus College, Oxford
 Green, A. J. M., Esq. Court Henry, Dryalwyn, Carmarthenshire
 Green, Francis, Esq. Park Henry, Carmarthenshire
 Griffiths, Rev. James, Llangynnor, Carmarthen
 Griffiths, Rev. John, B.D., Llandeilo-fawr
 Gwynne, Rev. E. H. A., St. Paul's, Tipton
 Heaton, Rev. C. Williams, B.D., Jesus College, Oxford
 Heaton, Rev. Hugh Edward, M.A., Llangedwyn, Oswestry
 Howell, David, Esq. Solicitor, Machynlleth
 Howell, Thomas, Esq. White House, Builth
 Howell, Mr. William, (*Gwilym Dafydd*), Canal Agent, Newport, Monmouthsh.
 Hughes, Rev. David, B.A., Tredegar
 Hughes, Rev. Edward, M.A., Meliden, Rhyl
 Hughes, Rev. H. R., Curate of Llanwenllwyfo, Amlwch
 Hughes, Rev. J., (*Carn Ingh*), Meltham, Huddersfield
 Hughes, Rev. J., Llanengan, Pwllheli
 Hughes, John, Esq. Lluest Gwilym, Aberystwyth
 Hughes, R. Hugh, Esq. Kinmel Park, 2 Copies.
 Hughes, Messrs. R. & Son, Booksellers, Wrexham 2 Copies.
 Hughes, Rev. Reginald, Ruthin
 Hughes, Mr. W. M., (*Gwawdrydd*), High Street, Bangor
 Hughes, Mr. (*Ceiriog*), 150 Tippyn Street, Manchester
 James, Mr. Elias, Cwmcelyn Shop, Monmouthshire
 James, Rev. Thomas, M.A., Netherthong, Yorkshire
 Jeffreys, Rev. D. W., Rector of Trenewydd, Anglesey
 Jenkins, Rev. R., B.A., Chaplain to the Earl of Lisburne, Gwnnws
 Jenkyn, Rev. Richard, (*Llochaearn*), Curate of Vaynor
 John, Mr. William, (*Mathonwy, B.B.D.*) Pontypridd
 Johnes, Arthur J., Judge of Local Courts, Garthmyl
 Johnes, John, Esq. Judge of Local Courts, Dolaucothly
 Johnson, Rev. H. M., M.A., Curate of Llanymowddwy
 Jones, Benjamin, Esq. Llanelly, Carmarthenshire
 Jones, Charles, Esq. Ty'nycoed Arthog, Barmouth
 Jones, Mr. David Howell, Morriston, Swansea
 Jones, Rev. Edward, Incumbent of Bistre, Mold
 Jones, Rev. H. Longueville, M.A., H. M. Inspector of Schools
 Jones, J., Esq. Dinorben, St. Asaph
 Jones, Rev. John, Vicarage, Penbre, Llanelly
 Jones, Mr. John William, Rymney
 Jones, Mr. John, British School, Aberdare
 Jones, Rev. John, Dinorben, St. George, Denbighshire
 Jones, Rev. John, Llangwm, Corwen
 Jones, John Rhys, Esq., Surgeon, Blackwood, Newport, Monmouthshire
 Jones, Mr. John, Schoolmaster, Hirwaun, Glamorganshire
 Jones, Rev. John, (*Mathetes*), Newport, Mon.
 Jones, Mr. J. Lloyd, St. David's, Pembrokeshire
 Jones, Mr. Jonathan, Carnarvon
 Jones, Rev. Richard, Llanbeulan, Bodedern, Anglesey
 Jones, Rev. Robert, M.A., All Saints Rectory, Rotherhithe, London
 Jones, Mr. Robert, Bookseller, Bethesda
 Jones, Mr. Robert Isaac, (*Alltud Eifion*), Tremadoc
 Jones, Rev. Thomas, M.A., Sporle, Norfolk
 Jones, Thomas, Esq. Chatham Library, Manchester
 Jones, William, Esq. Llwynygroes, Llanwnen
 Jones, Mr. William, Draper, Llangollen
 Jones, William, Esq. (*Gorgant*), 20 King's Arms Yard, London

Jones, Mr. William, 24 Upper Duke Street, Liverpool
 Joseph, Joseph, Esq. F.S.A., Banker, Brecon
 Kerslake, Mr. Thomas, Bristol
 Lewis, Rev. D. Price, Gilvach, Llandoverly
 Lewis, D. S., Esq. (*Ifor Gwent*), Victoria, Monmouthshire
 Lewis, Mr. John, (*Ioan Mynyw*), Tregaron
 Lewis, Titus, Esq. (*Titus Ieuangc*), Carmarthen
 Lewis, Rev. W., Llanfihangel Rectory, Corwen
 Lloyd, Rev. H. Norris, (*Bleddyn o'r Glyn*), Llangristiolus Rectory, Bangor
 Lloyd, Rev. R. W., Wilnecote, near Tamworth
 Lloyd, Mr. John, Maentwrog, Merionethshire
 Lloyd, Rev. D., Incumbent of Trefonnen, Oswestry
 Llwyd, Miss Angharad, Ty-yn-y-Rhyl, Rhyl
 Llwyd, Mr. John, Llanegryn, near Machynlleth
 Mason, Mr. Richard, Publisher, Tenby
 McDonall, Professor, Queen's College, Belfast
 Meredith, Rev. William, Rector of Llanfigan, Brecon
 Morgan, Rev. Hugh, M.A., Incumbent of Rhyl
 Morgan, Mr. J., (*Llywarch Gwent*), Cwmcelyn Iron Works
 Morgan, William, Esq. 2 Trigon Road, Clapham Road, London
 Mounsey, Capt. W. H., Cavendish Terrace, Stanivir, Carlisle
 Mounsey, G. G., Esq. Castletown, Carlisle
 Nichol, Rev. Iltyd, Pantygoetre, Raglan
 O'Dally, John, Esq. 9 Anglesey Street, Dublin 2 Copies.
 Oldfield, Thomas, Esq. Farm, near Abergele
 Owen, Rev. Hugh Davies, D.D., Trevedraeth Rectory, Anglesey
 Owen, Hugh, Esq. Whitehall, London
 Owen, Thomas, Esq. Plas, Penmynydd, Anglesey
 Owen, Rev. W. H., M.A., Rhyllyn, St. Asaph
 Parker, Rev. John, Blodwel Vicarage, Oswestry
 Parry, T. L. D. Jones, Esq. F.S.A., Madryn, Nevin
 Phillips, Mr. David, (*Deut Glyn Ebwy*), Coal Brook Vale, Monmouthshire
 Phillips, Rev. E. Owen, M.A., Warden, Welsh Institution, Llandoverly
 Phillips, Mr. Thomas, Coal Brook Vale Shop, Newport
 Phillipps, F. L. Lloyd, Esq. Hafodneddyn, Carmarthen
 Phillipps, Robert Biddulph, Esq. Longworth, Hereford
 Poole, Rev. W. J., M.A., Rectory, Aberffraw, Anglesey
 Price, Rev. Rhys, Brecon
 Price, Rev. Thomas, Bridgend, Glamorgan
 Price, Rev. Thomas, Aberavon
 Price, William, Esq. Llanfoist, Abergaveuny
 Price, William, Esq. Glantwrch, Swansea
 Prichard, Rees, Esq. Garth Hall, Pontypridd
 Protheroe, Mr. Thomas, Draper, Dowlais
 Pryse, Mr. R. J., (*Gweirydd ap Rhys*), Llanrhyddlad, Anglesey
 Prytherch, John, Esq. Bank, Llandeilo
 Pugh, John, Esq. Helygog, near Dolgelly
 Pugh, Mr. John, 72 Tithebarn Street, Liverpool
 Pugh, Rev. J., Talsarnau, Llanfihangel, Harlech
 Pughe, John, Esq. F.R.C.S., Penhelyg House, Aberdovey
 Quaritch, Mr. Bernard, Castle Street, Leicester Square, London 2 Copies.
 Rees, David Rice, Esq. Llandoverly, (*Deceased*)
 Rees, Mr. William Jenkin, Tonn, Llandoverly
 Rees, Rev. William, 59 Bedford Street, Liverpool
 Reynolds, Mr. Jonathan, (*Nathan Dyfed*), Merthyr Tydvil
 Richards, E. L., Esq. Judge of Local Courts, Holywell

Richards, John, Esq. Bronmenai Carnarvon
 Roberts, Rev. Henry, Llangyndeyrn, Carmarthen
 Roberts, Mr. Joseph, 5 Brunswick Street, Swansea
 Roberts, Mr. Robert, National School, Trawsfynydd
 Roberts, Mr. Robert, (*Lineus Tegid*,) Army Butcher, Bala
 Rowland, Rev. Thomas, Vicar of Pennant, Montgomeryshire
 Salisbury, E. G., Esq. 5 Stanley Place, Chester
 Salisbury, Rev. E. E. Bailee, Thundersley Rectory, Reyleigh, Essex
 Shum, Mr. Henry, Bookseller, Brecon, 2 Copies.
 Spurrell, Mr. William, Publisher, Carmarthen, 2 Copies.
 Stephens, Thomas, Esq. Merthyr Tydvil
 Talhaiarn, Mentmore, Leighton, Bucks
 Thomas, John, Esq. Clydach, Abergavenny
 Thomas, Mr. John, Post Office, Glyn Neath
 Thomas, Rev. William, Bwlchnewydd, Carmarthen
 Thomas, W. M., Esq. Sculptor, 7 Lower Belgrave Place, London
 Traherne, Rev. J. M., M.A., F.R.S. &c., Coedriglan, Cardiff
 Trübner & Co. Messrs., Paternoster Row, London
 Vaughan, John, Esq. Penmaen Dovey, Machynlleth
 Wakeman, Thomas, Esq. Graig, Monmouth
 Williams, Rev. Charles, B.D., Holyhead
 Williams, Rev. David, Pontardulais, Llanelly
 Williams, Ignatius, Esq. The Grove, Bodvary, Denbigh
 Williams, James, Esq. Mount Pleasant, Brecon
 Williams, Miss Jane, (*Ysgafell*,) Neuaddfelen, Talgarth
 Williams, Mr. John, Gyfaillion, Pontypridd
 Williams, Rev. John, Pendoylan, Cardiff
 Williams, Rev. J. H., M.A., Llangadwaladr, Anglesey
 Williams, Mathew D., Esq. Cwmcynfelyn, Aberystwyth
 Williams, Mr. Phillip, Printer, Aberystwyth
 Williams, Rev. Rees, Vaynor Rectory, Merthyr Tydvil
 Williams, Richard, Esq. Bron y Parc, Denbigh
 Williams, Rev. Rowland, M.A., Vice Principal, St. David's College

